



SHEN YIN WANG ZUO

BOOK 01

Tang Jia San Shao

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Shen Yin Wang Zuo

(神印王座)

by

Tang Jia San Shao

(唐家三少)

Synopsis

While the demons were rising, mankind was about to become extinct. Six temples rose and protected the last of mankind.

A young boy joins the temple as a knight to help his mother. During his journey of wonders and mischief in the world of temples and demons, will he be able to ascend to become the strongest knight and inherit the throne?

Acknowledgement

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Totobro @ [Gravity Tales](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1: Knight Examination (I)

Odin Town, containing 3,000 households, was located at the southern border of the Temple Alliance and counted itself as one of the biggest villages under the city of Haoyue.

As the morning sun was rising, its bright and warm touch carefully nurtured the earth, as if calling for everyone to wake up. At that time, at the center of Odin, in a relatively big two-story building of more than a thousand square meters, an examination was going on.

A vigorous, powerful, and somewhat rough voice, rang out. “Tell me, why do you want to become knights?”

“To defend humanity! To defend the kind hearted! To defend the Temple Alliance! To defend our families!” The voices that answered the question sounded young and were coordinated. Clearly, it was not the first time they had answered that question.

That two story building was the Knight Temple Hall of the Odin Town, abbreviated as Odin Hall. It’s the place where potential children are selected to undergo training to become knights.

Today, a little more than thirty children were attending the selection test to become the most basic knight, the Knight Squire. Only after they became a Knight Squire could they continue studying and cultivating there.

The master of the vigorous voice was a tall, burly, middle-aged, strongly built man. His name was Balza and he was the Chief Knight Teacher of Odin Hall. Reportedly, he was, in his prime, reputed to be very, very close to becoming a Genuine Knight.

Balza severely glared at the bunch of kids ranging from eight to ten years old, “Tell me, what are the standards of a knight?”

Once more, the answer was coordinated, “Modesty! Honesty! Compassion! Courage! Fairness! Sacrifice! Honor! Perseverance!

Humility! Justice!”

Balza nodded, satisfied, “Good! All of you here have already been training for one year. Today, we will hold the examination. Knight Squires are classified from the 1st to 10th rank, corresponding to a spiritual energy between 10 and 100. Your task, today, will be to attain at least a spiritual energy of above 10 and thus become a Knight Squire of first rank. All those who successfully pass this exam will be able to remain here and train for three more years before participating in a final assessment to become an official knight. Only after you become an official knight, like me, can you be considered a genuine member of the Temple. Now, let’s begin! Jiang Hu!”

“Yes.” A youth with a big stature walked forward as he removed the wooden sword that was strapped to his back.

All these youths had the same equipment: a wooden sword that was a meter in length, with a width of ten centimeter and a thickness of six centimeters. The examination for becoming Knight Squire was simple: in front of Balza was something that looked like a big wooden block connected to a stone groove. Within that stone groove was a stone bead. By hitting the block of wood, the stone bead would vibrate and the amount of spiritual energy one has would be determined by how high the stone bead jumped. This could be considered an outdated method to evaluate one’s spiritual energy, but it was very precise when evaluating spiritual energies below 100.

Spiritual energy, in Shengmou Dalu was the main factor used in evaluating everyone’s ‘rank’ in their occupation. It didn’t matter if they were knights, magicians, or any other profession, the level of the spiritual energy being used was the main factor for assessing one’s strength. 10 was generally the average spiritual energy level for normal adult males.

“Aahh—!” Jiang Hu shouted loudly, with both hands grasping the wooden sword, as he fiercely swung it against the wooden

block.

Bang! The stone bead moved up, then down.

Balza nodded, satisfied, and registered his name in a sheet of paper as he declared, “Jiang Hu, spiritual energy level: 13, you pass! Next one...”

The examination was quickly carried out and, in an instant, half of the people had already finished. Those who succeeded were about half of them.

“Long Haochen.”

When he called the name, Balza unconsciously lowered his head. Before him was a thin young boy’s figure.

The young boy looked a little malnourished, compared to the others. He was quite thin, but had a handsome face.

He had naturally supple eyebrows, big eyes, long eyelashes, a straight nose, white skin and thick lips. Even though he was only eight or nine years old, he was beautiful enough to make women jealous of him; especially because of his black hair combined with his pair of dark blue eyes. If he were to crossdress, he would become a nation-level beauty.

Long Haochen went up in front of Balza, but did not take out his wooden sword like the others. Instead, he placed his right hand on his chest and bowed, saluting Balza.

“Teacher.”

Balza’s originally serious look slightly softened. He nodded, and instructed, “Start!”

“Yes!”

Drawing his sword, Long Haochen took a deep breath and suddenly swung it with all his might, hitting the wooden block.

With a puff sound, the stone bead bounced; but it obviously did not reach the tenth division.

Balza immediately frowns, “Spiritual energy level: 9. You don’t pass.”

From the speed of the slash from Long Haochen’s sword that he saw, he could see that Long Haochen truly did use all of his power and had gone all out; but, he still could not pass the examination to become Knight Squire.

Long Haochen’s pretty face became flushed and, while looking at Balza, he said pleadingly, “Instructor, I... I...”

Balza slightly sighed and said, “Go down.”

Long Haochen eagerly repeated, “Instructor, give me another chance. I will definitely pass!”

Balza scowled, saying, “But, that would be unfair to the others who didn’t pass.”

Long Haochen suddenly became silent, but the determination in his eyes persisted. Balza noticed the expression in his eyes and at the same moment, he couldn’t help staring blankly at Long Haochen. What is that? Perseverance? The Perseverance described in the Ten Standards of a Knight? The Ten Standards of a Knight are the ten essences of the knights. Even some Genuine Knights are unable to display some of these ten essences, but this kid before my eyes...

While Balza was lost in his thoughts, Long Haochen turned to face the other examinees and using a very sincere tone towards the ones who trained alongside with him for the past year, declared, “I beg of you, give me another chance.”

As he pleaded, he had, unexpectedly, knelt down.

Balza was flabbergasted. The youths were also flabbergasted. To these kids that were eight to ten years old, it was fundamentally impossible to understand why Long Hao Chen was so persistent.

Balza’s eyes widened, if it was another kid, he would have believed that the kid was greedy or cowardly, but that couldn’t be

the case for Long Haochen.

Because, even though Long Haochen may seem thin and weak, during that past year's training, amongst all of the kids, he was the most assiduous one. Not only did he perfectly accomplish the mandatory training everyday, he also came an hour earlier and left an hour later.

Balza was a Standard Knight of the 10th rank, but he had already been an instructor for ten years and Long Haochen was the most diligent student he had ever seen. That boy never needed to be supervised. Not only did he train hard every day, he was also good to everyone and helped his fellow trainees, whenever they asked him for help.

That was also why, when it was Long Haochen's turn, Balza's look became gentle. But the fact that Long Haochen didn't pass the exam took him aback. If such a diligent child didn't pass the examination, the only explanation would be a total lack of talent.

Chapter 2: Knight Examination (II)

“Instructor, please let him be evaluated once more.” The one who said that was Jiang Hu, the first one who passed the examination, as well as the oldest in this group of children.

“Yes! Instructor, please give Haochen one more chance.”

“Instructor, Haochen is working every day with such diligence, please let him try again.”

At that moment, pleas for Long Haochen came from almost all of the children. That was the result of his popularity. Adding that they were just a bunch of kids that did not have the notion of interest relationships, it showed that they were merely being concerned for him and had no hidden purpose.

Balza’s voice rang out, “Silence!”

Everyone in the hall calmed down.

Balza said, “Okay, I will give him a chance; but, for this to be fair, Long Haochen, you will first have to defeat Jiang Hu in a one-on-one duel. The same applies to anyone who failed, those who can beat Jiang Hu within three days starting from today, will be evaluated again.”

Long Haochen was overjoyed. He thanked his classmates, before turning towards Balza, “Thank you, Instructor!”

Looking at the stunning boy with a bright face and a pure smile, even if Balza was a man, he couldn’t help feeling startled. Putting aside Long Haochen, he looked at Jiang Hu, and lightly said, “Go all out, or else, I will cancel your promotion as Knight Squire, understood?”

“Yes.” Jiang Hu agreed. As he pulled out a wooden sword from his back, all the other youths scattered away, creating an empty area.

While holding the wooden sword, Jiang Hu performed a knight salute to Long Haochen. “Haochen, be careful. I will show no mercy.”

Long Haochen, likewise, saluted, “Brother Jiang, please.”

Jiang Hu let out a sound as he took a step forward, with his hands gripping his wooden sword, going straight towards Long Haochen and aiming for his left shoulder.

Long Haochen appeared very calm, as if he was observing him in slow-motion. Until the wooden sword in Jiang Hu’s hand split half the distance between them, he didn’t move. And that instant, he swung his sword towards the bottom of Jiang Hu’s sword.

With a quiet Duh! sound, in a situation where Jiang Hu’s spiritual energy was far greater than Long Hachen’s, Jiang Hu was, unexpectedly, the one being swung at.

Seeing that blow, Balza’s eyes flashed, showing his surprise.

Jiang Hu was being swung at, but his reaction was quick. He rotated his body, and as he used the power of his waist to drive the force of his hand, the wooden sword in his hand circled once, cutting horizontally.

Jiang Hu’s adaptability was brilliant. At his age, the fact that he’s able to have such a good level of mastery was pretty good. However, Long Haochen’s answer was even more surprising.

By the time Jiang Hu swung his sword, he had already advanced forward. The distance between the two was already pretty close. With a few steps, Long Haochen arrived at Jiang Hu’s side, as Jian Hu rotated his body.

How does he plan to attack? Doubt appeared in Balza’s mind. The wooden swords were a meter long and, at such a close distance, Long Haochen would not be able to attack openly.

But, at that moment, Long Haochen unexpectedly launched an attack, using the sword’s hilt.

As his body sunk downwards, simultaneously, his sword's hilt went up, aiming right under Jiang Hu's rib. Although that attack from Long Haochen contained no force, Jiang Hu's body still became unsteady and was swept to the side of Long Haochen's wooden sword.

“Stop!” Balza shouted.

Balza's eyes flashed and he said in a heavy voice, “Balance loss. Jiang Hu, you lost. If Long Haochen really did put force, you would be lying down on the floor right now.”

Jiang Hu embarrassedly scratched his head, “Haochen, you are so cunning.”

Long Haochen withdrew his sword, apologetically looking at Jiang Hu because he had difficulty to stand firm.

Balza nodded towards Long Haochen, “You can try the assessment for a second time!”

Back before the wooden block, the look on Long Haochen's face changed, becoming more dignified and gave off an unusual feeling.

Both hands holding the wooden sword, Long Haochen's eyes looked imposing, his body looked like it was producing light. In particular, his eyes. Those clear blue eyes wore a firm look.

Suddenly, Long Haochen fiercely turned back, taking hold of his wooden sword, looking far more obsessed than his peers.

Bang!

The stone bead went up as Long Haocheng was being repelled by the shock and took a step back. The wooden sword in his hands almost fell, with a trace of blood on his hands.

“Spiritual energy: 11, You pass!” Balza shouted with a shocked voice. Going from the ninth spiritual energy level to the eleventh sounded just like a little difference of two levels. However, in his previous assessment, he estimated that Long Haochen was already

going all out. To produce such an increase meant that his potential had been stimulated to its limit.

After a brief surprise, Balza came back to normal, and let Long Haochen go to the infirmary to bandage his wound, then continued the next assessments.

“The assessments are finished. Those who failed, don’t come again tomorrow. Those who passed will be assigned to new instructors tomorrow. After receiving some Elemental Training Liquid, you can go back home. Now, dismissed!”

The youths shouted in unison, “Thank you, Instructor!”

“Long Haochen, you stay a little longer.”

The youths cheerfully left. Whether they passed or not, at that age, they easily found joy and happiness.

There were only two people left in Odin Hall: Long Haochen and Balza.

“Haochen, tell me, why did you choose to attack that way during your duel against Jiang Hu?” Balza asked seriously.

Long Haochen replied without hesitation, “Because my strength doesn’t match Big Brother Jiang Hu’s, so I could only look for his weaknesses. You taught us that, when attacking, the strongest point is at the tip of the sword and that the closer you get to the handle, the weaker gets the strength. Thus, at the time he attacked, I located his center of gravity on his waist, and closed the distance between us. By aiming for his center of gravity, I prevented him from using his full power, so that he had no way to continue his attack.”

Balza’s eyes were full of surprise, “So, you are saying that all of this was accomplished through observation?!”

He never taught these kids combat because of their age, at which the most important was to lay the foundations, and not the actual time spent to train.

“Okay, you can go home.” Balza waved. He felt that that child had potential that the other children didn’t have.

Wearing that beautiful face and showing a moment of shyness, Long Haochen tentatively asked, “Instructor, today’s portion of Elemental Training Liquid...”

”Oh, go take it.“

“Instructor, goodbye.” Long Haochen happily left.

As he watched his jumping away figure from behind, Balza could not help revealing a smile on his face, “This child, he is well behaved, works hard, and it looks like he has a very promising talent for combat. He is a really rare good seed.”

“Do you know how he managed to find the opponent’s weak point so easily?” At that moment, a cool and bright melodious voice sounded around Balza. Because that sound came so unexpectedly, Balza was suddenly scared stiff.

He didn’t know since when he had been here, but at Balza’s side was another middle-aged person. He looked to be in his thirties, clad in a simple and plain robe, but had a pair of eyes that were as bright as the stars. In the depth of those eyes appeared an ounce of disappointment, a radiance of memories, as well as a feeling of pain that could be felt by others.

Chapter 3: Knight Examination (III)

“Senior, I don’t know.” As soon as he saw that middle-aged man, Balza hurried to salute him. This middle-aged person came a few days earlier to Odin Hall, so he was not sure of this middle-aged man’s identity and circumstances, and only knew that he was a figure from the group of knights coming from Haoyue city.

The middle-aged man looked back, saying indifferently, “It is because his mental capacity is different from ordinary people’s... Otherwise, how do you think he could display that kind of talent?”

Long Haochen was happily holding a small glass in his hands and jubilantly ran towards his home.

For the other kids, the liquid in that bottle was just a hard-to-drink medicine, but for him, it was actually the reason why he joined the Knight Temple.

As he walked, he said aloud, “Big brother Jiang Hu was right, this Elemental Training Liquid is a really good thing. Ever since she started drinking a bottle of this each week, Mother’s health had been getting better. Mother, sorry, you taught me that, as a man, I can’t beg other people, but if I couldn’t pass the examination today, I would never be able to bring you another Elemental Training Liquid to drink.”

If Balza heard Long Haochen’s remark, he would be staring at him in astonishment.

To the Knight Temple, the Elemental Training Liquid was a kind of medicine that had a special effect on children under fifteen years old. It would help enable them to strengthen their basic cultivation results, assist in their training and lay their body’s foundations. The reason why Long Haochen had almost failed the examination today was that he didn’t drink any Elemental Training Liquid at all! All of it was given to his mother. One year ago, he was just a thin and weak little boy and today, he had to make intense efforts

in order to break through the tenth spiritual energy level, while letting his mother drink his Elemental Training Liquid that was supposed to support his spiritual energy's cultivation.

To that nine year-old kid, in terms of difficulty, going through that trial completely surpassed the hurdles of the examination to become a Standard Knight.

The sunlight fell on Long Haochen's body that shone with a golden luster which seemed to have emerged from the bottom of his heart.

Long Haochen's home was located on the western side of Odin; he even had to cross a river to reach it. Quickly, he passed over the wooden bridge. However, he didn't go straight home, but went along a little road that gave access to a forest that was west of Odin.

Every time he got the Elemental Training Liquid, he would first pick up some vegetables. Before he could give it to his mother to drink, he'd mix the medicine with some wild vegetables, producing a soup with a strong taste.

As he went through the forest, he quickly got to work. These last few years, Long Haochen and his mother were depending on each other. Even in Odin Town, their household was the poorest one and, as the child of a poor person, he had to take care of the chores early on, whereas a lot of children of the same age only knew about playing everyday. He needed to help his mother, to let her share some of her pains. Although mother and child were relying on the mother's meager income from sewing some clothes every day, for their life expenses, Long Haochen felt that his life was still quite happy.

After a while, quite a few herbs were piled up. Long Haochen had become quite familiar with them and although they were only wild herbs, their flavor was not so bad. He knew that because, since infancy, he had eaten a lot of them.

As Long Haochen was preparing to pack these up, before going home, he suddenly heard a low pitched Puff! sound that startled him. Actually, the forest was not so peaceful, there were occasionally some wild animals in it.

Long Haochen looked in the direction he heard the sound from, and saw a faint, yet small, shadow that seemed to have fallen down. Urged by his curiosity, he cautiously walked towards it. After several steps, he saw that the shadow that had fallen in the forest was actually no wild animal, but was, unexpectedly, a little girl.

The little girl seemed to be seven or eight years old, had a very delicate appearance, and purple short hair. Her clothes were damaged, and blood was coming out from at least six or seven places on her body. Although she fell on the ground, she still maintained her consciousness. She tried to get up, but was having some difficulty.

Long Haochen hurried towards her, tried to help her get up, and asked her, "Are you okay?"

The little girl looked surprised and she unconsciously moved back, looking at him from the side. At that moment, Long Haochen saw the appearance of the little girl.

A lot of dirt was on her beautiful cheeks, and the corner of her mouth was letting out a thread of blood. She looked very embarrassed, but her delicate features would still easily shock people. However, her beauty was different from Long Haochen's. Long Haochen's gaze was gentle, giving people a feeling of intimacy. That little girl, however, had a stubborn and cold gaze, and, as she suddenly stared at him, Long Haochen couldn't help shivering.

Seeing Long Haochen, the little girl looked surprised. She didn't know if it was because her affinity with Long Haochen was good enough; however, she had quickly calmed down.

“Are you okay?” Long Haochen asked one more time.

The little girl lifted a hand reluctantly and wrote a line of words: I can't speak, bad people are chasing me, they will arrive soon. Sister, save me!

Looking at the words written in front of him, Long Haochen was shocked, but when he read the last words she wrote, a few black lines appeared on his forehead.

“It is brother, not sister.” After defending himself with one sentence, in a depressed tone, he lifted the little girl up, full of determination. Because he passed the knight's examination, his strength was already at the level of an adult's, plus the little girl's body was especially light, so when holding her, he did not find her heavy at all.

After lifting her up, Long Haochen went back to the spot he was at, using a rough rope to pick up the wild herbs. But at that moment, the little girl anxiously pulled the lapel of his clothing.

Long Haochen gawked at her as he hurriedly placed her on the ground, and the little girl wrote quickly on the land: I feel their presence, they will arrive soon. They can track my scent. Go, quickly! Otherwise, it will be too late!

Long Haochen wrinkled his brows and firmly shook his head, declaring: “Out of the question! As a man, I must to protect you.”

Even though he was only nine years old, as he said those words, his beautiful little face contained an incredible resolution.

“Your scent?” The expression in Long Haochen's eyes changed. Very quickly, he extracted some parts from some nearby wild herbs, and pressed them with his hand, before he quickly rubbed them on the little girl's body, as well as his own. Afterwards, he ran to the side, carrying her towards bushes, and placed her carefully in the middle of the brushes. At that point, he lied on his stomach, using his elbows to support his body.

He didn't notice that the moment he was doing that, the little girl he was protecting stared at him with a strange look, without moving at all.

When Long Haochen stopped moving, he heard some noise from beyond the bushes. From a gap between the bushes, he secretly looked out, and saw a group of men in black clothes. The men's figures were very tall, and smelled a little fishy. Among these people, were some specialized in smelling odors.

“Why does the scent trail end here? Did that little girl get someone to rescue her?” An unpleasant husky voice resounded in the woods.

Chapter 4: Knight Squire Examination (IV)

Making use of the sunlight that passed in the space between the trees, Long Hao Chen clearly saw a black-clad guy's appearance and almost cried out in alarm because his face was unexpectedly covered with black hair, his yellow eyes looking especially ferocious, and his nose unceasingly twitching, as if he was trying to smell the odors.

It is also at this moment that an ice-cold voice resounded through the woods, "Don't go further! Since we chased her, it is useless to go back on our steps."

Then, a sparkling light appeared silently in the sky, taking a graceful shape and rapidly twinkling a few times like lightning in the middle of the woods. The seven or eight pursuers, black-clad men, were all stiff, falling to the ground in the next instant.

Long Hao Chen could only see the bushes before him, as a white clothed person with a covered face suddenly appeared in their field of vision, after having closely followed them. Before that white-clad man's movements were even seen, from his chest, multiple specks of light spurt. In this instant, it seemed that the whole forest was shaken by these rays of light. Long Hao Chen was dazzled and did not manage to maintain his eyes opened.

When he could finally see the scenery before his eyes, he found, to his astonishment, that the black-clad men had all disappeared, and only the white-clad man was left, standing calmly on the ground.

Everything happened too quickly: there were now only bushes in front of Long Hao Chen and everything else turned into dust. It looked as though the ferocious looking people didn't appear at all.

The white-clad man slowly turned around, looking at the direction of Long Hao Chen and the mute girl, saying calmly, "Come out."

Long Hao Chen felt tense. Obviously, he had been discovered. Meanwhile, he saw this white-clad man's pair of eyes. Those eyes appeared emotionless, his black pupils seemed grey, long black hair grew from the back of his head, reaching his shoulder, and he was clad a simple white attire without decoration.

This formidable white-clad man made Long Hao Chen's heart tremble. After all, he was still nine years old, but as he lowered his head and saw the messy and pale face of the little mute girl below him, a stream of blood was poured out from his body, turning into a surge of courage.

Calmly shaking his head towards the little girl, he hinted her not to make any noise and supported himself with both hands' strength, jumping out from the bushes. At the same time, he took out his wooden sword from his back.

The white-clad man stood without moving, but even like that, Long Hao Chen could instinctively feel that the man in front of him was stronger than any wild beast he had ever met, as well as far more dangerous.

Long Hao Chen calmly took hold of his wooden sword, firmly looking upon this white-clad person. He now only hoped that he hadn't discovered the mute little girl.

"We should go back." The white-clad man's voice was still expressionless, these simple words let Long Hao Chen sweat, his body soaking just like snow.

Also at this moment, with a whiz sound, a lovely silhouette appeared in front of Long Hao Chen's body. He shockingly discovered that of which moved unexpectedly to a speed at which his eyes couldn't even follow was precisely the little mute girl that was just protected by him an instant ago.

Her speed is quite fast! Long Hao Chen stared blankly at her.

The little mute girl stretched her arms, using her thin and weak

little body to block Long Hao Chen, her firm gaze stubbornly gazing at the white-clad man before her, forcefully shaking her head.

It looked as though the expression in the shady eyes of the white-clad long-haired expressionless man changed and, in the next instant, his body moved, twinkling like a graceful white light. But unexpectedly and at an incomparably fast speed, the little mute girl in front of Long Hao Chen moved as well.

Long Hao Chen had much better observation skills than most people of his age, but he could only see something that seemed to be a little knife in the small hands of the mute girl, as her body made several irregular movements, just like those of a fierce and tough little tiger. That speed was something only someone with a spiritual energy higher than 20 could possibly have.

Unfortunately, the disparity of power between the two of them was insurmountable and before one can take a single breath, everything was finished.

The dagger in the little mute girl couldn't be seen anymore and she was caught entirely under the armpit of the white-clad person. The white-clad person had taken hold of her, though Long Hao Chen fundamentally didn't see what happened.

"Free her!" Long Hao Chen shouted. Using a very standard posture for knights, the wooden sword in his hand faced the white-clad man. At this time, he had totally forgotten the fearfulness of the person before him, only thinking about how to save the little mute girl.

Going all out, Long Hao Chen still held his wooden sword, preparing to attack, but his consciousness suddenly sank into darkness, as the white-clad man lifted an arm.

Under his armpit, the small mute girl struggled violently. The white-clad man was surprised by this sudden action because he felt that under his armpit, the whole body of the little girl started to

send out a scorching hot heat, a layer of dark red colored radiance also coming out from her skin.

“Calm down, I will not injure him.” The white-clad man’s voice finally sounded like a human’s, though he looked helpless.

The little mute girl stopped struggling, raising her head to look at the white-clad man.

The white-clad man nodded, looking at her, then took a step forward before arriving directly before Long Hao Chen, picking up his body using a single hand, not letting go of his face.

After a short while, the white-clad man slowly wrinkled his eyebrows, “His innate qualities belong to the upper class, but his bones’ growth is insufficient, his temperament and innate qualities make him suitable to becoming an outstanding knight.” As he said this, he had already loosened the little mute girl.

She quickly made several hand gestures.

The white-clad man said, “His future prospects? It is hard to say. Looking only at his natural physical qualities, he can become an outstanding knight. He’s only eight or nine years old, but already possesses some qualities of a knight: pity, courage, perseverance, and sacrifice. His possibilities are limitless, he will become an outstanding knight who will protect the people around him and this mindset will be even more important than his natural qualities.”

The little girl pointed at her own body, then pointed at Long Hao Chen’s, making several hand gestures.

The white-clad man nodded and said, “Alright, the courage he just showed makes him indeed deserve a reward.”

A group of white light surged out from the white-clad man’s chest, forming a shape close to a small white stove, a stove from which thin blue flames glittered.

A moment later, the blue and white light disappeared, merging

with the white-clad's man's body, and he clearly looked exhausted.

“Alright, I just used the spiritual stove to help him sort out twelve standards, it will allow him to promote his potential at least by a scale. Now that your trial is finished, let's head back.”

After he spoke these words, the white-clad man stood up calmly, waving to the little mute girl.

However, against all expectations, the little mute girl ran towards Long Hao Chen, taking off a blue colored ring from one of her hands' finger, golden colored at its bottom base and putting it on Long Hao Chen's left hand's middle finger. Strangely, when this ring arrived on Long Hao Chen's finger, it enlarged a bit by itself and, in the end, fully fit around his finger.

“Cai'er, you...” The white-clad man cries out in a small voice. The next thing he sees is the inflexible stubborn gaze of the little mute girl. She also reorganizes the wild herbs beside him before coming back to the white-clad man's side.

The white-clad man who has stayed completely silent for a long time wrinkled his eyebrows, nodded slowly, then pulled the mute little girl's hand and disappeared with her into the depths of the forest.

Chapter 5: Mysterious New Instructor (I)

“Hum...” Long Hao Chen slowly regained consciousness and blinked several times. From the looks of it, these long eyelashes of his could really make any girl jealous. He gradually came back to his senses.

Suddenly turning over and sitting on the ground, he utters: “Am I alright?” Looking at his unharmed body, he couldn’t help but feel relaxed.

He was surrounded by total silence: in the woods, the only sounds present were the cries of birds.

Lowering his head, Long Hao Chen found, at his side, the wild herbs neatly put in order. Stupefied, he rubbed his own temples.

Have I really fallen asleep, was all that just a dream?

Oh, what is this?

He noticed a ring on his finger. It was a blue colored ring that emitted a luster, not a kind of metallic brightness, but a kind of porcelain or jade luster. The decorative circular pattern was covered by gold and a gem the size of a grain of rice lied on it. This precious stone was completely embedded in the ring and using his hand’s touch, he could only feel its smooth little surface.

The ring’s inner circle was entirely golden. Pressed close to his finger, it seemed to stick out a little, giving him a strange feeling.

Long Hao Chen stared blankly. He immediately realized that everything that happened before his coma was real, but he was still confused, his mind full of questions.

What was the relation between the little mute girl and the white-clad man? Also, how did the white-clad man make these ferocious-looking people chasing her disappear. Who is the owner of this ring?

For the nine years old Long Hao Chen, these issues were just complicated and he has absolutely no clue about the answers.

Standing up, he unconsciously went to the place where their pursuers vanished. Immediately, he discovered something strange there.

After a few steps, Long Hao Chen saw that on the ground originally full of green grass, all the grass had disappeared and turned into barren lands, and these areas were obviously defect at some places. The outermost green grass left only traces of black burns and had turned into the same color as the dark-green lands.

“Well, let’s stop thinking about this, it’s better that I quickly go home to give to Mother her wild herb soup.” Long Hao Chen checked on himself, the Elemental Training Liquid was still there, then he steadily departed. He picked the wooden sword up from side before heading off in the direction of his home.

However, because he just discovered a strange phenomenon, he stopped his steps right after picking up the wooden sword. The wooden sword had become lighter, as if it was a piece of feather!

In fact, the wooden sword in his hand was not what Genuine Knights used: it was indeed lighter and not made the same way. This sword was made of hardwood and weighed 3.5 to 4 kgs but, despite this, he needed a full month of training before he could manage to use it, at that time he entered Odin Hall.

Did the wooden sword become lighter? Wrong, it still has the same appearance! Is it possible that it was actually my strength that has improved?

As he thought about it, both of Long Hao Chen’s hands took hold of the sword and he dashed forward, slashing before him. Immediately, a sound rang out, the sword’s power really scaring him, but his hands stay stable. He clearly felt that his limbs’ and bones’ strength had increased tremendously. Jumping several times, he feels as though his body was now as light as his wooden

sword had become.

This was at least the strength of the 20th spiritual energy level right? In his mind, Long Hao Chen still remembered the indifferent and stubborn face of the little mute girl and muttered: “Are you the one who gave me all of these? Tomorrow, I’ll appraise my precise spiritual energy level at the Hall. Anyhow, let’s meet the wooden stake again.”

A youth’s heart can’t be much complicated. Although, today, a lot of matters left Long Hao Chen perplexed, after a single thought about the fact his mother could drink Elemental Training Liquid again, he cast aside all these matters. After all, the little mute girl was someone he just met, so he only prayed for her safety inwardly.

A little courtyard, two thatched rooms, a few shelves entangled in vines, and some vegetables drying under the sun. This was Long Hao Chen’s home.

“Mother, I am back.”

The door of the thatched cottage opened and a peasant woman came out. Long Hao Chen looked at her outward appearance then ran back to her, immediately revealing a smile.

She was Bai Yue, Long Hao Chen’s mother. Long Hao Chen’s appearance was very similar to hers, as if he was carved out based on her appearance. Although Bai Yue is simply dressed and had undergone a lot of hardships, but her exceedingly beautiful appearance could intensely shock anyone. The only thing on her that doesn’t look the same as Long Hao Chen was her eyes’ color. For Bai Yue, they were black, whereas for Long Hao Chen, they were of a dark blue color.

But precisely because of this beautiful appearance, they both had an even harder life.

Because of this beautiful appearance, Bai Yue, as she was bearing

her son, was harassed frequently. Though these issues were somehow resolved, how could one live such a life?

Although they came to the town, Odin, under agreement, she was forced to live in a remote corner of the town, and washing clothes was her job, which enabled her to gain a meager income that was only barely enough to sustain her household.

“Chenchen, you came back. How was the examination?” Bai Yue, brimming in joy, ran to her son, holding him in her arms. She picked him up, the 9 years old Long Hao Chen who grew merely at the peak of her stomach in size.

Affected by his mother’s soft and pure fragrance, Long Hao Chen jubilantly answers: “Mother, I passed it.”

Bai Yue faintly smiles, “I knew that Bai Bai was the most awesome. Wash quickly, Mother will prepare you lunch right now.”

Long Hao Chen jumped out from his mother’s bosom, “Let me go prepare it. I picked some edible wild herbs, I will prepare a soup for you to drink.”

As he said that, he went straight to the thatched cottage. At its entrance, he still couldn’t help but turn at the direction of his mother to take a look. He didn’t know why, but he felt like she seemed really happy today. In fact, his mother generally didn’t speak much during the day.

Bai Yue continuously followed her son with her eyes as he went to the kitchen, murmuring: “Bai Bai, you are having such a hard time, but... ..” she sighed lightly, from her eyes revealing a struggling feeling before finally restraining her inner feelings that were about to surge out.

A silent night passed.

The next day, Long Hao Chen woke up early and went to eat the breakfast prepared by his mother before proceeding to Odin Hall.

As he slept soundly, in his dreams appeared the scene that had occurred during the day and even the one when that little mute girl gave him the ring. It fired him up to such an extent that in the morning, as he woke up, he was too impatient to wait longer before going to confirm how much his spiritual energy grew.

Because he came so early, when Long Hao Chen got into Odin Hall, no one else had arrived yet. There was nothing valuable at Odin's Hall so there was basically no one monitoring, let alone Balza, the Knight Instructor who lived right behind.

Hurrying to yesterday's examination place, in front of the wooden block, he withdrew from his back the wooden sword. He came today, earlier, only to prove that his guess was correct by taking a spiritual energy test.

The wooden sword slowly raised. Long Hao Chen concentrated, his foot accumulating power, taking a deep breath and, from his hands, the wooden sword went down at full speed.

Puff — swish —, Ping—

Chapter 6: Mysterious New Instructor (II)

Puff — swish —, Ping—

Three successive sounds directly resound but they are completely different. The first one comes from the chop, the second one from the sword, snapping with the impact. It was exactly the wooden sword that couldn't withstand the power of Long Hao Chen's attack and snapped from the middle. Fortunately, it wasn't completely divided into two parts, else the upper part may have flown towards him and hurt him.

And the last sound is the sound of the collision with the stone bead. As he is still in the middle of his motion, Long Hao Chen sees clearly in front of him that it impressively bounced up to the 25th division, the highest one.

Is it for real? It is, the fact the wooden sword snapped like this proved it. Balza said once to him that the wooden sword they used could bear at most the twentieth spiritual energy level.

Long Hao Chen hasn't a lot of knowledge in regard to knights, but the fact that, in an evening, he promoted from a first stage knight to a second stage knight makes him very shocked and pleasantly surprised.

“Um?” as Long Hao Chen comes back to his senses. Uttering a quiet noise, he turns his head subconsciously and discovers shockingly that, without notice, a middle-aged was right behind him.

Long Hao Chen is surprised, but not scared at all, curiously looking at him.

This middle aged man has a tall and thin stature, black hair, black pupils, handsome looks, and bright eyes. He cannot say that he looks eminently talented but he looks quite dignified.

After showing a moment of surprise, the middle aged man

quickly comes back to his senses, wrinkling and looking back at Long Hao Chen.

“Who are you?” Long Hao Chen asks full of curiosity.

The middle aged man answers with a faint voice: “You just passed yesterday, the Knight Squire test, so starting today I am your new Instructor. You can call me [Teacher](#) Xing Yu (Xīng yǔ).”

Long Hao Chen hesitatingly says: “But it is the first time I met you.”

Xing Yu faintly says: “You are called [Long Hao Chen](#), you are nine years old this year, and your mother is called Bai Yue, am I right?”

Long Hao Chen nods.

Xing Yu’s stare suddenly sinks down: “Then wait for Balza and we will see”, as he says this, he suddenly stops speaking, only staring at a direction, his lips slightly sulking.

After a little time, rapid footsteps could be heard and Long Hao Chen saw Balza running towards them at a fast pace, but his face looked strongly shocked and respectful.

“Hello Instructor.” Long Hao Chen immediately presents to Balza his Knight’s salute as he sees him arrive.

But strangely, Balza didn’t return the salute as usual. Instead, he hurriedly goes in front of Xing Yu and respectfully says: “Elder.”

Xing Yu nods, “Tell him that I am his new Instructor.”

“Right.” Balza hurries to turn towards Long Hao Chen and says: “Senior Xing Yu comes from Yue Hao City’s Knight Hall and from today onwards, he will be your Knight Instructor for the next three years. You will have to listen to all the directions he will give to you. Senior Xing Yu is a Genuine Knight.”

“Yes sir.” Long Hao Chen politely answered. In fact, he has no idea about what the difference between a quasi-knight and a

Genuine Knight is. He simply knows that since he's his new Instructor, he has to practice with him.

"Teacher Xing Yu." As he thinks about this, he kindly salutes Xing Yu. He is truly far more mature than the others of same age and more steady as well.

"Em (groaning sound), we have to go." Xing Yu says this as he naturally drags Long Hao Chen out, grabbing him by the hand and heading to the outdoor. Before he stepped forward, his obscure gaze stayed fixed on Long Hao Chen's beautiful face, showing an upset face.

"Teacher Xing Yu, shouldn't we stay here to practice?" Exiting Odin Hall, Long Hao Chen cannot help but ask this question.

Xing Yu says: "This place isn't suitable."

Affected by Xing Yu's cold expression, Long Hao Chen doesn't dare ask him further.

Balza's gaze is directed towards their figure as they leave; he is shocked and thinks aloud: "Doesn't this Senior know his own status? For him to send greetings to someone like me... To be so powerful, he must be at least an Earth Knight. No, maybe he is a [Radiant Knight](#)? Heavens!"

As Xing Yu was taking Long Hao Chen away from Odin town, Long Hao Chen suddenly feels a surge of warmth. A simple and honest feeling comes from Long Xing Yu's hand, and, in the next moment, a strange scene occurred.

Everytime Xing Yu's tiptoes touched the ground surface, they crossed at least 33m (10 Zhang of 3.3 m each) and after a few breathes, Odin town was already far from sight.

For Long Hao Chen, this traveling speed was incredible. It could be described as something "as swift as the wind and as quick as lightning"; all he could do was to strongly grip Xing Yu's hand, by fear of falling otherwise.

They passed through the place where Long Hao Chen picked the edible wild herbs in the forest, climbing a mountain peak in the same direction. Long Hao Chen is familiar with this place, it is where he grew up after all. This mountain is called by people from Odin town Odin Mountain. But before this mountain, there is a forest where wild beast often appear, and even magical beast sometimes. Therefore, few people go there. He went also half a year ago by curiosity at the foot of Odin Mountain. There, he discovered a famous wild beastkin, but he ran away frightened upon seeing it, and from this day onwards, Long Hao Chen never penetrated deeply in the forest again, not to mention Odin Mountain.

“Teacher, there are wild beasts here and maybe even magical beasts.” Long Hao Chen reminded him with good intentions.

Xing Yu looks like he heard him, but went even faster, directly taking him to ascend Odin Mountain. Even during the process of climbing the mountain, his speed never decreased. The scenery quickly passed as he was brushed by strong winds and his hair dispersed.

Odin Mountain is not very high, just 666 odds meters (200 Zhang). Only after a little while did they arrived to the summit.

Three log cabins appeared before Xing Yu’s line of vision. They didn’t have courtyards: it was three solitary log cabins but they looked completely new, they were clearly built recently.

As they arrived at the log cabins, Xing Yu stopped moving, leading Long Hao Chen to enter the biggest one in the middle.

They pushed the door and entered, the log cabin had a thin timber section and emitted a kind of smell, but not an unpleasant one. On the contrary, it emitted a sweet smell. The log cabin of the center was the biggest but the inner rooms have only the simplest layout. There was only a wooden bed, a wooden desk, and two wooden chairs. As simple as that, but still more than Long Hao

Chen's home.

“Sit.” Xing Yu pointed a chair and pulled out the other one to sit on.

Long Hao Chen sits down. Although he's young, he can feel his teacher is quite formidable. He's quite nervous, but somewhat excited at the same time.

“Tell me what happened to you yesterday? Why did your Spiritual Energy level increase so much?” Xing Yu calmly asks. His face is expressionless but his words are filled with an invisible pressure from Long Hao Chen's point of view.

“Yesterday was like this... ..” Long Hao Chen didn't feel like he had something to hide, so he told everything that happened at once.

During the whole time he was listening, Xing Yu only wrinkled once, slightly, but his expression didn't change at all except that time.

老师 (lǎoshī), basic chinese word. It has exactly the same meaning as “sensei”, but sensei sounds really much better than laoshi, that sound a little lame in an english text imo, but since I can't use Japanese to translate a Chinese novel (it would be really impolite and insulting towards Chinese people), I had regretfully to use the word teacher.

This expression was used by the white-clad man with Cai Er when saying LHC would become an awesome knight; the exact expression he used was something like “he will become a Da Di Knight (大地骑士)”, literally meaning something like an “earth scale knight”. It may be a level for Genuine Knights, maybe after Spiritual Energy level 50? 100? Well, we'll know later about this, I guess. I translated it for you for it to become clearer to you, the term, “awesome knight” (because earth scale/level sounded a bit lame), but now that this expression has been used for the second time, my guess is that earth scale may have another meaning other

than “awesome” so I modified the translation. I’ll also put a footnote on the chapter where “Da Di Qi Shi” was used first. My guess: it means there may be a “sky scale”, “space scale”? *Ohoh, right after I wrote all this stuff, we learned about the next level in the next sentence: Radiant Knight. Ahah so my guess was right, I’m so proud.

Yeah it’s the same Long (meaning dragon) as in Hao Chen’s name. Yeah, you are not the only ones to feel a Darth Vader pattern, plus he knows his mum’s name. But for the same reason (it would be strange to be spoiling like this his own reader), I feel like it was just a mistake by the author who may have mixed up LHC’s and XY’s family names (maybe).

Chapter 7: Mysterious New Instructor (III)

“... .. teacher, are you saying that this girl may be in trouble?” Long Hao Chen cannot help but ask.

Xing Yu nods, answering: “No, she should be on the same side as that white-clad man, both probably belongs to the Assassin Temple.”

“Assassin Temple?” Long Hao Chen’s eyes looked full of curiosity

Xing Yu pulls the hand that wore the ring, thinking aloud: “Is this a space ring?” as he says this, Long Hao Chen’s finger suddenly emits a light, and as his fingertip touches the ring, it causes a thin blue halo to appear.

Xing Yu looks astonished and tells him: “You are quite lucky, it must be that little girl who left this to you. It has an incredible value, don’t forget that. That little girl is quite interesting.”

Long Hao Chen scratches his head, his beautiful face looked quite doubtful: he actually did not understand at all what his teacher meant.

“Teacher, do you know how that white-clad man made those fierce-looking people disappear?”

Xing Yu shows a smile, “They disappeared because he killed these people, using the kind of thousand strikes spiritual stove used by those from the Assassin Temple, breaking them into pieces then burning them into ashes without leaving a single trace. It is also through the use of this thousand strikes spiritual stove that made the spiritual energy in your body grow, helping you to break through twelve Standards by burning some impurities, causing changes in your body. This is no small favor, you have to keep it in mind, and if in the future you have the occasion, return the favor to the other side. You can’t owe them forever, unless.....”

Normally, he wouldn’t interrupt him, but Long Hao Chen

himself didn't notice that he did so because he found a lot of interest in Teacher Xing Yu's words.

“Teacher, what is this thousand strikes spiritual stove? The white lights that appeared at that moment?”

Xing Yu nodded, saying: “You can explain it like so. Using simple words, it is a smelting furnace that uses spiritual energy, making it undergo several transformations. Each spiritual stove is exclusive to a particular person. However, you don't need to study knowledge regarding spiritual stoves yet so I can only tell you now that a spirit stove is rare. By possessing a thousand strikes spiritual stove, one will not, for sure, become a powerhouse, but without it, one will never be able to stand at the peak of power.”

“Oh”, Listening to him, Long Hao Chen's heart immediately let out a feeling of envy. If, in the future, he could get a spiritual stove, how would he feel? Looking at the ring on his finger, he cannot help but recall the little girl of that day.

Xing Yu says: “I already had Balza inform your family, you will be allowed to go home once every week. The other times, you will be staying here to practice with me.”

Long Hao Chen is startled and asks somewhat anxiously: “Teacher, can you still give me some Elemental Training Liquid?”

Xing Yu nods, answering: “I will do so every time, right before you will go home. If your performance is good, I will give you some even better medicine that will have a very good effect on anyone's body. On the other hand, if you don't meet my expectations, then I will drive you away from the mountain and you will not be a Knight Squire from the Knight Temple anymore.”

As he says these words, Xing Yu's eyes look profound, showing a light apologetic feeling. However, he conceals it very well, so basically, Long Hao Chen didn't see it.

At the moment Xiao(little) Hao Chen hears Xing Yu's words, he

immediately nods, his gaze looks firm and inflexible. For his mother's health, he will seriously complete the practice instructed by his teacher. Moreover, he knows it is for his own good that his teacher teaches him.

Xing Yu nods satisfied, answering: "From today onwards, I will instruct you all kinds of knowledge in the morning. In the afternoon and the evening, you will practice. You must remember well the knowledge I instruct you through. For each thing you forget, I will deduct one portion of Training Elemental Liquid." He obviously knows the weak point of Long Hao Chen; with only a little warning, he scared the little guy up to the point where he is now just repeatedly nodding.

Xing Yu says: "Tell me what you know about the Temple Alliance."

Long Hao Chen answers: "Instructor Balza taught us that the Temple Alliance is an alliance that includes the Knight Temple, the Soldier Temple, the Assassin Temple, the Mage Temple, the Priest Temple and the Spiritual Temple. These six temples united in order to guard the last territory of humanity."

Xing Yu nods and adds: "You are right, but this is merely the most basic facts. Before the Antique Period passed 13,000 years ago, we, mankind, gradually gained the control of Sheng Mo Da Lu. Then in the mainland tens of human countries formed, they were ruling on the mainland and causing the humanity to dominate Sheng Mo Da Lu. Each country developed their technology and agriculture, in addition to their intellectual knowledge: it is during this period that we, mankind, developed the fastest. People lived at peace, at ease, and the continent was flourishing."

"After those peaceful days passed, warfare began to appear; among themselves, the ten countries were involved in unceasing warfare, and due to these confrontations, the number of countries lessened and the situation became a confrontation between three big countries. Nobody dared to act rashly towards these three

countries and this balanced situation lasted several thousand years of time. We call this period “mankind’s glorious seven thousand years.”

“It lasted until six thousand years later, when this brilliant period suddenly ended because of the arrival of the demon race.” At this moment, Xing Yu showed a gaze full of horror and hatred.

“As human lived normally, nine stars aligned, and a kind of enormous void rift in the sky, at the east of the mainland, appeared. 72 demon gods emerged from the rift, bringing plagues from their demonic breath.

During the hundred days following the first appearance of these demon gods, all living beings, regardless if they were wild beasts, magical beasts, or humans, once they were infected by the gas, immediately experienced enormous biologic variations, becoming demonic beings belonging to the demon race that obeyed all orders issued by the demon gods. After a hundred short days, the seventy two demon gods had an army of several million soldiers. Fortunately, these demon gods’ demonic breath was only sent out continuously for no more than a hundred days else I’m afraid we, mankind, would have already gone extinct.”

Long Hao Chen is only an early youth, he did not have a lot of responsibility and he knows it so he listened to Xing Yu’s narration as if he was listening to tales. However, he hadn’t forgotten how Xing Yu had just threatened him and as he listens, he tries to keep firmly in his heart the tale.

“Seventy two demon gods, and each one has, truly, an almost impenetrable defense. They are ranked according to their strength. They lead the armies of mutated demons to assault against humanity with the intent to wipe us out. From the day these seventy two demon pillar-gods arrived onwards, we, mankind, entered into a dark age that lasted until now.

After the six thousand years of mutual strife, mankind’s

countries were already destroyed and although we saved important wealth and force, when facing these demonic armies we were still in a disadvantageous position. We were even nearly extinct until mankind's strongest powers, the six Temple Halls that appeared three thousand years ago, managed to, after a lot of struggle, stabilize our situation, stopping the demons' progress. However, our Temple Alliance only occupies a little area, of one quarter of the mainland"

When he arrived at this point, Xing Yu's tone clearly roused up, both eyes sending out a bright radiance, "Thus, today I will instruct you your first lesson that will keep in mind the pain and shame that the demon race had brought us. As knights, we must guard our homeland, our dear ones, our race. You must recite these words every day and you must get enough power to protect the people we must guard."

Chapter 8: Mysterious New Instructor (III)

“The demon race have already murdered tens of thousands of our compatriots, causing these compatriots’ blood to stain the grounds. Over the last three thousand years, we six temples have never shown remorse for them and have done the most that was possible for the survival of mankind so that, one day, we will be able to recapture all the lost territory and expel these cruel and vicious demons. We will work until our last breath.

Long Hao Chen, you must keep firmly in mind, that the demon race is the enemy we have the most intense and deep-seated hatred towards.”

Xing Yu’s voice was full of power and even the only nine years-old Long Hao Chen was incredibly influenced by his words and his blood seethed with excitement.

“The demon race is the enemy we have the most intense and deep-seated hatred towards.” Long Hao Chen’s firm tone copied the way Xing Yu said this sentence.

Xing Yu nodded, “We will concentrate all of our efforts to expel them from our homeland, to recapture our lost territory, and to protect our important ones. Ask to yourself: one day, if we can’t block the demon race’s progress anymore, what will happen to our town Odin? Your friends, your mother, what sort of catastrophe will they face?”

As the clever Long Hao Chen did so, he shivered uncontrollably, and his look became ferocious.

Looking at him, Xing Yu’s eyes revealed a satisfied expression, he could naturally see that this little child had already kept everything he told to him firmly in his mind.

“Today, I will teach you only this much of historical knowledge. From tomorrow on, I will tell you about the origin of the six big

temples. Then, I will teach you about writing as well as some knowledge regarding the demon race.”

After a whole morning, Long Hao Chen was immersed in the various stories that Xing Yu told him. Compared to his former Instructor, Balza, the things this new Instructor taught him were completely different. He instructed every kind of lesson to him, sometimes in an allusive way, sometimes in a straightforward way. It was as if his knowledge was boundless. On a mere morning, Long Hao Chen finds that he had already learnt a lot, which made him instantly like his teacher, Xing Yu.

“Tomorrow morning, I will give you an examination about everything I told you today. Now, let’s eat. You will have a half-hour rest afterwards.”

Saying this, Xing Yu seemed more normal than usual, and he walked immediately to the wooden table.

A scorching hot energy surged out from Xing Yu’s hand and, under Long Hao Chen’s dumbfounded gaze, the food immediately sent out some hot and dense steam.

A large bowl of rice completely filled that seemed as if it was sparkling, with four very large portions of cooked dishes: two of meat and two of vegetables. Because his family has always been lacking in money, he has never eaten such a good meal. Only from seeing it, Long Hao Chen’s eyes seemed dazzled.

Xing Yu took out two pairs of chopsticks, “Eat. When you are finished, you can rest for a little while.”

Long Hao Chen suddenly hurries to stand in front of Xing and suddenly knelt before him, letting out a ‘Puff’ sound.

“What are you doing? Don’t tell me that you don’t know men have gold under their knee, how can they easily kneel down before others?” Xing Yu scolded him with fury.

Long Hao Chen lowered his head, speaking haltingly: “Teacher, I,

I... ..”

“What ‘I’, ‘I’ after a little favor, you will kneel down before others like this, don’t tell me I am teaching to a submissive bug?” Xing Yu’s voice becomes even stricter.

Long Hao Chen nods: “Teacher, I want to request, can I eat less every day, so that when I go home I can bring some food for Mother? Mother has also never eaten such good food.”

Xing Yu’s ferocity suddenly became dull, from his original anger there was nothing left, and he now seems somewhat sluggish. Because Long Hao Chen was still lowering his head, he didn’t notice that, at this moment, this mysterious new teacher’s lips unexpectedly trembled slightly with both of his eyes sparkling even more .

Slowly standing up, Xing Yu pushed the door and was leaving, but his voice was sent back: “Stand up and eat. I promise you that as long as you will seriously follow my practice and meet my requirements, I will make someone deliver a meal for your mother every day.”

“Thank you teacher.” Long Hao Chen was overjoyed, his knees were rotating towards the door, that made some Ping Ping Ping sound before closing, then he got up, about to start eating this attractive meal.

Xing Yu stood right behind the door, looking up to the sky. He was the only one who could hear these words he let out: “Modesty, honesty, compassion, courage, fairness, sacrifice, perseverance, love, justice, what does he lack? Is he truly an inborn knight?”

When he returned to the cabin, Long Hao Chen had already finished eating lunch, but each of the meals had a half part left, and a bowl of rice was put in front of the seat of Xing Yu. As he saw him come back, he hurried to stand up and respectfully greet him.

“The room on the next door is yours, go there and rest. I will call

you at the fixed time.”

“Yes.” Long Hao Chen truly thought that Teacher Xing Yu was a gift brought by heaven to him, and went to rest in great delight.

After a half hour, Xing Yu called for Long Hong Chen.

“From the afternoon to the evening, you will practice. This is for you.” Xing Yu gave Long Hao Chen a pair of dark green bamboo swords.

The bamboo swords were way lighter than any wooden swords Long Hao Chen had ever used and the handles, although light, were still quite tough.

Xing Yu dragged him by the arm, jumping once more towards the mountain peak and, in a little while, he had taken Long Hao Chen to some place half way up the mountain.

Pointing at a large rock in front of them, Xing Yu said: “This is a natural owl-ant nest. Inside, there will be thousands of owl-ants. Although these insects are not magical beasts, they are very aggressive, particularly to intruders. Don’t forget to use these bamboo swords to protect yourself.”

With such a simple explanation and without even waiting for Long Hao Chen to understand the matter, Xing Yu kicked him towards the huge rock and Long Hao Chen cried in alarm as he was sent into a pitch black cave.

Long Hao Chen’s body landed on something soft and although having fallen from a height of five meters, he was still conscious.

The large rock at his top that used to block the entrance until Xing Yu moved it to push Long Hao Chen inside of the cave was put back, and now he could faintly see up to ten meters around him.

Also at this moment, with a buzz sound, Long Hao Chen could feel around him some numerous close creatures which were flying from all directions.

At this moment, he understood what Teacher Xing Yu meant and brandished the pair of bamboo swords.

However, what he learnt at Odin Hall were only the most basic cuts, chops, and thrusting skills and before him were uncountable owl-ants that were in a frenzy. In an instant, his body was bitten and stung by a lot of them.

A violent pain was transmitted to his whole body, making Xiao Long Chen utter some pitiful cries and the bamboo swords in his hands immediately scattering.

“This is one of the practice methods I’ll instruct you and also your first examination. If you are unable to withstand this, you can leave tomorrow.”

Xing Yu’s voice spread to Long Hao Chen’s ears, making him panic and lose his firmness, but the severity of his body’s pain was even greater than the effects of these words. His clothes couldn’t restrain the bites of the owl-ants any longer and the bamboo swords in his hands that were waved in disorder were clearly hitting a large number of bodies.

“I can withstand this.” Long Hao Chen shouted. Thinking of his mother and of Xing Yu’s words, his courage began to exceed his fear and he went all out to keep waving the bamboo swords in his hands, trying to drive away these owl-ants that was attacking him unceasingly.

“The current you cannot see, but you have merely lost your sense of vision. You still have your sense of hearing, your sense of touch, and even your sense of taste. Use everything that can assist your abilities to feel everything around you.”

Chapter 9: A Teacher who comes from Hell?

(I)

Xing Yu's voice was conveyed once more, but he just explained some simple sword techniques before he disappeared.

The merely nine years old Long Hao Chen has to stay alone in this pitch black cave with these frenzied owl-ants and an intense pain that incessantly spreads through his body.

Because of the severe pain, his speed shot down multiple times, but as he thought about his mother, courage surged out from his heart.

The owl-ants only brought him severe pain; he clenched his teeth to suppress the pain, waving his bamboo swords over and over.

Xing Yu stood outside of the hole. Feeling each minute that passed, his facial expression constantly changed. Not only once, did he raise his hand with the intent to push the huge rock before him, but he resisted.

If it was another kid from Odin Hall, he would have fainted soon after getting into this hole. However, Long Hao Chen was still conscious, constantly exerting himself to fight those owl-ants. They are not poisonous, but can easily bring violent pain to people. Their 1/3 of a decimetre (1 Cun) long body is not only extremely hard, but they also have an incredible attack power.

The expression in Xing Yu's eyes was constantly changing, he really trained Long Hao Chen with extreme methods. So long as Long Hao Chen could bear this, his mental strength that was so different from ordinary people would be able to develop at the fastest speed possible. This training had also numerous other benefits. It would forge him an iron will.

After half an hour, a whole half hour, Long Hao Chen felt like he passed a century here, his whole body was already numb because

of the pain; he couldn't wave the swords in his hands anymore and his weak body sank into a coma.

At this moment, the stone covering the entrance of the cave was pushed aside and a great force was exerted on Long Hao Chen's body, pulling it, as the uncountable owl-ants were repelled out by a strange power, without any way to fly out to avoid it.

This was probably all done by Xing Yu, but as he looked at Long Hao Chen, taking a deep breath, it could be seen in his gaze that he couldn't control his feelings anymore.

At this moment, Long Hao Chen had his whole body already completely worn out. His whole body was swelling from stings, his beautiful little face couldn't be recognized at all, and traces of the impacts with the owl-ants' bodies could be seen on the set of bamboo swords.

Xing Yu hurriedly made Long Hao Chen inhale a kind of red medicine and, after a flash, he had carried Long Hao Chen back to the log cabin at an immeasurable speed.

There was a total of three log cabins: apart from the master and his apprentice's log cabins, there was also another one Long Hao Chen never went in. At this moment, it was into this log cabin that Xing Yu brought him.

Upon entering the log cabin, a dense hot steam could be seen coming out.

In this wooden cabin's interior could be seen a rock with a pool dug out around. To say it accurately, it should be the pool that was here first, and then this log cabin was built around.

The water of the pool was overflowing. The water inside the pool was brown colored, numerous medicines floating inside.

Xing Yu quickly stripped off Long Hao Chen's ripped clothes, carefully putting his body inside of the pool. Only the part above his nose was outside of the pool.

The hot spring here was, in fact, dug by Xing Yu, but Long Hao Chen, still in a coma, didn't know this. In the pool's water, he was soaked into these medical materials that had a value that even 10,000 bottles of Elemental Training Liquid could not compare with.

After half an hour, Xing Yu saw that the swollen parts on Long Hao Chen's body were gradually disappearing and left the log cabin.

The sunlight was gradually disappearing, leaving room for the dim light of the night and, unknowingly, it was already dusk.

"It hurts. Waaaa--" Long Hao Chen's shouted, waking up from his coma while being soaked in the hot spring.

His body moved, but naturally it could not keep its balance. The water in the pool wasn't deep, but he drank some and just spat it out. From the pool, a loud cough sound could be heard.

Where am I? Long Hao Chen ignorantly looked at the surrounding steam and the water around him. The intense pain he originally had was already all gone and, except from the fact that his whole body was completely cleaned and naked, he felt completely natural.

Opening the door and holding clothes, Xing Yu entered from outside.

"Wear these clothes and come out." after letting out a simple sentence, he left again.

Long Hao Chen came out from the water, a bit confused, grabbing a towel on his side before putting clean clothes on. Then, he thought back about the events that happened in the owl-ants' cave.

Remembering the severe pain he had at that moment, he couldn't help but shiver intensely. At that time, he relied entirely on his courage to bear it, but thinking back about this, he felt once

more the severe pain of that moment.

As he pushes the door, he discovers that he was in the third log cabin and entering into the middle cabin, he discovered a rich meal arranged on the table.

“Come and eat.” Xing Yu acted as if nothing had happened, pointing to the meal on the table and starting to eat.

Looking at his teacher, Long Hao Chen haltingly spoke: “Teacher, I... ..”

“Come and eat first.” Xing Yu looked at him with a stern gaze.

Long Hao Chen didn’t dare say anything else and hurried to sit down and to start eating as if he hadn’t eaten anything for a long time. He was especially hungry tonight; his appetite was three times more than usual. Except from the little portion Xing Yu ate, in a little while, Long Hao Chen had eaten everything edible on the table.

“Tell me how you felt today.” Xing Yu didn’t let him tidy up the table yet, calmly inquiring.

“It was very painful.” Long Hao Chen sincerely answers.

“Can you only do this much?” Xing Yu coldly spoke: “This was only the beginning. Come out with me and take your bamboo swords along.”

“Okay.”

The master and its apprentice left the wooden cabin, arriving at the summit of the mountain.

Two similar bamboo swords appeared in Xing Yu’s hand, “The sword is known as the king of weapons. It can attack as well as defend. If you want to defend others, you have to be able to defend yourself first. Now, I am going to teach you closure tactics now. Look carefully.”

The bamboo blades moved. Letting out some afterimages, these

sword rays that looked so unreal shone on the summit of the mountain. Sentences accompanied these sword rays, unceasingly entering into Long Hao Chen's ear. Today, his hellish practice had just began.

A whole seven days passed. At this time, Xing Yu instructed every day to Long Hao Chen, various subjects; astronomy, geography, and history were included. On the next day, there would be an examination about the course of the day before, but to Long Hao Chen, it was the happiest moment of the day.

In the afternoon, hell began. The owl-ants' lair was a required course everyday, but the final result was the same every time. This inhumane pain made Long Hao Chen almost want to die, but every time his heart thought of giving up, Xing Yu would remind him that he would be able to go home after only a few days.

Every time he was in the owl-ant's cave, he trained until the moment he would faint, and once he woke up, he would find himself in the middle of the hot springs, with the pain already gone.

After dinner, practice started over: Xing Yu passed some skills to Long Hao Chen and let him do mechanical memorizing to learn a few things. Only when the night was very late would the day of training end.

The most painful thing for Long Hao Chen was the fact that Xing Yu didn't permit him to sleep. When it was late at night, as he was completely exhausted, Xing Yu would teach him a seated meditation method that Long Hao Chen called "sleeping while sitting". And in the morning, Xing Yu's sword would hit him, without a doubt, to wake him up.

Chapter 10: A Teacher who comes from Hell? (II)

Just like that, seven days passed. Long Hao Chen, who could only stay in the owl-ants' lair for half an hour in the beginning, could now stay inside for a quarter of an hour longer.

After soaking in the hot spring, he would eat his dinner. Long Hao Chen, well behaved, would wait for Xing Yu's guidance. After a week of practice, he was not only respectful towards Xing Yu, but was also sincerely afraid of him.

"No need to go on for tonight, go home. But the seated meditation mustn't be broke off. Come back here tomorrow early in the morning." Xing Yu threw a bottle of Training Elemental Liquid towards Long Hao Chen's hands, hinting for him to leave.

Long Hao Chen felt relieved after seeing Xing Yu's salute and flew out of the log cabin. I can finally go home.

Looking at his figure leaving, Xing Yu revealed a smile that Long Hao Chen didn't see, "Stupid boy, did you forget what kind of place you are in? Three years, I can only stay for a mere three years; during this time, I will teach you everything I can."

The light feeling in his body was truly excellent, Long Hao Chen ran down the mountain as he could feel the change in his body.

After a mere week, he realized that his senses were way sharper than before. Although he had really been tormented in the owl-ants' lair, he had different sensations every time he went there. He could finally, after a week, feel each of the owl-ants' attacks coming from each direction. His reaction speed had also evolved incredibly compared to the level at the moment he just arrived.

Although he hadn't tested it yet, Long Hao Chen was sure that the biggest changes in his body was his spiritual energy which undoubtedly rose. It was at least two levels, and in a mere week!

Although he had to go through painful training everyday, going as far as depriving himself from sleep, his originally thin and weak body clearly became somewhat stronger after a week, his face also looked way ruddier (TL: healthy red color). It was because, in addition to having healthy meals, he soaked every day in the hot spring.

Long Hao Chen didn't know that the combination of the hot spring and the medicinal material affected his body quite a bit: the whole was called "bath forging the bone marrow" (Xǐ suǐ duàn gǔ).

As he excitedly went down from the mountain, suddenly, a fishy smell caught his attention.

The week he spent taking on crowds of owl-ants' attacks wasn't wasted: instantly, Long Hao Chen stopped his steps and jumped to the side, at the same time taking out the bamboo swords from his back.

With a wizz sound, a jet black shadow happened to pass over from the path he was about to cross. At this time, although it was almost dusk, Long Hao Chen easily saw the surprise attack coming.

It was 1.33 meters (4 Chi) high and had a pitch-black body supported by four little sturdy limbs and on its back grew scales that were trembling unceasingly.

"A magical beast?" Long Hao Chen couldn't help letting out a cry, his heart was at this moment extremely nervous.

Xing Yu taught him everyday every kind of subjects, and amongst them included the presentation of the different kinds of magical beasts. Luckily, he studied the kind of magical beasts like the one that was currently before his eyes a few days ago.

It was a Scorpion-tailed lizard, an elementary level magical beast. Its power was the same as a human with a vocation that uses spiritual energy at a rank between the thirtieth and the fiftieth.

Magical beasts are all divided into four ranks: elementary level,

intermediate level, high level, and peak level. The biggest difference between magical beasts and wild beasts is their ability to use spiritual energy power to enhance themselves and attack the enemy.

Magical beasts of the first rank are rather weak, they cannot use abilities using spiritual energy to attack their enemies and can only use them to strengthen themselves. This scorpion-tailed lizard is of this kind, a carnivorous magical beast. The scales and the shell at its back have great defensive abilities, its tail has a poisonous hook, and its weak point is on its stomach. However, because this beast attacks while crawling on the ground, its belly will rarely be exposed.

The scorpion-tailed lizard looked fiercely at Long Hao Chen, its big mouth exposing its thick white teeth. It looked as if it was wondering how long it had been since it had eaten a human.

Facing a magical beast for the first time, Long Hao Chen felt chills on his back, his hands were both gripping tightly the bamboo swords but he didn't act rashly, much less did he turn around to run away. To keep calm in such a situation was already quite hard for a nine year old child, but he was behaving like this because he still remembered that Xing Yu told him that scorpion-tailed lizards' sprint speed was quite fast. At the same time, he taught him never to show his back to the enemy.

Wizz — —, the scorpion-tailed lizard didn't give too much thought and its four sturdy and strong limbs rushed straight towards Long Hao Chen, his teeth directed towards Long Hao Chen's thighs.

At this moment, the hellish training of the last seven days revealed its effects. Almost instinctively reacting, Long Hao Chen took a step to the left and, at the same time, used the pair of bamboo swords to hit and cut towards the scorpion-tailed lizard's head.

The reason behind this side-step dodge was not to draw back,

because Xing Yu taught him that he couldn't easily draw back unless he was sure to die if he didn't do so, or he could easily be attacked from the back and lose without possibilities of fighting back. Dodging to the side was different, because he could dodge, and at the same time keep his enemy on watch.

Two Pu sounds rang. Although the bamboo sword is tough, it is also very light and its destructive power isn't up to much, and so it fell down on the scorpion-tailed lizard like some decayed leather. However, the current Long Hao Chen wasn't a newly assessed Knight Squire: his spiritual energy level, close to thirty, was enough to knock the scorpion-tailed lizard back on the ground.

But, the scorpion-tailed lizard's attack didn't stop at that: as its body fell on the ground, the poisonous-hook on its tail swept towards him.

Relying almost completely on his reaction speed, Long Hao Chen leapt vertically, his foot rising off 1 meter (3 Chi) and the sword on his right hand blocked the attack coming from below him with a swing.

After this simple exchange of blows which resulted in Long Hao Chen stopping two attacks of the scorpion-tailed lizard, he discovered that this magical beast was surprisingly not so scary. At this time, the oppressed feelings of resentment coming from the depths of his heart for those seven atrocious days were mostly dispelled. Compared to seven days earlier, his current strength and reaction speed were higher. Without a doubt, he owed this to Teacher Xing Yu, he had never made such fast improvements before he met him. Although the experiences in the owl-ants' crypt were a nightmare to him, he had no choice but to admit that they had a truly great effect.

The scorpion-tailed lizard didn't give up so easily though. After its failed attack, it rushed at Long Hao Chen once more and this time, it looked as if its body had somewhat expanded.

Because Long Hao Chen was a bit distracted by this sudden attack right after the first round, his reaction became slightly slower, but he still managed to use the bamboo sword to chop towards its body to block it. However, the scorpion-tail lizard didn't fall down on the ground this time.

Not good, this is his body-strengthening skill. Long Hao Chen was startled, his bamboo sword had been repelled and at the same time his body lost some of its balance and was falling backwards.

The scorpion-tailed lizard's big mouth was right before his eyes. Long Hao Chen felt the danger he was in and his pupils quickly shrank. It seemed as if something exploded inside of his head.

At this moment, he suddenly felt as if the scorpion-tailed lizards' motions became slower: as he was falling on the back, he could see very clearly each of its movements.

If someone could see Long Hao Chen's current pupils, he would discover that these blue eyed pupils' central parts contracted to the size of a needle and that he was, surprisingly, in an extremely calm state; the callosity that appeared in ordinary people's eyes didn't appear in his.

Chapter 11: A Teacher who comes from Hell?

(III)

As he was inserting the sword held by his right hand directly into the ground, exerting his back's strength, the sword in his left hand swept with full force. During this instant, Long Hao Chen felt that his spiritual energy broke into a new boundary. The sword ruthlessly hit the lower part of the scorpion-tailed lizard's jaw, and although it was on its strengthened state, this attack made it fly backwards and caused its ferocious mouth to close.

At the same time, Long Hao Chen's whole body jumped on a curved path with the support of the bamboo sword in his right hand that was pushed into the ground, his left leg kicking the scorpion-tailed lizard's lower jaw upwards.

With two strikes in a row, both linked up extremely well, the scorpion-tailed lizard's body was unable to keep its balance and rose from the ground because of the kick.

Meanwhile, Long Hao Chen, who still had the support of the bamboo sword pushed into the ground, let go of the sword in his right hand which enabled him to jump back to the ground. The bamboo sword in his left hand took the form of a thin white lightning befalling upwards.

With a Bang sound, the upper part of his body rose towards the lizard-tailed scorpion and its belly was penetrated by the bamboo sword, simultaneously causing its body to fall down.

After a sad and shrill miserable yell, the scorpion-tailed lizard's tail swept away as a last intent of struggle before its death.

But Long Hao Chen had already expected this possibility and, using his sword smoothly, he directly countered this last attack and jumped aside before pulling out the sword stuck in the ground with his right hand, entering into a defensive posture.

Ping, the scorpion-tailed lizard fell on the ground, its body violently squirmed and repeatedly crying miserably because of the pain of its belly.

Long Hao Chen looked calmly around him and didn't discover any other magical beast. Then, he found a large tree to lean on; his breathing had become quite heavy.

In a split instant, his whole body was full of sweat. His physical power seemed to be completely depleted.

Since the moment he vanquished the scorpion-tailed lizard, only a few seconds had actually passed; during this instant, at the edge of death, it could be said that his latent potential had been completely stirred up. Especially before he broke through this new level, all of his abilities were used to their utmost limit. His final attack used the only skill that Xing Yu had taught him, pure-white edge. By concentrating momentarily all his spiritual energy at a single point of his sword, it enabled him to attack with 110% of his full-power.

Before Long Hao Chen linked these moves, a certain person hidden in the dark was watching without making a single noise. Even if Long Hao Chen had lost consciousness at the end of the exchange of blows, he could easily get rid of the kind of monster. But in the end, he didn't make a single mistake. With the two swords he carried, he got rid of the scorpion-tailed lizard. Meanwhile, his spiritual force also broke through the thirtieth level, entering into the third stage of knighthood. It was the reason why Long Hao Chen had felt at this moment a sudden rise in strength.

In any vocation, as the rank grew, the feeling of a breakthrough would become more obvious.

After he pant a few more times, Long Hao Chen noticed that the sky had already begun turning pitch-black and felt that his energy had returned as the scorpion-tailed lizard was still lying on the

ground, motionless.

Looking at this dead scorpion-tailed lizard, the nine years-old Long Hao Chen's eyes revealed a glow, "Teacher, you were right. It is after enduring hardships that one can become a great man. I should not bear resentment towards you. If not for your teachings, I'm afraid I would have become unable to meet Mother again. Teacher, I won't ever complain again, even secretly in my heart."

As he said these words, Long Hao Chen turned towards the summit of the mountain, bending respectfully and passed with great care near the lizard-tailed scorpion's body.

Generally speaking, the most elementary magical beast has a lot more value than any wild beast. Even this kind of low level magical beast was worth at least one gold coin. Long Hao Chen was not willing to waste this.

He looked carefully for a stone and used it to deprive the scorpion-tailed lizard from its hooked tail and used two vines to tie it, with the intent to bring it home.

He didn't meet any more danger on the road. He went back straight to Odin Town, running towards a shop, explaining that he wanted to sell the corpse of the magical beast that his teacher slain. After he got a gold coin and two silver coins, he finally went home.

It looked as though Bai Yue knew beforehand that her son would come home this day; when Long Hao Chen passed the entrance, he saw the richest dinner he had ever seen at home.

His teacher abided by his promise and brought tasty food to his mother, looking at that, the little Bai Chen couldn't help feel even more grateful towards Xing Yu.

"Mother, I give this to you." Long Hao Chen handed to Bai Yue all the money he had as a gift.

Bai Yue was flabbergasted, "Where did you get this money from?"

Because he didn't want his mother to worry, Long Hao Chen told her a lie out of goodwill: "It is teacher that gave me this money to bring it to you. He said that upon becoming a Knight Squire, I could also receive a salary. This is my first year's remuneration, but if my improvements are fast, I will perhaps have some more rewards like this."

Unexpectedly, Bai Yue didn't persist to ask, she smiled, took the money and said: "Hao Chen, you must listen to your teacher's words, understood?"

"Yeah." Long Hao Chen repeatedly nodded.

Bai Yue pursued: "Is practice hard?"

Before he killed the scorpion-tailed lizard, Long Hao Chen would surely have replied differently to this question, after all, the fear of the owl-ants' crypt was strong in his heart. But at this moment, he shook his head and replied without the slightest hesitation, "Mother, it is not hard at all. Teacher teaches me well, gives me good food to eat every day, and let me soak in hot spring."

Hearing these words, Bai Yue's face looked relieved, she stroke her son's head, "Hurry up to go to eat."

After having eaten dinner, Long Hao Chen didn't forget to use the Elementary Training Liquid that he used to boil a wild herb soup for her before going back to his room to sleep, very pleased with himself.

On the morning of the next second day, he returned back to Odin mountain's road. He didn't meet any magical beast on the road and quickly head back to the summit of the mountain.

"Teacher, I'm back." Long Hao Chen excitedly entered to the log cabin.

Xing Yu looked like had been waiting at the same place for long and lightly said: "Before we continue to carry on today's course, I will give you an examination to see if you forgot what you studied

up to now. Tell me about Knight Squires, Standard Knights, as well as the requirements to grow in rank as a knight.”

Long Hao Chen answered without the slightest hesitation: “Knight Squires are graded between the first and the tenth rank. After breaking through the hundredth spiritual energy level, they can be promoted to Standard Knights. Standard Knights are graded the same way: they gain one rank every ten spiritual energy levels and upon breaking through the 200th level, one can take the Genuine Knight examination. The knight examination does not only require spiritual energy, it also requires one to have the ten standards of a knight. After becoming a Genuine Knight, one can be promoted from the first rank after ten spiritual energy levels as well; only upon reaching the 210th spiritual energy level will someone be a second rank Genuine Knight, and after that, each of the eight other ranks are promoted every thirty spiritual energy levels. At the last rank, one can reach the fourth step of the vocation after accumulating fifty more spiritual energy levels and reaching the 500th spiritual level.”

Xing Yu carried his examination: “Why are the spiritual energy requirements to promote to each rank different after becoming a Genuine Knight?”

Long Hao Chen answered: “Because it is only after entering the first step of knighthood that one can be said to be a full-fledged knight, so each rank are merely adapted. You also taught me that regardless of the step: the third step, the fourth step, the fifth step or afterwards, the ranks between the first and the second are always the easiest to pass.”

Xing Yu pursued with a bunch of other questions, that lasted for half an hour, before finishing this examination. Long Hao Chen answered to all of these questions — — correctly, without making the little slightest mistake, because of his astonishing memory.

“Good, you remembered quite clearly, we can now begin today’s course. But beforehand, I have to ask you, do you think that for a

knight, the most important is to attack? Or is it to defend?”

Chapter 12: A Teacher who comes from Hell? (IV)

Listening to Xing Yu's question, Long Hao Chen couldn't help become somewhat shocked and after thinking deeply for a short while, he shook his head with an ignorant face.

Xing Yu's face revealed a rare smile, "You are quite honest; you don't try to give a casual answer just to satisfy me. Not to mention you, even the Knight Temple cannot easily answer to this question. Precisely because of this question, regarding genuine knights, there are two branches of knights differentiated by the Knight Temple: the Retribution Knights, and the Guardian Knights.

Retribution Knights focus on attack. They wield dual weapons and fight with the combination of their mounts and their offensive holy arts. Their fighting capabilities are very high and their strength in the battlefield surpasses the strength of soldiers and assassins of the same rank.

Guardian Knights give priority to defense. They wield a weapon in a hand, a shield in the other one, and are the core of teams. They are proficient with assisting and recovery holy arts. Their fighting capabilities are perhaps weaker than Retribution Knights', but in collaborations, the Guardian Knights' utility is way higher than Retribution Knights."

At this point, Xing Yu stopped for a little. Still looking at Long Hao Chen, he asked: "Do you believe that there are more Retribution Knights or that there are more Guardian Knights?"

Long Hao Chen thought, then said: "There should be more Retribution Knights. You just said that the Retribution Knights' offensive power are better."

Xing Yu shook his head: "It is the opposite, we Knight Temple have a Guardian Knights ratio of 10: 1, compared to Retribution

Knights.”

“Oh? Such a difference? But why?” Long Hao Chen asked puzzled.

Xing Yu answered: “Because we belong to the Temple Alliance. As the head of the six great Temples of the Temple Alliance, we Knight Temple mustn’t consider only our own individual combat capabilities: we have to consider our partners’ as well. The reason why it is called Temple Alliance is that it is only once people belonging to these six vocation fight together can they have the greatest fighting efficiency. But as the team’s core, the knight does not only have to consider his own attack and defense, but the protection of his allies as well. Thus, there are way more Guardian Knights than Retribution Knights.”

Long Hao Chen understood some of his words, “Teacher, then should I, in the future, become a Guardian Knight or a Retribution Knight?”

Xing Yu lightly answered: “You are the only one who can make the suitable choice. In this aspect, I cannot help you. Seeing your disposition, it would probably be more suitable for you to choose to become a Guardian Knight, but I am, personally, a Retribution Knight. What I can pass on to you in vast majority are abilities and skills used by Retribution Knights.”

“Teacher, I... ..”

“Don’t be impatient to answer.” Xing Yu instantly interrupted Long Hao Chen, “You have a year to think deeply over this. A year later, you will tell me your answer.”

“Yes.”

One year later, in Hao Yue city.

Walking on a wide street in Hao Yue city, Long Hao Chen’s eyes looked curious and surprised.

What a big city! The street was at least 16.6 meters (5 Zhang)

wide, and shops stood on both sides of the street. There was an incessant stream of horses and it was extremely noisy, this city's burst of people couldn't possibly be compared with Odin's: it was as vastly different as between heaven and earth.

In the southern part of the Temple Alliance, Hao Yue was a middle sized city. But it was the first time Long Hao Chen, who lived from childhood in Odin, got to see a city of this scale.

Long Hao Chen was full of curiosity towards Hao Yue city and people on the road seemed as curious as him. He was dressed in simple clothing, but his face was similar to a porcelain doll's. Today, after one year, Long Hao Chen's face did not look unhealthy anymore and he had also grew up a lot. Although he still looked like a kid, his appearance looked slender.

The most surprising thing was that such a beautiful youth carried on his back two intersecting long swords. They were clearly two swords with refined-iron handles with a length of a meter (3 Chi), a width of a decimeter (0.1 meter, 3 Cun), and a thickness of more than 3 centimeters (1 Cun). Although they didn't look like edged swords, they didn't look light at all! They looked like a miniature version of the knight's epee. Could such a small kid possibly use this kind of epee?

These people didn't know at all that if not for the sake of keeping a low profile, Long Hao Chen would not have any problem to carry two Genuine Knight's epee and would easily use them.

A year of bitter practice caused incredible changes in him, as if he had been reborn. On the 83rd day in the owl-ants' lair, he could finally rely on the bamboo swords to block completely the owl-ants' attacks that came from all directions. However, he still had to practice in the owl-ants' lair, only changing the weapons he brought. From the lightest bamboo sword, to a wooden sword, then an iron sword, a refined-iron sword, and finally an epee; he had to adapt to pairs of swords of all kind of weights. After he adapted to the knight's epee, he had to come back from the epee to

the refined-iron sword for one more month, then to the iron sword, the wooden sword, the bamboo sword, accomplishing a full lap.

After he accomplished all of that, a full-year had already passed. This time, he went to Hao Yue city because Xing Yu gave him two assignments as an evaluation of the year's bitter training.

Upon entering the city, Long Hao Chen asked people where the Knight Temple of Hao Yue city could be found. After passing through a few wide streets, arriving close to the center of Hao Yue city, he identified his destination because of the symbol consisting of a shield and sword.

The Knight Hall of Hao Yue couldn't be compared to Odin Hall at all. From outside, it looked like at least five layers of tall and big buildings were erected there, occupying a very wide area. At the entrance stood two armored young knights.

"Little friend, who are you looking for?" When Long Hao Chen arrived at the entrance of the Knight Temple, a young knight smiling at the entrance asked him. Having no choice but to answer, Long Hao Chen, who had an appearance of pretty boy advanced.

"Hello brothers, I am looking for the hall master, Nalan Shu." Long Hao Chen politely spoke to the two knights.

"Looking for the hall master?" The two youth looked at him, and asked: "Why do you need to meet him?"

Long Hao Chen told: "My teacher told me to look for the hall master Nalan Shu, and then to deliver him a letter."

"Then hand the letter to me." said the young knight on the left.

Long Hao Chen shook his head: "Teacher said that I had to hand it to Na Lan Shu hall master personally."

The young knight awkwardly retorted: "I am afraid that I can't let you do that: this is Hao Yue city's Knight Temple Hall, only people from the Temple like us can enter."

Long Hao Chen, showing some anxiety, said: “But I am also from the Knight Temple! I come from Odin Hall.”

The young knight said: “That still won’t do, little brother, it is like this. As a kid from one of those halls, you can only enter for the examination every three years. Give this letter to me; I will help you to pass it. Then if the hall master is willing to meet you, you will be able to enter.”

Long Hao Chen wrinkled, Xing Yu warned him several times that this letter had to be personally delivered to Na Lan Shu.

At this moment, a pleasant voice echoed, “What are you doing? Embarrassing a little child?” This voice came from someone in the Hall.

This person was a lightly dressed teenage girl, her neatly combed pink-colored hair formed a ponytail and her beautiful blue large eyes looked attentively at Long Hao Chen. She looked 18-19 year-old. Her body gracefully moved, her shoulders exposing from each side, a handle of a sword.

“Senior knight.” In fact, both youths had just become knights recently, so they respectfully saluted her.

The young girl arrived in front of Long Hao Chen, curiously looking at his face, then said to the two young knights: “I heard all your words, but you should know that the custom are to die for people to live. Plus, this little brother is also from one of the sub-temples of our Knight Temple. I will take him to meet uncle Nalan. Or do you believe that this child came to cause trouble?”

Chapter 13: Standard Knight Examination

(I)

“Yes.” The two young knights didn’t dare refute her at all, only respectfully answering.

The teenage girl extended her right hand towards Long Hao Chen: “Little brother, I am Li Xin. Let’s go, I’m taking you to see uncle Nalan.”

Long Hao Chen rejoiced greatly and took her hand: “Thank you elder sister, I am Long Hao Chen.”

Li Xin’s tender palm’s grip was strong, her skin was clearly somewhat rough, obviously because of her sword training. However, Long Hao Chen’s hand gave her another kind of feeling: for someone of his age, Long Hao Chen’s hand was quite smooth and to Li Xin, it felt soft and comfortable to hold it.

Upon entering into Hao Yue Hall, Long Hao Chen felt immediately a quaint atmosphere. The ground was covered by grey slates and a total of twelve thick pillars were supporting the entire Hall. In front of them, there were six huge stone chairs, each one was 3.3 meters high (1 Zhang) and on each of them were drawn numerous decorative patterns that Long Hao Chen had never seen before.

“Elder sister, what is this?” Long Hao Chen pointed at the six stone chairs as he asked, full of curiosity.

Li Xin’s look became solemn, “This is the symbol of our Knight Temple’s supreme glory, the divine thrones. Only a Divine Knight can possess one of them. Little brother, do you know about Divine Knights? It is the highest rank that we, knights, can attain: the ninth step of the vocation. All of our seniors Divine Knights are legendary. It is said that they faced, by themselves, the seventy-two legendary demon gods in battle.”

It was the first time Long Hao Chen had heard about the title of Divine Knight. Xing Yu never told him anything regarding Divine Knights.

“Big sister, how formidable are Divine Knights? Why are they called Divine Knights?”

Li Xin replied: “It is precisely because they possess a divine throne: only after one is approved by the throne can he become a Divine Knight! You can’t consider them as mere chairs, each of them is a genuine artifact left by gods. My goal is precisely to one day become a Divine Knight.”

Long Hao Chen who seemed unconvinced said: “But there are only six of these divine thrones, what if it becomes not enough?”

Li Xin chuckled, “Silly boy, how can it be so easy? What do you think Divine Knights are? How can I explain to you that we, Knight Temple, have at present only three Divine Knights. To turn into a Divine Knight is truly incredibly difficult.”

As she was speaking, Li Xin had already brought Long Hao Chen to the second floor. The view of Hao Yue Hall was very high but, in reality, it was because every floor was very tall, so there were only three auxiliary floors.

Both of them went to a spacious room on the second floor and Li Xin said: “This is uncle Nalan’s room, but it is still early, he hasn’t arrived in the hall yet. He should arrive quickly though.”

After she said that, Li Xin lowered her voice and her face approached Long Hao Chen’s ear: “Long Hao Chen, should I call you little brother? Or little sister?”

“Eh?” Long Hao Chen was a little frightened by this sudden act and gave her a perplexed look.

Li Xin grinned: “Stop pretending, I originally ran out from home with a male attire to come to the Knight Temple, or else they wouldn’t have easily accepted a girl like me. You are the same as

elder sister right? How can a boy possibly look as beautiful as you? Plus, after a few years, once your body will develop, especially here like elder sister, you will not be able to conceal yourself anymore.”

As she spoke, she also pulled Long Hao Chen’s hand onto her chest.

Although she wore a soft armor, a soft feeling still entered in Hao Chen’s hand. He originally wanted to refute her words, but couldn’t say anything at this moment. His face became incredibly flushed.

As far as he remembered, he hadn’t even been so intimate with his mother! Even if he didn’t understand the meaning of a man groping a woman, he subconsciously let out his bashful feelings and his shy face seemed as if it was bleeding at this moment.

“Yah, such timidity! Little sister, you are really lovely. Rest assured, I will properly look after you in the future, in this Hao Yue hall.” As she said that, Li Xin laughed holding Long Hao Chen’s little face between her fingers.

Long Hao Chen reacted, “Elder sister, I am really a boy, not a little sister... ..” At this moment, his hand was still pushed on Li Xin’s chest, his brain was completely heat up and his voice became really low.

“Whem?” Li Xin understood all of a sudden, “You are really a boy?”

Long Hao Chen desperately nodded. Moving away his hand, he looked like a little child who made a mistake, and took a few steps back.

Li Xin looked a little vexed: “But how can your hand be so soft? And how can you look so beautiful? Did I really misunderstand? Argh, I got groped. Little brother, tell me, how will you compensate me.”

She wanted to leave the Hall back then, but just at this moment,

she saw Long Hao Chen at the entrance. After a single look, she was reminded of the scene of herself arriving for the first time at the Temple Hall and she had a good first impression of Long Hao Chen who tried to enter. But, at this moment, she realized her own mistake of taking the initiative to hold this little boy's hand. Wasn't this an excessively indecent act? In her heart Li Xin was depressed. Luckily this little boy in front of her looked only about ten years old.

"I, I really don't know." Long Hao Chen frankly said but, in his heart, he thought, it was you who pulled my hand to make me grope you, I didn't really want to grope you!

Li Xin's face was white and red and after having spent a long time thinking, she said helplessly: "Okay, I'll let you go, little guy. But you have to keep this a secret with me! You can't let other people know. In the future, I will be your elder sister; an elder sister who had let her little brother touch her below, it is no big deal."

To be able to run away from home to choose to become a knight, this girl's disposition wasn't weak. She quickly found a lame excuse to deal with this twisted situation.

"Xin Er, what are you doing here?" at this moment, a growling voice resounded.

Long Hao Chen and Li Xin turned around in the same time to find a huge giant who was entering.

No mistake, it was really a huge giant. His body was at least two meters high, but more exactly, he was 2.64 meters (eight Chi) tall, a 2.64 meters tall strong man. Even in a solid building such as Hao Yue Hall, the ground could be felt shaking.

"Uncle Nalan, you should really lose some weight, otherwise you will hardly leave the first floor. If you don't, I'm afraid of the day when Hao Yue Hall will collapse from inside." Li Xin snappily says.

This "strong man" was Hao Yue Hall's host, Nalan Shu.

Nalan Shu, who just heard her words, didn't get angered. He laughed out and simply said: "By only drinking I still gain weight, what can I do? Yi, are you the one who brought this little girl? She's your family relative?"

"I am a boy." To be misunderstood as a girl by Li Xin was still okay even if she made him grope her, but upon hearing this fatty uncle speak like this, Long Hao Chen who was depressed and discontent towards him immediately protested.

"Um?" Nalan Shu seemed distracted, Li Xin refrained from laughing upon seeing Long Hao Chen's behaviour and told him his goal.

"What kind of letter is it? Show it to me." Nalan Shu directed his hand towards Long Hao Chen.

Long Hao Chen took a deep breath and calmed down his depressed heart, then he put the letter in Nalan Shu's hand.

Opening the letter, Nalan Shu looked pleased, but after a little look, his complexion completely changed. His tall body stood straight; and when he finished to read the letter, he wore an extremely serious look.

Chapter 14: Standard Knight Examination (II)

Li Xin stood at the side, full of curiosity: Nalan Shu was Hao Yue Hall's master but also a genuine Earth Knight, the fifth step of the vocation. In the Temple Alliance, only a few people matched him. If a simple letter could make him so reverent, there ought to be an issue.

But as she thought about that, Nalan Shu, who had already read the letter, nodded towards Long Hao Chen, and said: "Come with me." As he said that, he headed outside.

Long Hao Chen followed Nalan Shu to the third floor, accompanied by Li Xin full of curiosity.

Hao Yue Hall's first floor was the main reception. The second floor was the one where all kinds of affairs were handled, and the third floor was known as the place where examinations took place. All the knights who belonged to Hao Yue Hall lived in a dwelling place in the area behind the hall.

The third floor was a dome at the top of the hall of the first building. As he entered, Long Hao Chen felt at the same time, a kind of dissuasive atmosphere. The third floor was an extremely broad hall, five meters high, without any decorations. On the wall all around, there were some symbols and lines, forming a faint brilliance.

Nalan Shu, who continuously advanced, arrived at this examination hall before he stopped. A soft blue light was sent out from his right hand and from the ground surface, a stone pillar immediately rose. It was pitch-black, the nature of its material hard to identify.

Nalan Shu faced Long Hao Chen and said: "Do you know for what purpose your teacher told you to come here?"

Long Hao Chen shook his head: “Teacher said you would tell it to me.”

Nalan Shu nodded: “Senior Xing Yu wanted you to undergo the Standard Knight examination. Let’s start now, hit this black stone with full force, from whichever side you want.”

Hearing the words “Standard Knight examination”, Li Xin who was at the side thought she had misheard.

How old was Long Hao Chen? Eleven, or twelve years-old at most? She herself was called Hao Yue Hall’s greatest genius and it was at thirteen years old that she passed the Standard Knight examination. Nalan Shu didn’t seem like he was joking, and hearing his tone, she realized could this Long Hao Chen’s teacher be even above Nalan hall master? Could he be a sixth step Radiant Knight? Heavens! Radiant Knights could be called the elite of the Temple Alliance. And how could he let his disciple go to Hao Yue Hall to undergo the examination?

As Li Xin had her heart filled with uncertainty, Long Hao Chen, on the other side, had already gotten prepared.

Long Hao Chen took out his refined-iron sword, flashing of a black color, from its handle. At the moment he gripped this sword, his temperament suddenly seemed to have undergone incredible changes.

From this originally shy-looking child, a stern atmosphere rose. His gaze became firm and inflexible, his whole body gave a feeling close to a steady rock and sent out a powerful feeling. Where had his characteristics of a child of ten years old gone?

A step forward, and a cut. An attack consisting of the two most basic movements for a knight.

A Ping sound echoed, the refined iron sword ruthlessly hit the black block of stone.

With a Buzz sound, a gentle blue mist directly shone from the

surrounding walls of the Hall and on the black block of stone, a precise number appeared.

“107.”

Spiritual energy of the 107th level, Nalan and Li Xin both, at this instant, couldn't help opening their eyes wide. A spiritual energy level of 100 meant the second step of the vocation. So even though the 107th spiritual energy level only corresponded the first rank of the second step, it was still the second step! However, it shouldn't be forgotten that Long Hao Chen had not used any skill to improve his body's capabilities. It was just a pure cut.”

It wasn't just them, Long Hao Chen was also shocked. My Spiritual energy has already reached the 107th level? Since he was in Odin hall, as his spiritual energy was only at the 25th level, it was the first time he tested it, but he didn't imagine that there would be such a result. A Standard Knight, I am unexpectedly already a Standard Knight.

An excited feeling ran through his whole body. In this instant, Long Hao Chen felt that all his efforts over the past year just got rewarded.

Xing Yu enabled a little child to grow within a single year from the 25th spiritual level to more than the 100th level, breaking through to the second step of the vocation. Even though it couldn't be said as an unique case in Sheng Mo Da Lu, it could still be described as a miracle.

Long Hao Chen made undeniable great efforts by himself, but it was also because of Xing Yu who allowed him to soak in the hot springs, and the Assassin from the Temple who brought incredible benefits to his body channels. Without soaking in the hot springs, how could Long Hao Chen possibly have continued such a practice? A single coma would have been enough to force him to rest for a long while.

In a single year, his body's foundations had already become solid.

Nalan Shu's look gradually recovered. The gaze with which he looked at Long Hao Chen underwent incredible changes, as if he was seeing a rare treasure, his plump face revealed a somewhat flattering expression. "Your name was Long Hao Chen, right? How old are you this year?"

Long Hao Chen answered without even thinking: "Ten years old."

Nalan Shu and Li Xin took a deep breath once more. A Standard Knight of ten years-old? The word genius couldn't even be used to describe this, it should be called a talent even greater than a genius.

"Nalan hall master, I passed through the examination at last, right?" Long Hao Chen asked.

Nalan Shu replied: "It looks so: according to the procedure, you only need a 100th spiritual energy level to pass through the second step, but your teacher said in the letter that you ought to challenge, in battle a knight (TL: genuine knight, 200th+ S.E lvl) and stand this knight's attacks for fifteen minutes or else you won't be considered as to have passed the examination."

In regard to this demand, Nalan Shu found that it was too harsh. Even if a fifth rank Genuine Knight may still not be capable of withstanding a Genuine Knight's attacks for a quarter of an hour, let alone a youth like Long Hao Chen who just entered into the Standard Knight step.

"Okay, then please assign a knight to this task." Long Hao Chen said that as he unsheathed his left hand's second refined-iron sword.

"I am coming, I am coming." Li Xin didn't show the least hesitation as she advanced, her small, pretty, and charming eyes couldn't hide her flowing curiosity. A ten years old Standard Knight, what kind of concept was that? She absolutely had to test this little knight's fighting capability.

Nalan Shu gave a look to Li Xin and nodded his head: “Pay attention.”

Li Xin smiled: “Rest at ease Uncle Nalan, I am not willing to injure him, he has just become my little brother after all.”

As she said that, Li Xin also took out the two swords from her back. Compared to Long Hao Chen’s, her pair of swords looked more magnificent. On each sword’s body, a golden brightness was sent out. Each sword’s length was 1.06 meters (3 Chi 2 Cun), and a kind of strong sacred atmosphere was sent out by the engraved symbol.

Li Xin, still holding her pair of swords, looked at Long Hao Chen. She was secretly surprised because as he gripped the weapon, his temperament clearly changed compared to his past appearance of a shy youth. His current appearance looked rather fierce, and unexpectedly, the pressure he sent out faintly affected her.

Nalan Shu moved away a few steps, saying with a low voice: “Start.” By acting as referee by the side, he had confidence that he wouldn’t let them injure each other.

“Elder sister, take care.”

Chapter 15: Standard Knight Examination (III)

“Elder sister, be careful.” as Long Hao Chen warned her, his foot had already moved. The distance crossed by each of his steps weren’t much, but the pace was high. This was the knights’ short distance charge, that he correctly executed. Both swords, the first in front of Long Hao Chen and the second behind his back almost arrived in front of Li Xin in a flash.

A fast and strong thrust went straight towards Li Xin’s left shoulder, it was filled with the power of the sheer momentum concentrated in the charge.

Li Xin showed a smile. Her left hand’s sword was quickly raised, blocking Long Hao Chen’s attack, and she attacked with her right hand’s sword in no hurry. She wanted to see if this little guy could be harmed by an attack of this level.

Bang– –, without a sign, Long Hao Chen’s right feet suddenly stomped on the ground, causing his foot to cancel its previous motion, forcefully ending this all-out charge, his body floating along with it. Meanwhile, the sent out refined iron sword was quickly retrieved along with the motion, just in time to cross this provocation of Li Xin.

Nalan Shu’s eyes shone; skill interruption?

He also took back into his hand the refined-iron sword at this moment. The edge of his sword momentarily shone and right afterwards, with at least twice his prior speed, a light shone on the edge, aiming for Li Xing’s left shoulder as before.

[Pure White Edge], [Thorny Charge]. Two knight abilities practically perfectly mixed together were used, and it happened to create an opening in this moment of provocation from Li Xin.

The knight skill called [Thorny Charge] is able to raise the speed

of the attack and, at the same time to gather the spiritual energy. Coordinated with a second ability that condenses the spiritual energy, [Pure White Edge], this hit's power had already greatly outstripped Long Hao Chen's 107th spiritual energy level.

However, Li Xin was not a Standard Knight, she was a Genuine Knight and at the instant the sword moved, she was already in guard against it, her right hand's sword arriving before her body in this critical situation. No matter how much Long Hao Chen enhanced his attack, it couldn't be enough to pierce her defense.

Ding—

The two swords met each other, Long Hao Chen's thrust hit the part located at the top third of the blade. The power of the straight thrust wasn't really lacking compared to the cross cut. However, because of the superiority of Li Xin's spiritual energy compared to Long Hao's, she blocked the attack, but couldn't help draw two step backs.

Pa—, the sword in Long Hao Chen's right hand was repelled, but his movements did not stop so easily, his right arm's refined-iron sword rose at the same time as he took a step forward, unexpectedly assaulting again.

A second charge, and at such a close-distance, but it was repelled even though this attack was the second in a row.

Long Hao Chen's tough right hand swept from the side. The second charge only consisted of three steps, but during those three steps, his body seemed very stable. Then, his foot rotated, realizing with his body a swift whirl. The left hand's sword rose, shining of a thin white light, [Pure White Edge]'s severe chop was directed straight towards Li Xin.

Li Xin's eyes were full of surprise, but she showed her inborn talents of a genius knight at this moment. Her right foot was directed towards the back, her body taking a stable posture. Then, her body bent over, the sword at her right-hand side prepared and

the sword at her left side, emitting a sort of lightning, stabbed ahead, becoming ten sword shadows heading towards Long Hao Chen's body. [Lightning Thrust], a third step knight skill.

A defense and counterattacking move.

But the next scene completely dumbfounded Nalan Shu who was standing to the side.

A sound rang and Long Hao Chen's full force attacking sword immediately collided against Li Xin's sword. Although there was a difference of almost 100 levels between Long Hao Chen's and Li Xin's spiritual energy, this attack of his was supported by skills and managed to draw force from the momentum. As both swords intersected, the result was surprising: no one had the advantage; it was even Li Xin's body that was slightly repelled.

But suddenly, Li Xin's [Lightning Cut] arrived before Long Hao Chen. At this moment, Nalan Shu thought about interrupting the fight and Li Xin was already preparing to stop her hand.

But Long Hao Chen's right hand that was just repelled by the attack suddenly moved.

A sort of illusion emitted by the sword blasted the area in front of his body and with a loud noise, [Lightning Cut] was completely blocked.

Because she was afraid of harming Long Hao Chen, Li Xin didn't go all out and her attack was not only warded off, but also countered at this moment.

Both sword wielded, one horizontally and one vertically, it was a the sign of a knight's skill, [Instant Blast Cross Cut].

There was already nothing left of Li Xin's previously amused look. After she had released her [Lightning Cut], she had no power left. In addition to the fact that because she didn't expect at all that Long Hao Chen would be able to block her previous attack, therefore, she didn't prepare any response to this counterattack.

A thin golden light shone from Li Xin's body. Her right hand was inserted in the ground and a golden ray suddenly burst out, rising two meter high.

With two Dang sound, Long Hao Chen's [Instant Blast Cross Cut] was stopped by a layer of golden light screen and bounced back. At this moment, he also drew back of a few steps, taking a defensive posture. The consumption of the previous succession of attacks wasn't small.

Li Xin shot a gloomy look toward Long Hao Chen who just drew back, "OK! Little guy, you compelled Elder Sister to send out the [Heavenly Battle Array] to deal with your attack. Be careful, now Elder Sister is going to attack."

[Heavenly Battle Array], a skill of Retribution Knights of the third step that draws support from the particular holy light of the knight and takes the shape of a layer of light with an effect similar to an all-out defense formed of spiritual energy.

Her foot pushing on the ground, Li Xin jumped, her right hand's sword chopping straight towards Long Hao Chen. She is truly somewhat depressed at this moment because she was forced to act shamelessly, using the [Heavenly Battle Array] against Long Hao Chen to keep off his attack, her face looking hectic. The important matter was to reclaim back the face she just lost.

This time, Long Hao Chen didn't strike back. He lift his right hand and, in a split second, he seemed like a venerable sculpture. Even though it was only for a little moment, it made Nalan Shu, to the side, widen his eyes.

With a neat Dang sound, Li Xin was shocked and moved back stupefied.

In fact, her spiritual energy was at least twice Long Hao Chen's and plus, she jumped in the air. So even if she showed mercy, her attack force would still be considerable. To Li Xin, Long Hao Chen should be the one to draw back, but in fact, she was the one forced

back. Her hand that held the sword was completely paralyzed.

“I can’t attack, how is that possible!?” Li Xin fell down with a gloomy look, it could be seen on her face that she didn’t understand Long Hao Chen’s current defensive posture.

Seeing that Li Xin stopped, Long Hao Chen packed up his own pair of swords. Feeling embarrassed to see Li Xin’s gloomy look, he didn’t know what he ought to do at this moment.

“Uncle Nalan, please tell me, what is all of that about? Long Hao Chen is only a first step Standard Knight, so how is it possible? How could he be able to repel me?”

As she said that, Li Xin saw the expression on Nalan Shu’s shocked face. This time, he was the one who looked like a sculpture, standing there while showing a stupefied appearance.

“Uncle Nalan, what is up with you?” Li Xin asked with an expression full of doubts.

“[Divine Obstruction]? Little Hao Chen, quickly tell me, was what you just used the [Divine Obstruction]?” Nalan Shu made a few steps before arriving in front of Long Hao Chen, his eyes full of impatience and showing a shaken expression.

Li Xin’s heroic face was immediately struck dumb with amazement, “Uncle Nalan, aren’t you mistaken? That was a Radiant Knight’s [Divine Obstruction]? It is impossible, absolutely impossible. Weren’t only Radiant knights able to use the [Divine Obstruction]?”

Radiant Knight, the sixth step of the vocation. [Divine Obstruction] was a skill that was their brand mark and also the skill known to cause the most changes to the knight’s body.

Chapter 16: Standard Knight Examination (IV)

Long Hao Chen replied showing a somewhat confused look: “I don’t know what [Divine Obstruction] is, Teacher only told me that this was an obstruction skill.”

Nalan Shu took a deep breath, calmed himself, and muttered: “No mistake, it is without a doubt [Divine Obstruction]. Xin Er (kid Xin), I did not see [Divine Obstruction] only once. Whether they are Retribution Knights or Guardian Knights, once at the level of a Radiant Knight, they will all practice this skill. If it wasn’t for the [Divine Obstruction], Hao Chen couldn’t possibly have kept off that earlier attack of yours. No wonder, no wonder senior Xing Yu would let him challenge a knight to battle. With the [Divine Obstruction], withstanding a knight’s attacks for a quarter of an hour is not impossible.”

“The threshold to the [Divine Obstruction] is, without a doubt, the grade of Radiant Knight, but this is merely our Knight Temple’s threshold, it is not the threshold for the study of the ability. Provided one has the inborn talent, enough ability, and the necessary reaction speed, a sixth step knight can pass any ability onto him, but this premise needs the authorization of our Temple Knight to be done. There was formerly a great knight who because of his great merits, got the authorization to break this rule and be able to pass them on.”

Nalan Shu is an Earth Knight so he knows much more than Li Xin in regard to the skill [Divine Obstruction], but because of that, he became even more shaken.

The [Divine Obstruction] is a skill that can be easily described. It enables one to momentarily transform his defense entirely. Simply said, it causes one’s defense to become like an iron rock so that only attacks that exceed the defensive power of the skill can break

through it. However, if the attacks use weapons of the same volume and hardness as an iron rock, when attacking, it cannot possibly break this defense.

[Divine Obstruction] is like the process of the transformation of an ore of iron into a bar of iron. It is easily explained, but extremely hard to do because it takes a lot of talent.

Though, if [Divine Obstruction] is trained to a certain level, it can use at least a part of the power of the opponent's attack to become its own force and use it for attack as well as defense. Practiced to its utmost potential, [Divine Obstruction]'s defensive power is worthy of being called "divine".

To possibly break [Divine Obstruction]'s defense, one must have at least three times the spiritual force of the user of [Divine Obstruction].

"Nalan Master, can we consider that I have passed the examination?" Long Hao Chen didn't know what startled these two people before him, and simply asked.

"Naturally, you passed. Wait a little, I have to look for the thing senior Xing Yu wanted you to bring back." Nalan Shu turned around and left, but he didn't show signs of having calmed down yet.

Li Xin looked at Long Hao Chen as if he was some kind of monster, "Little brother, tell me, what was this skill that you used to repel my [Lightning Stab]?"

Long Hao Chen shook his head and answered: "No no! I only used pure physical force."

"You broke my [Lightning Stab] with only your physical power?" Li Xin couldn't help raising her voice. She naturally didn't know that Long Hao Chen's attack had been enhanced a lot. Over the last year, the torment in the owl-ant's crypt didn't go to waste. In addition to that, he soaked in the hot spring and had his spiritual

energy's twelve standards enhanced, its impurities dispelled. That year of practice equaled at least three years of practice for an ordinary person.

After a short time, Nalan Shu came back, handing two things over to Long Hao Chen, a circular badge with a sword and a shield engraved on it and a golden yellow gem the size of an egg.

“This is your insignia of a Standard Knight. On it, there is a star that symbolizes the fact you are first ranked. Once there are all the stars, will you be able to once more take an examination. This awakening stone is something Senior Xing Yu told you to bring back. You must keep it well.”

“Thank you.” after receiving these two items, Long Hao Chen respectfully saluted Nalan Shu.

Nalan Shu asked: “Should I have Xin Er accompany you out of Hao Yue Hall?”

Long Hao Chen shook his head, answering: “No. Teacher gave me another task to accomplish. I should hurry up.”

Nalan Shu didn't insist and asked Li Xin to send him directly to the entrance.

“Xin Er elder sister, how can I go to the adventurers' guild?” Long Hao Chen asked Li Xin right before leaving.

Li Xin replied: “The adventurers' guild isn't far from here. Look, go to the front and then turn at the right. After about a kilometer, there will be an intersection where you should finally turn left.”

“Thank you, Xin Er elder sister, I am glad to have met you. I have to go first. Nalan Shu hall master, goodbye.”

After bidding farewell to both of them, Long Hao Chen took the route shown by Li Xin.

Looking at his leaving figure, Li Xin can't help asking Nalan Shu: “Uncle Nalan, from where does this little guy come from?! It is

impossible to find another such outstanding talent of his age in our Knight Temple. And how could he learn the [Divine Obstruction]? What kind of person is his teacher?”

Nalan Shu let out a sigh, shaking his head, and replied: “I cannot tell you that yet. All you need to know is that towards the fact that he already learnt the [Divine Obstruction] is in accordance with the rules of our Temple. In the near future, I expect that it is unthinkable that our Hao Yue Hall stays unknown. Xin Er, did you see, you are not the only genius in this world! You have to practice seriously or otherwise, you will fail the Alliance’s hunting beast selection in four years.”

Li Xin quietly nodded, “I wonder when I’ll see this beautiful little brother again.”

Nalan Shu revealed a smile: “There is something I can tell you; in two years, he will come back. He will at least stay for the duration of the magical hunt of the Alliance.”

Long Hao Chen moved according to the direction given by Li Xin and quickly found the place of his second task, the adventurers’ guild.

Compared to this place, the Knight Temple of Hao Chen was rather calm: the surroundings of the adventurers’ guild were in a total mess. Numerous people came in and out of this place and people dressed in every kind of outfit could be seen.

His eyes shone, he had already found the place he was looking for. Not far from the left side, on a counter, was where assignments were taken.

By chance, there was someone at the counter. Long Hao Chen advanced towards it and looked at a woman in her twenties: “Elder sister, I want to receive a task.”

“Ah?” The young woman at the counter saw someone who was only a head taller than the counter. She couldn’t help but be

distracted by Long Hao Chen's pretty face.

“Haa, our adventurers' guild really accepts anyone! Even this little thing ran looking for an assignment, it is really hilarious.” A severe voice resounded near them.

Long Hao Chen turned his head around, only to see a strong statured, full beard man laughing as he looked at him with a face full of disdain Long Hao Chen wrinkled, not understanding what is up with him, and asked once more to the young woman: “Elder sister, I want to receive a task.”

The youth behind the counter looked full of curiosity, “Little brother, what kind of task would you like to receive?”

Without letting Long Hao Chen have the time to speak, the loud voice already rang for a second time, “What little brother, she is clearly a little sister. Little sister, how about this uncle buys some excellent lollipops for you, haha — —” This straightforward man's speech caused a stream of laughter in his surroundings.

“I want to receive a second step assignment. The best would be one that consists of killing magical beasts.” Long Hao Chen wrinkled even more, but the girl's answer wasn't very satisfying.

She answered, with a little awkward tone: “Little brother, I'm afraid that it is impossible. Second step assignments require you to be at the second step in a vocation to be received.”

“Then, quickly go back home to suck the breast of your mother. Or is it that you don't know if she still has milk to give you. If she still has some, what about letting me drink two sips of it? Looking at your pretty appearance, I guess your mother should be not bad. If you could also have an elder sister, it would be even greater.”

It was the same voice. Hearing it again, Long Hao Chen's expression suddenly became cold.

Chapter 17: The Sacred Mountain of Knights

(I)

The girl behind the counter hurried to tell him in a low voice: “Little brother, make haste to go please. This isn’t the kind of place where you should come. Ignore them, these adventurers are blood thirsty people, they often display that they are up to no good. But they shouldn’t do anything bad to you, we are in the guild after all.”

After she said this, the girl suddenly discovered that the youth in front of her had a clear firm gaze.

“You shouldn’t insult my mother.” As he said this, Long took something out from his bosom to hand to the girl and left her.

The ten years-old Long Hao Chen’s height wasn’t even at this brawny man Luo Sai Hu’s stomach’s height, but his steps were very steady.

“Huu, huu, huu, quickly take a look everyone, this little fledgling is still angry. Tch tch, look at these pretty cheeks! This delicate tearful face. Even if she’s a little chick now, after being sent to the brothel, she’ll just become a first class girl there.”

In Luo Sai Hu’s hands were a pair of edged battle axes that he struck the floor with, giving a playful look to Long Hao Chen, his body leaning on one of the axes.

Long Hao Chen moved and arrived 3.3 meter (1 Zhang) in front of Luo Sai Hu. His face was tranquil, and his back was perfectly straight. He clenched his left hand into a fist, placing it on the right side of his chest, performing a knight’s salute.

The next instant, he took out a white glove and threw it at the other party, meanwhile taking out the pair of swords from his back, the tips of the swords pointed downwards. Saying in a little voice: “If you dare insult my mother, I, Long Hao Chen, challenge

you according to the Knight Alliance's rules by throwing my glove down. This is a fight to death."

Long Hao Chen's voice was clear. The nearby people could all hear it clearly, and at this moment, the guild members who had exploded in laughter a while before had calmed down. Luo Sai Hu also became stupefied.

However, Luo Sai Hu quickly came back to his senses: "Haha, I'm dying from laughter. Look quickly, everyone! This little bastard can say a lot and also learned the challenge of a knight, and is also a Standard Knight. Did your breast's hair already grow ? I accept your challenge! Come! Come to snap at me! Hahahaha."

Long Hao Chen lifted his right hand's sword, coldly facing the exit, "Please." It is the first time he came to the adventurer's guild, but he knows they cannot fight inside, even if it was an official knight's challenge to battle.

As he had said this word, he already left first.

The axe-wielding warrior Luo Sai Hu also came outside without hesitation, and a group of excited people followed. The girl behind the counter was left alone; she was staring blankly at the badge in her hand. "First ranked Standard Knight, could it be that he really is a Standard Knight?"

Leaving the adventurers' guild, the exposure to the warm sunlight doesn't solve the dejection in Long Hao Chen's in his heart. At this moment, Xing Yu's teachings resound in his heart. You don't need to say anything to your foe. Use the sword in you hand and your foe's blood to wash your shame.

Luo Sai Hu also left, carrying on his shoulders the pair of edged battle axes, raising his finger towards Long Hao Chen, "Come! Little bastard, this grandpa is gonna teach you a lesson. After this grandpa has beaten you, he will not kill you, but rather sell you to a brothel, earning some Gold Coins... .."

With the sound of the roars of laughter ringing out, Long Hao Chen moved.

Charging, his hurried steps resounded and in a slight moment, Long Hao Chen elevated his speed to its utmost point and people from either side could tell with a glance that the refined-iron swords in both his hands showed a white glow.

[Pure White Edge] was actually regularly used by low-level knights belonging to the Knight Alliance.

Instantly, the intense sound of laughter stopped and Long Hao Chen already arrived in front of his opponent.

Upon seeing Long Hao Chen's charge, Luo Sai Hu was a little frightened. He also knew about [Pure White Edge]. His complexion temporarily changed. How could he have known that this little child was really someone from the Knight Temple? To offend the head of the Six Great Temples, the Knight Temple, how could an ordinary adventurer dare to do that ? No matter what, he had to get rid of this little kid first and afterwards, in the worst case, he would just immediately run.

Thinking about that, Luo Sai Hu's felt a great hatred. His hand swung the pair of edged axes, using his [Heavy Chop] against Long Hao Chen who was coming. Regarding his vocation, he was a second step, third rank warrior. His spiritual energy was at the 120th level. His full-powered strikes used the damage potential of his wooden weapons to the maximum.

However, Long Hao Chen had encountered magical beasts almost every time he came back home, so he wasn't a novice in fighting. The result was that at this moment, he kept his calm as usual.

He stomped his right foot on the ground before using the skill that had the effect of breaking off his charge, as he did when he was facing Li Xin. However, he linked it up with another skill this time.

Holding both swords, in the instant before the pair of axes was going to fall down, he completed a [Divine Obstruction].

It required incredible accuracy to be done! Without his mental capacity, which was so different from ordinary people's, Long Hao Chen couldn't possibly accomplish the linking of these skills.

A huge sparkling sound rang and the pair of edged axes crossed with the pair of enhanced swords during their ruthless chop.

A lot of people couldn't help but shut their eyes. The contrast between Long Hao Chen's body and Luo Sai Hu's was, after all, too big. From a lot of people's point of view, he should have chosen to parry the attack because he had no other choice. How much Spiritual Energy could such a young boy have? In addition, Luo Sai Hu's [Heavy Chop] was similar to [Pure White Edge] in the fact that it also increased the power of the attack, but was a skill for heavy weapon users.

However, the reinforced-iron sword in Long Hao Chen's hand didn't snap. To Luo Sai Hu's surprise, with a snapping sound, the pair of edged war axes fell and his chest was wide open.

Long Hao Chen's [Divine Obstruction] couldn't be broken by a third step knight, Li Xin, so how could this second step warrior possibly break it?

It seemed that a faint light had appeared on Long Hao Chen's body as the overlapping swords in his hands took advantage of this moment to launch an [Instant Blast Cross Cut].

With two Puff sounds, the pair of iron swords cut through the top of Luo Sai Hu's leather armor and the sound of bones shattering behind the leather armor could be heard.

Luo Sai Hu's eyes widened as blood flowed thick and fast out of his body

Long Hao Chen's [Divine Obstruction] wasn't at a profound level. The proof was how he couldn't make use of Li Xin's spiritual

energy against her, but this Luo Sai Hu's force was only slightly superior to his, just at the right level at which Long Hao Chen's [Divine Obstruction] could borrow 20 levels of spiritual energy. In addition to the boost of [Pure White Edge], Long Hao Chen's attack exceeded, by 100 levels, his actual spiritual energy. This attack's power greatly outstripped Luo Sai Hu's strength. How could the ordinary leather armor that covered his body withstand such an attack?

“Third brother!” Two voices cried in alarm. Two big fellows came out from the the middle of the crowd, they were clearly partners of Luo Sai Hu. Being an adventurer was a dangerous job so, people generally formed a team.

However, it was already too late when they came out.

Puff — –, after the [Instant Blast Cross Cut] wounded the opponent, Long Hao Chen didn't show the least hesitation and linked it with a stab and the iron sword sharply penetrated into Luo Sai Hu's throat like a lightning bolt.

“Asshole!” The two robust men ran straight towards Long Hao Chen.

“Stop.” A cold voice rang and golden rays of light followed, rising from Long Hao Chen's back, stopping the two adventurers from coming.

Li Xin coldly stood there with her two swords hanging on the side of her body; thin golden spiritual energy threads emanated from both sides of her body, clearly showing her strength as a third step knight.

“Ah, it is the Hell Rose... ..” The crowd suddenly cried in alarm.

Chapter 18: The Sacred Mountain of Knights (II)

“If you want to court death, I don’t mind helping you join the one who just passed away.” Li Xin’s cold voice was full of murderous intent.

The two robust men were also warriors; the first one held a greatsword and the second one a sword and shield. Looking at Li Xin, they showed uncertain faces. They knew that they couldn’t intervene: Long Hao Chen had just killed Luo Sai Hu in a duel, so even the defense of the city did not have the right to interfere.

The warrior that held a greatsword shouted in anger: “My third brother merely joked a little, but this little kid killed him. Is this your knight’s kindness?”

The first of these warriors was a third step, second rank war master and the second was a second step, eighth rank warrior. Although, together, they didn’t fear Li Xin, they couldn’t disregard the Knight Alliance backing Li Xin.

Li Xin said, full of disdain, “Are you blind? My brother is a Retribution Knight, not a Guardian Knight. The Retribution Knights’ norm is to get rid of their enemy, and knowing my little brother’s temperament, if not for your companion speaking horribly to him, how could he have possibly lowered himself to kill him? If you are not convinced, then come at the same time.”

As she was speaking, the pair of long swords in both of Li Xin’s hands ran through a series of strange paths, thin golden energy gushing out from her body.

“Lulu.” With an extended sound, this strange light took the form of a tall and robust horse with a pair of wings coming out from its back.

This winged horse was of an extremely rare pink color, its body

was 2.66 meters (8 chi) long and 2 meters (6 Chi) tall. The wings coming out from its back were not really wide, it looked as if it didn't enable it to fly. At some place atop of its head, something stuck out. Its eyes were rose colored and a strong smell came out from its body. Both rose colored eyes gave a dignified feeling.

Li Xin mounted on the horse's back and looked at the two knights with eyes full of contempt and disdain.

Li Xin's nickname, the Hell Rose, came from this horse, a young fully rose colored unicorn. Even if it was not fully grown yet, it was still a real fifth step magical beast. Against it, a third or even a fourth step warrior wasn't a worthy opponent. To begin with, even humans of the same step weren't a match for magical beasts.

"She's a knight from the Knight Alliance?" exclaimed the man holding a shield. Both exchanged looks and didn't say anything else, fleeing while carrying their companion's corpse.

A lot of nearby adventurers commented in a low voice, "These guys are, for sure, outsiders for not knowing the greatest genius of Hao Yue Hall, the Hell Rose. Serves them right. But she's still... .."

"Elder sister." Long Hao Chen was standing by Li Xin's side all this time, but after having killed someone, his face still didn't show the slightest change.

Li Xin descended from the Rose Unicorn, smilingly saying: "Little idiot, why did you come to the adventurer's guild in the first place?" She had previously asked someone from the guild about Long Hao Chen because she wasn't at ease letting him go alone to such a snake nest-like place, so she followed after him and came at just the right time to see the previous scene.

Long Hao Chen answered: "Teacher wanted me to accept a second step mission."

Li Xin answered, somewhat speechless: "This teacher of yours must really trust you. Let's go, I'm coming along with you."

Entering once more into the adventurer's guild, the look the adventurers gave Long Hao Chen changed. Not to mention about the powerful sister by his side, the display he showed by killing, in a few seconds, that axe-wielding warrior showed that his strength was, without a doubt, a Standard Knight's.

They didn't know about [Divine Obstruction], but looking at Long Hao Chen's age, they guessed the Knight Alliance ought to protect such a treasure. They didn't dare act rashly anymore.

"Knight, Senior Knight, I have to give you back your badge." The girl who was behind the counter advanced hurriedly as soon as she saw them come back, respectfully giving back to Long Hao Chen his badge. After she took a look at this badge, she immediately ran out and saw the whole fight from afar. The current gaze she gave Long Hao Chen was full of curiosity.

Now that he had taken care of the matter, Long Hao Chen chose a mission that was north of the city of Hao Yue that consisted of killing ten second step magical beasts.

"Little brother, let me come with you or else I won't be at ease. Although there aren't high step ranked magical beasts around Hao Yue, there are still third step ones and sometimes even fourth step ones can appear. Plus, you will be able to go faster if I come along."

"I can't, elder sister. Teacher wanted me to accomplish this mission alone."

"What is the problem? You will be accomplishing it alone! You will be killing magical beasts while I will only be in charge of making sure that you are not caught off-guard by others. Now that it's decided, let's go."

As she spoke, Li Xin pulled Long Hao Chen out of the adventurer's guild and immediately left the city on the Rose Unicorn.

Long Hao Chen was very excited as this was the first time he was

riding a mount.

The rose mount's back was very smooth and Li Xin was right behind him. He could smell a thin scent of rose, but didn't know whether it came out from elder sister or the Rose Unicorn.

They both left quickly. Long Hao Chen was surprised that as they were leaving the city, not only did Li Xin not stop at all, but in addition, she was saluted by the guards at the entrance.

Leaving the city of Hao Yue, the Rose Unicorn accelerated even further, shaking Long Hao Chen who discovered a red radiance coming out from the Rose Unicorn's body that clearly was raising the temperature nearby and increasing its speed. However, he didn't feel any pressure from the wind because of the protection of the red barrier. The Rose Unicorn's wings often stretched, becoming more steady; the travel speed was as fast as a flying engine's.

"So fast! Elder Sister, your mount is awesome. How can I possess such a mount?!" Long Hao Chen was, after all, still a kid; how could he not be excited by this kind of new sensation?

Li Xin smiled: "If you answer one question, I will tell you."

Long Hao Chen said: "Please ask, elder sister."

Li Xin: "Was it the first time you killed someone? If it was, how aren't you disturbed at all after that? I have never forgotten the pain of the first time I killed someone; I threw up for three days and three nights!"

Long Hao Chen scratched his head, saying: "I haven't killed anyone else before, but I have killed magical beasts. Teacher said that killing foes was just like killing magical beasts, I cannot show the slightest mercy and as long as they aren't dead, I cannot relax. Since he is like a magical beast, why should I feel uncomfortable? I have killed many magical beasts. And after I delivered the last blow, I didn't take a single look at his appearance." Actually, he

didn't know himself that because of the bitter training in the owl-ants' crypt, his fear of this kind of situation was now nonexistent.

Li Xian couldn't help but react: "I really don't know if he has an extremely pure heart or is cold blooded. But it is as his teacher said, evil must be completely eradicated."

Long Hao Chen was truly eager to have a mount as good as this Rose Unicorn and anxiously asked: "How did you acquire this Rose Unicorn?!"

Li Xin answered: "Don't be in a hurry. In fact, even if I didn't tell you, you would still know in the future. Because, like me, you will need to go to the Knights' Sacred Mountain to choose a suitable magical beast."

"What kind of place is this Knights' Sacred Mountain?"

"In our Temple Alliance, the vast majority of knights have to select a mount or to tame a magical beast to serve them as a mount. But there is an exception; it is regarding exceptionally gifted young knights. Those who pass the Genuine Knight examination before hitting twenty years and thus become third step, first rank knights have the qualifications to enter the Knights' Sacred Mountain. You are a ten years-old Standard Knight, so you should have no problem becoming a Genuine Knight before hitting twenty years-old."

Chapter 19: Knights' Sacred Mountain (III)

“The Knights' Sacred Mountain is a place where our Knight Temple raises various kinds of magical beasts. In the Knights' Sacred Mountain, there is a peculiarity discovered by our ancestor from the Alliance three thousand years ago. That place is very good for the growth of magical beasts and will reduce their wild nature. Taming them becomes really easy. A young knight just needs to be approved by one of them and then he can take it away, making it his mount. It is also one of the best privileges our Knight Temple has, just like the enchanted equipment that a young genius mage from the Mage Temple can receive. But you should know that among those in our Knight Alliance's top ranks, all of them visited the Knight's Sacred Mountain.”

Long Hao Chen's dark blue eyes immediately lit up, “What if all of the magical beasts from the Knights' Sacred Mountain are tamed?”

Li Xin couldn't help laugh: “How can it be so easy?! In our entire Knight Temple, if there are a few tens of Knights below 20 years old in the same year, it is already not bad, and sometimes, there are not even ten knights. Also, at the Knights' Sacred Mountain, there is a great summoning array that seems to be able to connect to a particular place from which a magical beast will be summoned from after a time interval. Thus, you don't have to worry about the Knights' Sacred Mountain having a shortage of magical beasts. That said, on the mountain, there are even ninth step magical beasts. If one can get a ninth rank magical beast, it can be considered equivalent to having reached at least the seventh step of the vocation.”

Long Hao Chen asked: “Elder Sister, at which step is your Rose Unicorn?”

Li Xin proudly answered: “My Rose is, at the moment, a fifth step magical beast, but it isn't mature yet. After it has grown up, it can

attain the seventh step at the least, with power equivalent to someone with a sixth step vocation . Your elder sister will also become at least a sixth step Radiant Knight, so you should double your efforts too haha.”

“Yeah, then I’ll double my efforts with my first goal set to becoming qualified to visit the Sacred Mountain.”

The mission was easy to complete. With the protection of a Genuine Knight who had already visited the Mountain: it wasn’t a difficult task at all for a second step knight who could use [Divine Obstruction] to kill ten magical beasts. After only half a day, the task was accomplished. He got 25 gold coins and his first entry of completed mission on his adventurer certificate.

Sometimes, a new meeting was truly a wonderful thing. That was how Li Xin felt: she really liked her new little brother; not only did she help him with his mission, she also accompanied him to the Town of Odin located more than 100 kilometers (200 Li) apart from Hao Yue City and they were both very reluctant to part.

It would soon be night and, looking at the red-colored sunset at the horizon, Long Hao Chen couldn’t help but show a triumphant smile: “Teacher gave me two days to complete a mission, but I only needed one. Let’s go back home to see Mother, and then I’ll go back to the summit of the mountain tomorrow morning to surprise Teacher.”

Thinking about it, he jubilantly headed home, but at the same time, his head is filled with envy, reminiscing about the beautiful reddish silhouette of the Rose Unicorn. How fantastic would it be if he could, in the future, have a magical beast as his mount! Long Hao Chen clearly knew that it would have been impossible for him to pass the examination if Li Xin had ridden her Unicorn.

Filled with this sentiment of admiration, he quickly saw his cottage. To give a good surprise to his mother, he gently and stealthily opened the entrance door. But after a single step inside,

he became dumbstruck.

His pair of blue eyes instantly became dull and his whole body couldn't help trembling.

Because of his mental strength that is different from ordinary people's, Long Hao Chen had, generally, a calmer attitude than people of the same age. But at this moment, he couldn't control himself at all. In front of him was the most unimaginable scene he could ever dream of.

Bai Yue was in the courtyard, but was seated on a man's lap. This man was the one who had a place second only to his mother's in his heart; the one who enabled him to become, within a single year, a Standard Knight. Teacher Xing Yu.

"You, you... .." Long Hao Chen stood there, completely speechless; his mind was completely blank at this moment.

"Chen Chen." Bai Yue tried to stand up from Xing Yu's lap, but he suddenly held her in his arms and a thin light appeared, making her seemingly unable to move and even to speak.

Xing Yu stood up, moving Bai Yue on the side, and gave a cold look to Long Hao Chen.

"Why? Why are you bullying my mother?" Long Hao Chen stood there, shouting hysterically. Right after, he took out his pair of refined-iron swords. His eyes had become very red.

Xing Yu's wrist slightly moved and used a mysterious trick. In his right hand appeared a bamboo sword. With his left hand placed behind his body and his sword's tip turned towards the ground, he faintly said: "Come."

There was nothing left of the excited mood Long Hao Chen had been in; instead, despair, agony, hate, and all sorts of negative feelings were rising in him.

"Aah!!!" Long Hao Chen let out a cry, charging towards Xing Yu. This time, he didn't use any skills, just swinging his both swords,

going all out against Xing Yu.

He didn't know Xing Yu's actual strength nor his speed at all; in fact, it was impossible for him to match his teacher. However, Teacher bullied Mother and because he discovered that there was this kind of matter between the two people who had the biggest places in his heart, there wasn't an ounce of reason left in him.

Bang — —

With a little swipe from the bamboo sword in Xing Yu's hand, it was as if Long Hao Chen was crushed by a mountain; he was sent flying backwards, falling in the courtyard.

“What did I teach to you? Regardless of what kind of foe you are facing, even if it is me, you have to remain calm.” said Xing Yu faintly.

At this moment, Long Hao Chen still listened to his lesson: his body crawled and rolled on the ground; his heart was filled with hate and he felt betrayed; all the blood in his whole body seemed to be burning. He charged once more without the least bit of hesitation.

[Pure White Edge], [Thorny Charge]. Using an enhanced charge, he launched his most powerful attack.

However, it was completely useless.

Xing Yu used spiritual energy at the same level as Long Hao Chen's. He had a mere bamboo sword in his hand, and it was a very thin one, but it hit at the weakest spots on Long Hao Chen's sword that was swung at full power.

The bamboo sword collided and the shock reached both of Long Hao Chen's hands. His iron swords fell on the ground, letting out two Puff sounds. Long Hao Chen also fell back, his bottom sitting on the ground.

“Argh — —” It didn't stop at that. Long Hao Chen, still in pain, even without weapons, charged like a mad tiger once more

towards Xing Yu.

Xing Yu's brow wrinkled, the bamboo sword thrust forward straight towards Long Hao Chen's stomach. However, Long Hao Chen didn't even try to avoid it and directly jumped towards the sharp point of the sword.

Xing Yu had a fright; although it was only a bamboo sword, it was still sharp. Without anything protecting Long Hao Chen's body, even if he wasn't killed, he would still be greatly wounded. Thus, he subconsciously stopped the bamboo sword and let Long Hao Chen dash against his body.

Without hesitation, Long Hao Chen bit Xing Yu's arm.

At Xing Yu's level, it would have been easy to get rid of him, but he didn't move. Letting Long Hao Chen's teeth ruthlessly sink into his arm, his only reaction was the one of wincing slightly.

Chapter 20: Knights' Sacred Mountain (IV)

Affected by Xing Yu's scent that gave him an intimate feeling, Long Hao Chen started crying, he couldn't control his tears that suddenly started to drip. Then, he let his mouth loose. Looking at the place on Xing Yu's armpit where he bit, it was bleeding and had a bite mark. He shouted with a hoarse voice: "WHY? WHY DON'T YOU KILL ME?"

"Because I am your father."

With that simple sentence, Long Hao Chen's face that was full of anger suddenly calmed down, he stood there motionless, his eyes looking straight at Xing Yu.

"What, what did you say you were?" Long Hao Chen showed an ashen face that was gradually being filled with disbelief.

Long Xing Yu sighed and took a step forward, pulling him into his bosom and tightly hugging him, "I am, I am your father, the father you had never met before. Xing Yu is my name, you have your surname from me, we both are from the same 'Long' family." After he said these words, his hand released a white light, untying the restriction on Bai Yue's body.

Bai Yue quickly rushed at them, pulling Long Hao Chen from Long Xing Yu's bosom, glaring at him, "Are you mad? You just frightened me to death."

Long Xing Yu laughed: "I just wanted to test Hao Chen's ability to keep his calm during fights in all circumstances, but from what I saw, you are his biggest weak spot."

"Mother, he, is he really?..." Only at this moment did Long Hao Chen react, all his negative emotions turned into shock, and he gave his mother a flabbergasted look.

Bai Yue gently nodded, "I am sorry, Chen Chen. Mother didn't tell you until now, but a year ago, your father found us. He hoped

that you could become a knight as formidable as him and thus we hid from you the fact that he came back.”

Long Xing Yu acquiesced and nodded, “It seems that no matter how much one plans things out, life always intervenes. I was afraid that after you knew that I am your father, you wouldn’t put in anymore effort, and that I wouldn’t be able to discipline you.”

Long Hao Chen gave his mother a lifeless look. The words his father just said were the most unexpected things he had heard in his life. For as long as he could remember, he only had his mother by his side.

Bai Yue gently caressed her son’s head, unable to stop her tears, “Sorry, Chen Chen. In the past, your mother didn’t say anything to you regarding this matter. Ten years ago, a very painful thing happened to your mother and she didn’t know at all how to face your father, so she had to leave her native place and come here. At that moment, I discovered that I was already pregnant with you. Don’t blame your father, everything is my fault. He had to painstakingly look for us for nine years. If you have to hate someone, hate me.”

The expression Long Xing Yu’s eyes showed to this mother and son was complex as he gently said: “Yue, this is already over. All the pain has already left us. Don’t think about these painful memories anymore, okay?”

Bai Yue nodded, she was sobbing: “Last year I promised you that for your sake, for Hao Chen’s sake, I’d free myself from those unbearable memories. I will devote my future life only to the both of you. During these years, Hao Chen must have suffered a lot because of me. Honestly, I don’t really want him to become a knight like you, I just want him to live safely.”

Long Xing Yu frowned, showing once more a complex expression in his eyes, unconsciously clenching his fists, seemingly in an intense internal struggle.

Long Hao Chen gradually came back to his senses and took a look at his mother, then at his father, his eyes revealing a fiery look.

“No, Mother, I want to become a knight. To become a formidable knight.”

Long Xing Yu was stunned. He was previously really wavering, wondering whether what he was doing was right. He was well aware that for both Bai Yue and Long Hao Chen’s sake, a peaceful life would be, by far, the best choice possible.

Xing Yu showed a wry smile: “Will you recognize an irresponsible father like me?”

“No, you are not responsible at all. It’s my fault, everything is my fault.” Bai Yue’s tears, which had just stopped, immediately resumed flowing.

“Father!” Breaking free from his mother’s embrace, Long Hao Chen fiercely threw himself on Long Xing Yu’s bosom. At this moment, he only felt true happiness.

He was a mere child, a ten years old child. Although he never said it to Bai Yue, every time he saw those little kids and their fathers together in Odin Town, how could he not feel envious?

But now, his father was back. They had been separated for so many years, but his father was even more formidable than those other kids’: he was a formidable knight. In Long Hao Chen’s heart, all the past anger turned into joy.

Hearing this shout, Long Xing Yu didn’t display his excitement. He just stood there, expressionless, before using his firm arms to gently hold his wife and his child in his embrace. However, neither Bai Yue nor Long Hao Chen noticed this: the current him looked as restrained as before.

After having rushed for a day, and experiencing both sadness and joy upon arriving home, Long Hao Chen went to bed early. It was the first time in a year that he didn’t spend the night seated, but in

a deep sleep.

Long Xing Yu hugged Bai Yue by their son's side, "Yue."

Bai Yue gently nodded, shutting both her eyes, "You don't need to say more. Chen Chen is like you, he cannot simply live a quiet and peaceful life. You were both born like this, with a need to cause big issues. He has already made his choice, thus I can only support him. I have one sole wish, it is for him to live well. Regardless of what you will teach him, the most important matter will be to protect him, okay?"

"Un, I promise you." Long Xing Yu slowly nodded, gently caressing Bai Yue's long hair.

On the next morning, Long Xing Yu brought both Bai Yue and Long Hao Chen to the mountain peak. Since he had already been exposed, he didn't have anything left to hide.

Bai Yue went to tidy up Long Hao Chen's room while Long Xing Yu called his son in front of him.

"Hao Chen, you still chose to continue to follow my practice despite knowing the relationship between us. For this reason, I will be only stricter than in the past. You have one last opportunity to change your mind."

Long Hao Chen replied without hesitation: "Father, I understand that you are only strict for my sake. This time, I experienced a lot of things when I went to the City of Hao Yue. Father, I have to ask, are you even higher ranked than a Radiant Knight?"

Long Xing Yu took a step back, standing still for a moment and looking unsure, then lowered his head in front of Long Hao Chen.

"Wa, so cool." Long Hao Chen excitedly hop, "Father, I will, in the future, become a knight as great as you."

Long Xing Yu smiled: "How do you know that your father is a great knight?"

Long Hao Chen stubbornly said: “It must be so.”

Long Xing Yu added: “I see. You will learn how great father’s prowess is in the future. But if you want to become a great knight, you cannot slack off. From today onwards, you won’t need to go to the owl-ants crypt anymore. The type of practice that you will have to do is going to change completely.”

“I won’t need to go?” Even though he went for a year nonstop, it was still a very dark place. Long Hao Chen was still somewhat afraid of this place

Long Xing Yu nodded: “In the past year, the main goals of the practice were to enhance your reaction speed, your mental capacity, and improve your body as well. Soaking every day in the hot spring filled with medicine was also done with the same motive. Now that your spiritual energy level is above hundred, we can start to train your inner spiritual energy.”

“Inner spiritual energy?” Long Hao Chen gave his father an uncertain look. During the past year, everything Long Xing Yu taught him was regarding history, skills used by knights, and various knowledge, but he never mentioned the matter of internal spiritual energy.

Chapter 21: Sacred Awakening, Scion of Light (I)

Long Xing Yu said: “Two kinds of spiritual energy exist: the external and the internal. External spiritual energy is used to cause changes to the body and to enhance it. Simply said, it is generated in the body with physical practice and enables the power and the toughness of your body to be enhanced, attaining a new level. But since it is the body’s power, it has its limits. This limit is the 200th spiritual energy level.”

“Like I have already taught you, the division between the second and the third step is the watershed moment in any vocation. The majority are unable to break through the second step throughout all their life, not even speaking about entering the third one. For knights like us, it is impossible to train inner spiritual power, just like for mages it is impossible to change the mastery element.”

Your current external spiritual energy still has room for progress, but if we were to wait until you reach the 200th spiritual energy level by external practice, it would just be a waste of effort. I had you sit in a meditative posture for a year to get your internal energy ready for this moment. You have to know that along with the growth of his inner spiritual energy, the strength of one’s body will also grow. When one’s spiritual energy is higher, completing skills will require him to use his inner spiritual energy together with his external spiritual energy.

“Give me the awakening stone you brought from Hao Yue Hall.” Long Xing Yu extended his hand towards Long Hao Chen.

Long Hao Chen handed the yellow rock to his father.

Long Xing Yu told him: “For the next two years, I will make you cultivate your inner spiritual energy and, at the same time, practice to get your external spiritual energy to the peak level and you will have to study the secrets of spiritual stoves as well. Right

now, I have to make you first accomplish the most solemn ceremony for us, knights, the Sacred Awakening.”

Long Hao Chen listened carefully. On this early morning, he was very clear-headed because he had slept earlier the day before. He pledged that he wouldn't let his father down, and that he would train even more seriously than before, for the sake of this father he troubled so much.

Long Xing Yu continued: “From some points of view, we knights belong to the magical swordsmanship school. Those sword skills I taught you use your spiritual energy. The next step is the cultivation of the inner spiritual energy, and we have a single mastery element and it is the holy attribute”.

“This awakening stone that I told you to bring will transform the light attribute of your body. The higher your innate mental capacity is, regardless of your physical condition, the more effect the awakening stone will have. But you have to know that our holy arts and the magic from the mages are not the same. Mages use the power of magic elemental spells, but we, the knights, directly use the spiritual energy in our bodies to form our holy arts. But in fact, there is an important factor. The deeper one grasps the Ten Rules of A Knight, the stronger his holy magic will be. Understood?”

Long Hao Chen pondered for a moment before replying: “Father, are you saying that knights like us only need to seriously practice our inner spiritual energy to be able to master sword skills and holy magic, these two different styles?”

Hearing these words, Long Xing Yu was surprised. He didn't expect Long Hao Chen to understand so quickly.

“That's right. You can interpret my words like that. The spiritual energy of knights is used for sword skills as well as magic. This is what makes us completely different from warriors who cannot use magic. Okay, let's begin the Awakening now. Come out together with me.”

Part 2:

With these words, Long Xin Yu brought Long Hao Chen out of the log cabin and they headed towards the peak of the mountain.

Long Xing Yu waved his left hand and a thick layer of golden light spread out from his body, forming a golden mantle that was quickly growing, from 16.5 meters (5 Zhang) to 33 meters (10 Zhang), enveloping both father and child.

This rich light seemed as if it tried to fill Long Hao Chen's soul; when bathing in this golden radiance, his whole body felt stronger. The [Heavenly Battle Array] that Li Xin used released a holy light, but compared to the golden mantle that Long Xing Yu formed, it was simply the same as comparing a firefly to the moon.

“This is the [Bright Blessing], a high ranked defensive skilled used by high step knights. Hao Chen, close your eyes and stay focused. Regardless of whatever you feel, you must stay calm, and quietly feel the changes in your body. Specifically, try to comprehend the light, understood?”

“Yes.”

Long Xing Yu looked at the kid in front of him, took a deep breath, and slowly lifted the awakening stone in his right hand. He didn't tell Long Hao Chen at all that, compared to an ordinary knight's [Sacred Awakening], his [Sacred Awakening] was going to be way more painful and hard to bear. Because his spiritual energy didn't reach the 110th rank yet, compared to the peak Standard Knight who went through this awakening, the burden that was going to be put on his body was immeasurable. Naturally, it was by this way that Long Hao Chen's potential would develop the most.

According to the Knight Temple's rules, taking the [Sacred Awakening] in advance like this was strictly forbidden for fear that it could permanently injure the knight's body. The risks of failing the awakening could go as far as endangering his life.

Of course, Long Xing Yu didn't want at all to put Long Hao Chen's life at stake. But no one understood better than him the mysterious process of the [Sacred Awakening], and Long Xing Yu didn't care at all about the Knight Temple's rules. Originally, Long Hao Chen's mental capacity was far higher than ordinary people's and, at the same time, he had a caring and almost flawless heart. In addition, he had already grasped most of the Ten Rules of a Knight, and he had the support of Long Xing Yu, so it was almost guaranteed that he would successfully bear this pain.

A twinkling golden radiance rose from Long Xing Yu's hand; its brightness surpassed the rising sun's. However, this radiance was motionless, it was completely blocked from spreading out by the [Bright Blessing]'s shining mantle. At this very moment, the shining mantle covered the father and his son and their silhouettes disappeared completely.

Long Hao Chen suddenly felt that his own body became hotter; his body's temperature was in fact raising and he felt like a nucleus formed in the middle of his internal organs (Footnote: author's metaphor; since it's very hot, this nucleus is compared by the author to a sun “一颗太阳一般”). At this moment, he clearly discovered that his own body contained countless channels, and each of these channels was an extension of the newly formed internal nucleus.

Shutting his eyes, he saw a bright golden color. It was the golden color from the insides of his body. A violent pain emerged at this moment.

A thin grey colored gas violently emerged from Long Hao Chen's body, disappearing in the golden radiance; it was the internal impurities in his body. This was one of the results of the [Sacred Awakening], a purification effect.

During this purification, Long Hao Chen felt that his own body was pierced by a myriad of sharp arrows. Meanwhile, this scorching hot sensation became even more violent than during the

beginning.

The [Sacred Awakening] does not only enable the knight to transform their spiritual energy into holy light useable with magic. At the same time, it purifies his soul and his body. Therefore, knights who went through the [Sacred Awakening] rarely went against their own beliefs and convictions.

Long Hao Chen's body is violently shaking. If someone could see what happened inside the [Bright Blessing], he would discover that at this very moment, Long Hao Chen's whole body's pores were all bleeding from inside. But precisely by this process, on his chest, a golden ring of light gradually appeared and was becoming more and more imposing.

Chapter 22: Sacred Awakening, Scion of Light (II)

“Persevere! For our beliefs, for protecting everyone we care about!” Long Xing Yu’s voice clearly resounded in Long Hao Chen’s mind, making his pain gradually reduce and his spirit rise.

The awakening stone in Long Xing Yu’s hand was being dissolved, continuously being refined in his hand before finally taking the form of a drop of pure golden liquid floating and heading towards the pit in the middle of Long Hao Chen’s stomach. Compared to the awakening of ordinary knights, with Xing Yu’s refining, this drip of Holy Liquid didn’t have a trace of impurity. It was only golden colored and it merged with Long Hao Chen’s body.

Puff — –, in the instant after the drip of Holy Liquid merged with Long Hao Chen’s body, an intense golden light shone on his forehead.

The golden light reacted with the [Bright Blessing], slowly heading towards the top of Long Hao Chen’s head, then growing up little by little.

Long Xing Yu nervously looked at this golden pillar. It would determine Long Hao Chen’s future potential regarding the use of the holy attribute.

During the [Sacred Awakening], knights would acquire the holy attribute in their inner spiritual energy and during this process, their innate quantity of internal spiritual energy, one of the most important standards for determining the potential of a knight, would be determined. Generally speaking, if one’s innate internal spiritual energy level couldn’t even exceed 10, then that knight would have no way to break through the third step.

From the top of Long Hao Chen’s head, a golden thread was

suddenly growing before falling backwards; it had quickly already reached the length corresponding to the tenth spiritual energy level. His body was suffering and shaking as violently as before, but the growth speed of the golden thread was really astonishing.

10, 20, 30, 40... ..

At the moment the spiritual energy level reached 40, Long Xing Yu couldn't help clenching his fists. When one's innate internal spiritual energy reached 40, he was already a rare genius in the Knight Temple. But this golden column was still growing at the same speed.

Such a formidable innate mental capacity, Long Xing Yu couldn't help but secretly sigh. He suspected beforehand that Long Hao Chen's mental capacity was abnormal, but he had no way to be sure before performing the [Sacred Awakening]. At that moment, he would be able to see how formidable Long Hao Chen's mental capacity really was.

50, it exceeded 50!

55, 58, 60. It surprisingly even exceeded 60.

Long Xing Yu remembered that he was known as the greatest genius of the century in the Knight Temple, and during his [Sacred Awakening], his internal spiritual energy peaked at the 77th level. Although he took care of Long Hao Chen during the past year, building his foundation by making him sit in meditation, the fact his spiritual energy exceeded 60 meant a lot of things, and this golden pillar of light was still continuing to grow.

65, 67, already 67!

Long Xing Yu's pupils violently shrank. For innate internal spiritual energy, every 10 levels corresponded to a step and if Long Hao Chen's internal spiritual energy exceeded 70, his capacity for using holy magic would not be inferior to any light element mage's.

70, it really was 70!

At this instant, Long Xing Yu couldn't help but hold his breath; when Long Hao Chen's innate internal spiritual energy broke through the 70th level, he stopped shaking.

With another Puff sound, numerous golden threads of light burst out of Long Hao Chen's body. The pain was, at this moment, all gone and Long Hao Chen's clothes disappeared because of these golden lights.

His fair white skin shone like a crystal, the thin golden threads wandering about, piling up on his whole body, covering it of a gold color. The golden ring of light was gradually drawn into the middle of Long Hao Chen's chest before finally taking the form of a little soybean.

Part 2:

Long Hao Chen had a very strange feeling when his innate inner spiritual energy reached 70, he felt as if the pain carried by his whole body had disappeared, replaced by a heavenly sensation.

Everything became clear and transparent, including his heart and his soul. This rich divine atmosphere improved his body. The inner spiritual energy was still growing, though, and Long Hao Chen seemed to have somewhat changed, influenced by the laws of light.

Heavens! 80, his innate spiritual energy actually even exceeded 80!

Long Xing Yu's body shivered once more. This frightening innate spiritual force actually didn't make Long Hao Chen formidable for the moment, but it would definitely have a great influence on his potential.

81, 83, 85... ..

The golden light rose as before, even after having surpassed the 70th inner spiritual energy level. In the history of the Knight

Temple, there were 17 records of this accomplishment. Among these 17 people, except for six of them, all of the others became the most formidable Divine Knights of history.

However, his inborn spiritual energy outstripped 80. This happened only three times in history. Among those three knights, two did not manage to rise up: only one succeeded. On the year of his 36th birthday, that one broke through the threshold of the ninth step of the vocation, the 10,000th spiritual energy level, the divine achievement.

Heavens! 90, really 90?! The only one in the Knight Temple's History who reached the 90th spiritual energy level!

Long Xing Yu struck dumb with amazement. A pure heart, a mental capacity different from ordinary people's, a good grasp on the Ten Rules of a Knight, and such a terrifying innate internal spiritual energy level.

The golden pillar seemed to have reached its bottleneck, its growth clearly reduced by a great amount. Now, it was rising slowly.

An innate internal spiritual energy of 70 was known as giving a physique of angel, one of 80 was known as having a physique blessed by Gods, and above the 90th spiritual energy level, even though this case never appeared in the Knight Temple, in the original Knight Temple's records written by the ancestors, the physique associated was known as the physique of a Scion of Light, the purest holy body that could exist. With it, he would innately be able to use any holy weapon and be friendly with any magical beast of the light attribute.

In the end, the golden pillar wasn't able to keep raising and stopped at the position of the 97th level.

Innate spiritual energy level, 97.

The golden light became gradually weaker, revealing the

silhouette of both father and son.

“It feels so good!” Long Hao Chen just came back to his senses, released from this special holy atmosphere.

Opening his eyes, Long Hao Chen discovered to his surprise that the father in front of him showed a shocked expression on his dull face.

“Father, what’s wrong?” Long Hao Chen made haste to ask.

Long Xing Yu’s body shook, and coming back to his senses, he looked at Long Hao Chen in the eyes.

Long Hao Chen’s originally dark blue colored eyes changed into a peculiar gold

color. Light gold colored eyes were not something completely unusual, but it was the first time Long Xing Yu saw this kind of transparent gold colored eyes.

“Scion of Light, it is really a Scion of Light! God bless the humanity, God bless the Knight Temple.” Long Xing Yu couldn’t control his slightly trembling voice. As he spoke, he took back his [Bright Blessing].

“Father, what is the ‘Scion of Light’? Ah, and what about my clothes?” The wind blew from the mountain and Long Hao Chen felt a chill, discovering that he became unexpectedly naked. He immediately cried out in alarm.

Long Xing Yu reacted at this moment, his right hand trembled and from it, a long gown appeared, covering Long Hao Chen’s body

Carefully looking at his son, Long Xing Yu discovered that Long Hao Chen’s skin now had a golden luster that could only be noticed because of the sunlight. But the strange fact was that there wasn’t as much holy atmosphere left on his body as the other knights after their [Sacred Awakening]; all the holy atmosphere was in fact in his body, and no slightest amount spilled out. Only Long Xing Yu’s eyes could notice such a special phenomenon.

Chapter 23: Sacred Awakening, Scion of Light (III)

Due to the fact that in the Knight Temple, there were less than 10 people who truly knew the profound mysteries of the Scion of Light, Long Xing Yu wasn't worried at all about his son's inborn gifts being exposed.

"Hao Chen, your [Sacred Awakening] has just been completed. Did you realize that after taking into account your internal spiritual energy, you are already a Genuine Knight?"

"Oh? So easily?" Long Hao Chen was surprised, but he could feel in his body a kind of warm air current that reacted to his thoughts and movements.

"Easily?" Long Xing Yu's face revealed a forced smile, thinking that this little fellow didn't know hunger or famine. After a knight's awakening, it was already praiseworthy if one gained from it, 20 spiritual energy levels.

"Your innate gifts are not bad, but this is merely what the [Sacred Awakening] brought you. Regarding your practice in the future, you will not only have to make efforts as great as before, but possibly even greater. Understood? Let's head back and talk over this matter."

"Father, I will make great efforts for sure."

Upon seeing Long Xing Yu holding Long Hao Chen's hands as they came back to the log cabin; Bai Yue's face revealed a smile and she silently looked at this scene, standing close. She didn't know much about swordplay, but she understood her husband well. She could also see clearly from Long Xing Yu face that he was somewhat shocked. By the fact that her formidable husband was unexpectedly shocked by her son's innate gifts, it seemed that Chen Chen's choice to walk on the road of chivalry was the correct

one. However, if one day, they, father and son, really had to face that person... ..

Heading back to the log cabin, Long Hao Chen donned the clothes he had brought before continuing to listen to Long Xing Yu's instructions.

Long Xing Yu said with a heavy voice: "Now you ought to tell me what your choice is, do you want to become a Retribution Knight or a Guardian Knight?"

Long Hao Chen answered without delay, in a firm voice: "Father, I want to become a Guardian Knight."

"A Guardian Knight?" Long Xing Yu was stupefied, "So you are unexpectedly willing to give up on the formidable attack power and combat effectiveness of the Retribution Knights?"

Long Hao Chen rigidly answered: "Father, you told me that to be a match against the demon race, we needed the power of the humanity as a whole, that the power of a single person is, in the end, insignificant. I want to turn into a Guardian Knight to protect the people I want to protect even better and, at the same time, to assist the people fighting beside me in the battlefield even more."

Long Xing Yu was clearly somewhat disappointed and he sighed: "But to finally battle the 72 Demon Gods, what we will need will be the greatest force humanity can bring."

Long Hao Chen immediately asked: "Then is it impossible for Guardian Knights to battle the demon gods?"

As he listened to this question, Long Xing Yu's eyes revealed a glow, "That's it! With your innate internal spiritual energy of 97, your [Sacred Awakening] as the Scion of Light, and your incredible mental capacity as a support, why can't you learn some more things? Retribution and guardian are just classifications, maybe you will be able to create a miracle. Perhaps the correct choice for you is to train in both specializations at the same time, in order to

bring out the most of your innate potential as the Scion of Light.”

Long Hao Chen seemed to have understood something and asked with a shocked voice: “Father, are you saying that I should study at the same time, the skills and abilities of a Retribution Knight?”

“That’s right. From now on, I will train you as a retribution knight, and in two years, you will leave for Hao Yue Hall, where you will train as a guardian knight. This may reduce the cultivation speed of your spiritual energy, but as long as you are able to advance as both a Retribution and a Guardian Knight, in the future, you will become a formidable knight without precedence in history.

Time passed day by day, the training as a knight at Odin Mountain’s peak continued, and in a blink of an eye, a year and a half passed.

Dang — — a neat chime resounded and the youth’s body suddenly shone a golden color before condensing just like the brilliance of the rising sun, as a shining blade broke through space.

A bamboo sword was lightly waved, its edge shone of a golden color as the space before this bamboo sword with a little handle was shattered.

“Not bad, your [Shining Solar Cut] is already at its peak mastery level; it only lacks in duration and degree of heating, and spiritual energy level for the moment.”

Long Xing Yu was impressively using a bamboo sword to parry this dazzling cut, and the youth putting this shining blade to good use was Long Hao Chen.

After a year and a half, Long Hao Chen was 12 years old, and compared to his original life in Odin Town, he underwent changes that could torn heaven and earth upside down.

The only 12-year-old Long Hao Chen had already grown close to 1.60 meters. He didn’t look muscular at all, his slender figure’s

proportions looked flawless. His black hair fluttered on the back of his head and his sparkling gold colored eyes were dazzling. His originally beautiful little face had become quite heroic, but his appearance looked as flawless as before. Looking at his physical dispositions, if he were to say that he was 14 or 15 years old, there would definitely be people who would believe that.

At this moment, Long Hao Chen's hands both surged up, each of them holding an epee, the standard weapon for a knight; they were 2 meters long (6 Chi), 16.5 centimeters wide (6 Cun) and an impressive thickness of 12.3 centimeters. The weight of this kind of knights' epee was 25 kilograms (50 Jin) but they looked very light, as if they were nothing in his hands.

During a year and a half, Long Hao Chen had learned a lot from his father. His internal spiritual energy didn't improve much from its innate 97th level, as it had only grown to the 120th level; but his external spiritual energy grew to the level of a peak third step knight's, a total level of 200.

Altogether, it amounted to a total level of 320, the level of a fourth ranked knight. He wasn't far from the 330th spiritual energy level of the fifth rank.

If it wasn't for the fact that Long Xing Yu tried to build solid foundations in him, his growing speed would have perhaps been even more fearful.

Even if Long Xing Yu was strict, when looking at an 11-and-a-half-years-old youth who reached the fourth rank as a knight, he could only reveal a satisfied smile. In the history of the Knight Temple, this was absolutely unprecedented. He had, himself, only reached this level of practice at the age of 15.

However, with his external spiritual energy reaching the peak level, the speed of growth of Long Hao Chen's spiritual energy significantly reduced. He could, after all, only rely on the strengthening of his inner spiritual energy to practice it. Only after

reaching the next step of the knight vocation would he be able to keep practicing his external spiritual energy.

Listening his father's praise, Long Hao Chen couldn't help but reveal a big smile, "Papa, this [Shining Sunlight Cut]'s power is so high, but it consumes 50 units of internal spiritual energy and even consumes some external spiritual energy. My spiritual energy is still too lacking."

Long Xing Yu revealed a smile: "You are still eleven years old. You should know that the [Shining Sunlight Cut] is a skill that any great knights ought to master. You cannot be impatient, you should try to progress step by step. Okay, get ready, let's see how long you will be able to last today."

After having heard his father, Long Hao Chen's expression immediately became serious. His hands took a tight grip on the swords.

Long Xing Yu moved, his body seeming weightless, and in a flash, the bamboo sword in his hand arrived in front of Long Hao Chen.

After the epee in his left hand was pushed back, Long Hao Chen quickly took a step back, dodging the bamboo sword's attack at the same time. Though clearly, Long Xing Yu didn't use any spiritual energy in his bamboo sword.

However, in the next instant, countless bamboo shadows appeared in front of Long Hao Chen's body, just like drops of water.

Long Xing Yu was already gone and there were only endless bamboo shadows that came from all directions, aiming to stab Long Hao Chen, but Long Hao Chen looked already used to these kind of situations. The pair of epees in his hands danced in the air with a fast speed. Puffs that sounded like banana leaves in the rain rang unceasingly.

Chapter 24: Sacred Awakening, Scion of Light (IV)

Long Hao Chen used the edge, the flat part, and even the handle of the heavy swords in his hands; it seemed to be able to deal with all the opponent's bamboo sword attacks. Momentarily, the sword's shadow glimmered, coating his whole body just like a huge ball of light. Sacred light capabilities were continuously used, coordinated with his defense using the pair of heavy swords.

When facing Long Xing Yu's attacks, if Long Hao Chen showed the slightest flaw, the bamboo sword would immediately fall on his body and hurt a lot more than the owl-ants' attacks. However, the strange thing was that Long Hao Chen managed to resist: although Long Xing Yu looked quite serious, at the same time, he wasn't able to break through Long Hao Chen's defense.

After a quarter of an hour of continuous battle, Long Xing Yu's bamboo sword suddenly shone. A white radiance expanded and thousands of swords appeared in front of Long Hao Chen.

Long Hao Chen was still waving his pair of swords. He didn't expect this attack from Long Xing Yu, but this was clearly not the first time this kind of situation had occurred.

The handle of the heavy sword in his left hand was knocked against the one in his right hand, then he slashed before him with the heavy sword in his right hand, while swinging the one in his left hand. With a flash of golden light, a [Thorny Charge] was used towards the bamboo sword.

A soft tinkling sound rang. The swords were swung but the bamboo sword that was in the path of the charge didn't show the slightest change. Using the momentum from his previous block, Long Hao Chen advanced.

With a neat ringing sound, a layer a golden light immediately

undulated from Long Hao Chen's body, it was the [Divine Obstruction]. Against Long Xing Yu's stab, he had to use all the spiritual energy he had left to form a [Divine Obstruction], enabling him to withstand it.

"Great, you did well this time. You were able to act calmly. I see that the actual combat training we did on a daily basis did not go to waste." Taking his bamboo sword back, the smiling Long Xing Yu nodded in front of Long Hao Chen. However, Long Hao Chen was panting, his clothes soaked in sweat. Even though his father didn't use spiritual energy related attacks, Long Hao Chen was still overwhelmed by his power.

Long Xing Yu went in front of Long Hao Chen, patting his shoulder, and said with a smile: "Let's go home to rest for a little while, your mother should soon be done with the midday meal."

"Okay." Long Hao Chen's face was also joyful.

Despite the fact that during this year and a half, he painstakingly trained everyday, it was still the happiest period of his life. His mother's face was always smiling, and his formidable father instructed him. This kind of life was far from a dull one: it was, on the contrary, full of happiness.

When both father and son arrived in front of the log cabin, Long Xing Yu's foot suddenly stopped, his eyes revealing a severe gaze.

Long Hao Chen also felt the change in his father's breath: he gave a terrifying almighty ancient-dragon-like feeling that prevented him from breathing calmly.

Long Xing Yu loosened his grip on Long Hao Chen's hand and slowly turned back, taking light steps and, in the next instant, Long Hao Chen opened his mouth wide: from his father's body, a dense gold colored radiance spurted, raising his body into the sky and enabling him to fly.

Despite having trained for more than two years with his father,

Long Hao Chen didn't know at all, at which level his father's true strength was. At this very moment, seeing that his father could go as far as to be able to rely on his spiritual energy to soar in the sky gave him an extremely big shock.

At the same time, two golden lights could be seen in Long Xing Yu's eyes as he gazed from afar towards Odin Town.

Without waiting for Long Hao Chen to recover from the shock, he went down to the ground, his eyes revealing a cold expression. "The demon race's armed forces launched a sneak attack, we have to go."

Simultaneously, he grabbed Long Hao Chen's arm and soared once more in the sky.

His fully condensed spiritual energy took the form of a pair of golden wings spreading out from Long Xing Yu's back.

Spiritual energy transformation was an ability used by 6th step Radiant Knights, but Long Xing Yu's wings were over 10 meters wide, covered by dozens of gold colored feathers that looked just like real objects. How could an ordinary spiritual energy accomplish such a feat so easily?

As the enormous pair of stretching wings appeared, a gold-colored aura enveloped Long Xing Yu and his son. The pair of wings suddenly fanned and they both immediately headed straight in the direction of Odin Town with the speed of a meteor.

What Long Hao Chen didn't notice was that, upon seeing Long Xing Yu's pair of wings, all the beings from Odin Mountain, to the insides of the forest, regardless if they were magical beast or wild beast, all crept on the ground: they were so alarmed and hopeless before this sight that they did not dare move in the slightest bit.

The scenery turned into a gold-colored world, the dense sacred energy wrapped everything around them and Long Hao Chen could feel his internal spiritual energy boiling. During this short

moment, his inner spiritual energy raised a lot, but this was only because the light-attribute energy temporarily produced around them at this moment was too formidable. This showed how powerful the sacred energy released by Long Xing Yu was.

It felt as if only a few seconds had passed when the golden light suddenly scattered and Long Hao Chen could see the outward situation.

Odin Town, we are actually already back in Odin town. After such a small amount of time?

Long Hao Chen couldn't believe his own eyes, but the fact was that before his eyes, below his feet, wasn't this the Odin Town where he grew up?

The current Odin Town had lost its originally calm and quiet atmosphere. A lot of places were burning, sounds of crying resounded nonstop, miserable shrieks and destruction sounds flooded each corner of Odin Town.

Long Hao Chen saw at least thousands of black armored, tall, and big monsters with robust bodies. They were the ones wreaking havoc in Odin Town.

These monsters were at least 1.8 meters tall. Each had the head of a wolf and the body of a human at the same time. They waved curved swords. Odin Town's inhabitants were currently being slaughtered by them; sad and shrill cries could be heard everywhere, but these ferocious wolves were also unceasingly howling even louder.

More than 3,000 households were supposed to be living in the town of Odin, making 20,000 inhabitants, but at this moment, it had become a sea of blood and corpses, dense blood was scattered everywhere, the scene could make anyone feel like vomiting.

"Father, what are they?" Long Hao Chen's voice was filled with anger, this is the place where he grew up! He had seen just now

with his own eyes one of his former little companions being cut into two parts by a wolf-headed monster wielding a curved sword, the front part of his body was lying on the ground and after he let out his last agonizing sad and shrill cry, his internal organs started spreading all around.

“Werewolves from the demon race.” Long Xing Yu answered with a cold voice, an impressive pressure could be felt released from his body.

The people below, completely terrified by the werewolves, subconsciously looked up. Seeing the two enormous wings spreading from Long Xing Yu’s back, they couldn’t help but feel completely astonished by his appearance.

“Father, let me go down, I am going to kill them!” Long Hao Chen shouted excitedly.

“Your strength is far from sufficient.” Long Xing Yu said in a low voice: “Hao Chen, didn’t you always want to see your father’s actual strength? Then, take a good look.”

A gold-red ring of light surged out from Long Xing Yu’s back: an enormous bright gold throne shone with a magnificent brilliance, slowly appearing from the gold-red ring of light.

Chapter 25: The Divine Throne of Doom and Slaughter (1)

The enormous throne was 33 meters (10 Zhang) high; on its back, countless precious stones were set and a man could faintly be seen floating behind this chair, spreading severity, dignity, and even terror out all around.

At the top of the back of the chair, there was a semicircular bright red gem that seemed like the sun looking over mother earth. But its brilliance was dark orange colored, giving the impression that it was bringing doom and terror.

At the height of the chest of this figure, also at the back of the chair, an intensely dazzling golden red diamond gem could be spotted. Each crest line drawn on it seemed to try to show the man's formidableness; a huge part of it released a bright brilliance.

At the front of this wide chair, two crawling lions were carved on the left and right sides, seeming as if they were roaring. Countless magnificent decorative patterns seemed to completely fill the back of the throne.

At the moment this throne appeared, a golden column of light arrived on Long Xing Yu's body, completely enveloping both him and Long Hao Chen. As the golden light completely enveloped both of them, Long Hao Chen disappeared and Long Xing Yu's body enlarged ten-folds before slowly sitting on the throne.

In Odin Town, whether they were the werewolves or the former inhabitants, no one could move under this tremendous display of power. The inhabitants were all panic-stricken while the werewolves' gazes were filled with despair.

A golden yellow haired werewolf who looked much more robust than the others of his race said in a trembling voice, "This, this is the Divine Throne of Doom and Slaughter."

The immense Long Xing Yu was slowly sitting straight on his throne, his cold gaze was endlessly awe-inspiring, and at the moment he was seated, the gold red diamond gem at the back of the chair suddenly appeared on his chest as the whole sky started to become gold red colored.

“[Judgement].”

A cold word came out from Long Xing Yu’s mouth. An orange luster gushed out from his back, turning into an immense sword that floated in the sky, right above his head.

The gold haired werewolf had already given up all hope, he couldn’t imagine why such a big shot could appear at the border of the Temple Alliance. Even though these werewolves wanted to run away, it wasn’t possible now.

A myriad of reddish orange colored rays of light fell from the sky, they seemed to grow as they grew closer, falling on each of the werewolves.

No matter how much they struggled, they were unable to do anything against it, and all the werewolves sadly disappeared from this world, just like that. There wasn’t a single trace left of them, they had simply vanished.

“[Salvation].”

The gold red radiance turned into a heavenly scene, and the werewolves disappeared from the world. The people from Odin Town started to get up from the shock. Only a handful of people stood in this warm, gold red colored radiance, but the wounds on their body were being healed at an astonishing speed. The places that were burning were also already extinguished. The only things that couldn’t be restored were the lives of the people who had already died and the destroyed buildings.

With a flash of golden light, Long Xing Yu who was still seated on the throne was already in front of one more person, the gold

haired werewolf.

In regard to demon race monsters, humans ranked them the same as magical beasts. This gold haired werewolf was at least a fifth step demon. However, in front of Long Xing Yu, he was like a little ant who couldn't even struggle the slightest bit. Besides him, each of the demons had already been eliminated.

“What is your goal by invading the southern part of the Temple Alliance?” Long Xing Yu's cold voice sounded full of suspicions.

This gold haired werewolf still put up a tough front, even though by his gaze, it could be seen that he was despaired and unwilling, he still didn't answer.

“This Divine Throne of Doom and Slaughter... You, aren't you the Adjudicator, the Divine Knight, Long Xing Yu?”

Part 2:

Long Xing Yu faintly answered: “That's right, I'm in charge of adjudication and judgement. Now, answer to my question.”

The gaze of the gold haired werewolf became ferocious, “Even if you are a Divine Knight, the demon gods are coming soon: our senior demon gods will avenge us. Even if I die, I won't tell you anything.”

Long Xing Yu, with a cold gaze, “In that case, go to hell.”

The golden light disappeared together with this gold-haired werewolf. Long Xing Yu was still seated on the Divine Throne of Doom and Slaughter, revealing a somewhat anxious look. A short while later, after the golden light faded away, his Divine Throne was turning into yellow stars as it disappeared.

The survivors of Odin Town had thrown themselves on their knees earlier, thinking about the golden light that disappeared in the sky. They didn't know who Long Xing Yu was, but from their point of view, this ‘judgement’ that overpowered all the werewolves was really a divine act.

After a flash of golden light, there were immediately two more people at the peak of Odin Mountain.

Long Xing Yu looked just like before, dressed with a simple robe, his black hair fluttering. After the gold colored banishment, he had restored every inhabitant their original appearance.

Long Hao Chen stood by the side of his father, but he couldn't say anything at this moment: even though he had hundreds of guesses related to his father's actual strength, he could not imagine that his own father could unexpectedly pull out such a godly move.

The act a moment ago had truly shaken him way too much. After two years of practice, Long Hao Chen had some confidence in his own power, but at this moment, he felt that compared to his father, he was still nothing more than a little grain of dust.

Long Xing Yu gently patted his shoulder, "Here, I am only a husband as well as a father."

"Demon invasion?" Bai Yue was, also at this moment, at the mountain peak. This place wasn't so close to Odin Town, but she could also distinctly see the Divine Throne that Long Xing Yu unleashed. Its bright radiance could even be seen from Hao Yue City that was 50 kilometers (100Li) away.

Long Xing Yu's brows wrinkled and he briefly nodded, "This was an exploratory attack, no real demon powerhouses appeared. It looks like I have to shift my return to the Alliance to an earlier date."

Bai Yue lightly nodded, holding Long Xing Yu's large hand.

Long Hao Chen's inner shaking didn't disappear yet, "Father, you, you are a Divine Knight?" he courageously asked.

Long Xing Yu nodded, "You should have heard it during this attack from the werewolves. In the Knight Temple, I am known as the Adjudicator. I am in charge of the crusades of the Temple Alliance."

Long Hao Chen's face was full of worship: "Father, what is exactly a Divine Throne? Is, is it possible for me to become as formidable as you through training?"

Long Xing Yu nodded, sternly answering: "Of course it is possible. I achieved my rank of Divine Knight during the year of my 47th birthday, even before I met your mother. As long as you try your best, I believe that you will be able to achieve this stage even earlier than me."

Chapter 26: The Divine Throne of Doom and Slaughter (2)

Looking from afar, Long Xing Yu let out a sigh, “It looks like the demon race is coming back. Hao Chen, remember, the demon race is powerful, but we mustn’t yield to them. As knights, we have to protect our homeland until the last drop of our blood is exhausted.”

“Em! ” Long Hao Chen nodded as he gave this answer. In his heart, his father wasn’t a mere teacher, but a target of his worship. Without personal experience, he couldn’t imagine that a Divine Throne was so formidable. In this vast sea of spiritual energy, he ravaged the heavens and the earth. This bright [Judgement] left in Long Hao Chen’s heart, an indelible mark.

“Father, do we have to leave this place?” Long Hao Chen asked

Long Xing Yu lowered his head towards him and said: “Yes, but, you are not coming with us.”

“Ah?” Long Hao Chen was astonished, giving a look full of incomprehension to his father.

Long Xing Yu faintly said: “A little chick who never leaves his parent’s protection will never be able to reach the heights of the heaven in the great sky. I had planned to guide you for 3 years, but it looks like we will have to part earlier. I will take your mother back to the Temple Alliance to deal with a few matters and to honor an agreement of mine.

The Temple Alliance isn’t a suitable place for you. If you are to come along with us, I am afraid you will never turn into a Divine Knight like me. You have to walk on your path, step by step, relying on your efforts to gain everything, and you will possess your own honor as a knight.”

“Father, I don’t want to part with you and mother.” Long Hao

Chen suddenly held his father's waist, his gaze looking very sad.

Bai Yue looked at Long Xing Yu with an imploring gaze.

Long Xing Yu stroked Long Hao Chen's head, "Silly boy, if you stay by the our side from beginning to end, your heart will forever be filled with a feeling of dependence and concern. And even if you were to come with us to the Temple Alliance, you wouldn't be able to stay forever by my side. Thus, I have to leave you for a few years, I have too many matters to handle. I have already made this decision: you have to remain here."

Long Hao Chen was still shocked, he tried to control the tears that were dripping from his eyes. Bai Yue had already returned to the log cabin, crying uncontrollably.

Long Xing Yu pulled Long Hao Chen in front of him, and told him in a low voice: "Hao Chen, before we leave, Father has to teach one last thing."

Long Hao Chen answered absent-mindedly: "What is it?"

Long Xing Yu said in a low voice: "Spiritual stoves."

"Spiritual stoves?" Hearing these two words, Long Hao Chen's body couldn't help but shake. During these 2.5 years he trained by his father's side, he heard Long Xing Yu speak about Spiritual Stoves countless times. But at those moments, Long Xing Yu didn't give him directions regarding his training in the use of spiritual stoves.

Long Xing Yu nodded: "Spiritual stoves are spiritual smelting furnaces. Learning to use them is not really about ability. It is rather one of the most valuable magical treasures in nature. There are a lot of knight abilities that can be chosen. But except from a few that will depend on your inner talent, most will be acquired from practice. But spiritual stoves are not the same. The vast majority of the spiritual stoves enable you to use abilities that cannot be acquired through practice, and spiritual stoves are all

different. Each of them has unique properties, and even if different people practice using the same spiritual stove, the result produced will be different.

There are many kinds of spiritual stoves, a total of 74 types have been catalogued at present. Each of them are only suited to some vocations, and there are a total of 23 that are suited for the knight vocation. Some are more suited toward knights, but warriors can also use them.”

Long Hao Chen was gradually becoming more and more fascinated by his father’s explanation about spiritual stoves, “Father, where can I acquire a spiritual stove?”

Part 2:

Long Xing Yu answered: “Generally speaking, they can only be found in places where a lot of spiritual power has gathered or in ancient ruins. In whichever vocation, there is, on average, only one person out of 1000 who possesses a spiritual stove. That also applies for knights. However, spiritual stoves are a common goal sought by all vocations. It is because only by possessing a spiritual stove, can one really become more formidable than those of the same step.”

Speaking these words, Long Xing Yu took out the black colored ring on the index finger of Long Hao Chen. As if it had synchronized with his finger, this black ring had contracted enough to be a perfect fit.

“This is a six-layered seal. I sealed, in your ring, all the powerful skills used by Retribution Knights from the 4th to the 9th rank. Every time your spiritual energy reaches a high enough rank, you will be able to break through a part of the seal and study each of these skills one by one.”

Then, he drew out a book and passed it to Long Hao Chen, “All you have to know regarding spiritual stoves is explained in detail in this book. I don’t have the time to show you in person, so you

will have to learn by yourself, understood?”

“Father... ..” Long Hao Chen let out this word, his eyes uncontrollably red.

“Do not forget the favor you owe to the one who gave you this ring.”

Long Hao Chen gently nodded; after he awakened his inner spiritual energy, Long Xing Yu had told him to what extent he had to be grateful towards the mute girl who left him this ring.

As spiritual energy was poured into it, the thin golden pattern on the ring looked almost alive, and a thin blue light appeared, shining strongly. Long Hao Chen took the book recording the mysteries of the spiritual stoves.

This ring he received was an extremely valuable space ring; inside, up to 10 cubic meters of various articles could be stored. It originally only contained a defensive ability that created a thin blue shield when stimulated. As long as spiritual energy was poured into this ring, the shield would always exist, and its strength would increase together with the spiritual energy. Long Xing Yu said that it was a rare kind of enchantment.

Looking at Long Hao Chen who was packing his book, Long Xing Yu lightly sighed: “Hao Chen, although I have a lot of pretty good equipment, I don’t plan to give it to you. It is because weapons and equipments are only valuable when you obtain them by relying on your own efforts: this way, you will really be able to treasure them.”

“Father, I don’t want to separate from you.” Long Hao Chen’s tears finally stopped dripping.

Long Xing Yu held his son in his embrace, sighing: “Hao Chen, your emotions are your strong point, but also your weakness. Remember, neither Father nor Mother will be by your side in the future; you will have to become a taciturn person, you cannot wear

your heart on your sleeve.

Don't cry, this is only a temporary separation. Father hopes that the next time we'll meet each other, you will be able to make me look at you with new eyes.

Father and mother are going to leave. I cannot leave you any equipment, but there is a gift that I prepared for you a long time ago."

As he said that, Long Xing Yu let go of his son's hand, putting his right hand on his own chest. Tightly pressing, a strange white light was released.

The white light was gentle, followed by a particular energy undulating before pulsing, giving a dizzy feeling to the ones who looked at it.

This was definitely neither the energy from the Sacred Light nor Long Xing Yu's spiritual energy. Long Xing Yu slowly stretched his palm under the gaze of Long Hao Chen who looked quite impressed; in his father's palm, there was a white radiance. A three foot long little cauldron appeared in Long Xing Yu's palm.

The white radiance was emitted from this white cauldron, softly moved up and down, creating a mesmerizing sight.

Chapter 27: Saint Spiritual Stove (I)

Despite the fact they were going to leave each other soon, Long Hao Chen couldn't help but become fascinated by the sight of this little white-colored cauldron.

“Father, what is that?”

Long Xing Yu answered: “This is a Saint Spiritual Stove. Father has prepared it as a gift to you. There are a lot of different kinds of spiritual stoves and each one has specific properties as well as a specific classification, but the more formidable the spiritual stove is, the bigger the price to pay to use it will be. This Saint Spiritual Stove is the 68th spiritual stove among the 74 types, but in terms of rarity, it belongs to the top ten.”

“The utility of the Saint Spiritual Stove is detailed in the book I gave you. Simply said, the Saint Spiritual Stove has neither offensive nor defensive abilities, but is able to help the cultivation of your Spiritual Energy. It is ranked among the top 20 spiritual stoves and can evolve at least three times.. And for knights, it has an enormous utility. When using the Saint Spiritual Stove, you can attract the enemy's aggression so that enemies will only attack you instead of your companions. Unless you die or you choose to deactivate your Saint Spiritual Stove, the enemy will only be able to target you.

Perhaps you are unable to comprehend this mysterious effect at this moment, but you will, in the future, come to understand how amazing it is. At the same time, the biggest benefit of the Saint Spiritual Stove lies in the fact that it doesn't put a burden on your body when you are using it and, at the same time, its consumption of spiritual energy is really low. In addition, it won't influence your absorption of other spiritual stoves in the future. Therefore, father chose it as your first spiritual stove; I hope you will like this gift. As for the other abilities it will acquire after evolving, father doesn't know either; I can only tell you to try to find out by

yourself.

Also, you have to keep this firmly in mind that Spiritual Stoves are not omnipotent at all. The most formidable one is absolutely not always the most suited one. The ones in the top ten ranks all require their user to pay a big price. Some of these costs are really hard to bear. In regard to spiritual stoves, it really isn't the more you have, the better: you have to absolutely carefully think before deciding if you should fuse with a new spiritual stove."

Long Xing Yu's tone was really severe, each of his words came from the sum of his own experience.

"Then, Father, how many spiritual stove can someone fuse with?" Long Hao Chen asked.

Long Xing Yu shook his head: "I don't know. In theory, there is no restriction of quantity, but spiritual stoves easily conflict among themselves. If that happens, you will risk death in regard to the fusion. The record until now was five spiritual stoves being fused. I personally fused with three, but it isn't necessarily better to fuse with more of them. And you have to continuously make great efforts if you want your spiritual stove to evolve. After a spiritual stove evolves a few times, its power will surpass the power of several spiritual stoves put together that have not evolved. Alright, I explained you the most important basics. Hao Chen, don't forget what your mother told you: whatever the circumstances are, you have to give priority to your own security."

As he said these words, Long Xing Yu's left hand rose and was placed on Long Hao Chen's chest and, at this moment, his body became enveloped by a misty gold-colored brilliance, preventing him from moving.

Long Xing Yu's left hand scintillated and on Long Hao Chen's chest, four lights appeared. Long Hao Chen felt as if his body was being penetrated and his internal spiritual energy was ignited, circling around his father.

Pulling Long Hao Chen with his right hand, he carefully cut a bit of the skin of his fingertip, squeezing out a drop of blood from it. The fresh blood floated in Long Xing Yu's spiritual energy before precisely falling onto the Saint Spiritual Stove.

At this moment, the little cauldron released a soft white brilliance, shining brilliantly. A white light was then released by it, reaching Long Hao Chen's chest.

A warm feeling stimulated all the pores on Long Hao Chen's whole body. His circling inner spiritual energy spread out and scattered, as if it was an invader in his body.

With a white radiance, the little white cauldron shining with a white glow slowly flew to the level of Long Hao Chen's chest, entering his body little by little.

The originally warm feeling became scorching hot just as if an iron skewer had entered his body. Long Hao Chen couldn't help but let out a miserable shout. It frightened Bai Yue who suddenly ran to him from the log cabin.

Fortunately, the burning feeling didn't continue for long: after a few breaths, the white colored little spiritual stove had disappeared.

A thin white radiance was emitted from Long Hao Chen's body, making his skin's surface gradually appear a smooth jade-colored luster.

Part 2:

Long Hao Chen felt the capabilities of the incredibly hot energy diffused in his chest. It was spread to each corner of his body, including even his cerebrum. This hot energy included countless mysterious energies that entered his mind.

All of his senses were stimulated and Long Hao Chen was stiff like the summit of a mountain, his body shining with a white-colored radiance. His chest shone especially, a little mark of

spiritual stove appearing on it.

This Saint Spiritual Stove was fusing together with Long Hao Chen, using the essence of heavens and earth, with his fresh blood and his spiritual energy as an intermediary to form a magical spiritual, the stove fused with his body, becoming a part of it. When looking to fuse with a spiritual stove, the most basic requirement was the starting point of the third step of the vocation: 200th spiritual energy. Long Hao Chen had surpassed it a long time ago.

Long Xing Yu stood there, quietly looking at his son, his eyes gradually revealing a few signs of disappointment.

Bai Yue silently went to Long Xing Yu's side, and as she was holding his hand, her tears couldn't help but drip, "Do we really have to leave Chen Chen? I, I am not at ease. From childhood to now, he never left my side."

Long Xing Yu held her in his embrace, "Rest assured, I arranged the safest plan possible for him. If he doesn't leave our side, he will forever be unable to become a real man. The confrontation between us and the demon race is going to become harder and harder as time passes. With such an outstanding inborn talent, our son will inevitably become the central pillar of the Temple Alliance in the future. If you really love him, let him spread out his wings and freely soar in the sky."

"This agreement, do you have to fulfill it?" Bai Yue let her tears fall. She clearly knew that this was the first reason why her husband had to leave their son.

Long Xing Yu's eyes revealed a determined spark, "The warrior Anan and I cannot avoid this. I have already waited too long for this. If we can get rid of him, this will be a blessing for mankind. Be at ease. For the sake of both of you, I will try my hardest to come back alive."

Everything was as plain as before, but there wasn't a single other

silhouette. Long Hao Chen was confused and lost in his thoughts for a long moment, his heart completely in discord.

With a puff splitting sound, he fell on his knees, his tears flowing dramatically. Even though they had just parted, he seemed, at this moment, as if he was alone in the world.

Chapter 28: Saint Spiritual Stove (II)

“Father, even if you took me by your side, I wouldn’t have stopped putting in efforts!” Choking back the sobs, Long Hao Chen painfully curled up, ruthlessly digging into the ground with his hands, feeling the pain of being alone for the first time in a long time.

Meal time had already passed and Long Hao Chen started crawling on the ground. He was actually a resolute kid, but his mood just took control of his whole heart. Without notice, Dad and Mom suddenly left, this fact was too hard to accept in his heart.

As he stood up, Long Hao Chen looked around, at a complete loss. From his gaze, scenes of all sorts of events that happened in the past 2 years appeared unceasingly in his mind: his father’s seriousness, his mother’s gentleness.

“Why are days of joy and happiness so brief?” His tears fell once more, and at the same time , Long Hao Chen noticed two letters on the nearest table.

After taking two or three steps, he grabbed the letters.

On the envelopes containing the two letters, it was written that they were respectively designated to Hao Chen and Nalan Shu. Obviously, one of the letters was for him and the other one had to be given to Nalan Shu Hall Master of Hao Yue Hall.

Long Hao Chen calmed down and slowly took apart the envelope that contained the letter that was written to him.

Hao Chen, when you will have noticed this letter, I would have already left with your mother. We didn’t want to bear the pain of separation. It is only a temporary farewell: you are already a grown up, and now that you are a man, you have to stand strong because the only thing you will be able to rely on in the future will be your

own power.

After reading this letter, you should go directly to Hao Yue City. In Hao Yue Hall, there is a place where you can study all kinds of Guardian Knight skills, and there is an Instructor that is particularly outstanding. Keep in mind that, unless it is absolutely necessary, you mustn't easily expose your situation as being both a Retribution Knight and a Guardian Knight. I will also warn Nalan Shu about this fact. Nalan Shu is someone worth trusting, you can ask for his guidance. Also, you must learn all of the skills used by Guardian Knights from the first to the fourth step and be able to use them proficiently before you leave for the Sacred Mountain to get your mount.

Regarding the Spiritual Communication in the Sacred Mountain, if you cannot resist the aura emanated by strong beasts, you will be unable to get a suitable mount as a companion. Meanwhile, studying the abilities used by Guardian Knights should also help you to grow even more tremendously. Remember, remember.

You should unceasingly train with spiritual stoves. After owning a spiritual stove, it will turn into an intermediary for the practice of your internal spiritual energy and thus raise your training potential. Now that you have already fused with a Saint Spiritual Stove, your internal spiritual energy will most likely drop due to the fusion. However, there is no need to worry, this is a process between your internal spiritual energy and your spiritual stove. In half a month, or at most one month, it will be back to normal. Saint Spiritual Stoves are especially suited to be used by Guardian Knights and you should be able to learn this fact through personal experience in the future.

Hao Chen, Father and Mother also hate the fact that we have to part with you, but Father hopes that the next time we meet with each other, you will show us your outstanding ability. If Mother and I don't come to look for you, then it will mean that we are busy with very important matters. Only when you are able to reach the

seventh step as a Knight of the Temple, pass through the examination, and are able to get a Silver Foundation Warrior Armor; only at this moment can you look for us.

Arriving at the end of the letter, Long Hao Chen gave a agonizing look. His heart, filled with motivation, already aimed to reach the highest heights.

Suddenly, he turned around, fleeing from the entrance of the log cabin and shouting at the top of his lungs: “FA— THER —, MO— THER —!”

Long Hao Chen did not immediately leave Odin Mountain. He stayed there for 3 more days until the log cabin did not have the fragrance of his parents left. He then put in order his depressed feelings due to the separation and descended from the mountain with his luggage.

On the road to Odin Town, he saw that, in the town, the rebuilding job was in progress and that at least 2,000 private troops of the Temple Alliance were stationed in the area.

Part 2:

It was already high noon when he arrived at Hao Yue City, and it looked like there wasn't much change. The instant he crossed the threshold of the city, Long Hao Chen secretly pledged that he would absolutely make the greatest of effort so that he could become a seventh step knight as soon as possible.

Hao Yue City looked like it was not in disorder because of the surprise attack of the demon race. From what he could remember about its location, Long Hao Chen went back to the Knight Hall, Hao Yue Hall.

“Please, I want want to see Hall Master Nalan Shu.” said Long Hao Chen as he handed his badge of a Standard Knight.

The two people who guarded the entrance changed and although

they didn't know him, they could clearly see that he was a ten-something-year-old youth who unexpectedly already owned a Standard Knight insignia. They didn't dare treat him brashly and hurriedly reported his arrival.

After a little while, accompanied by a thin fragrance, a silhouette arrived from the inside of Hao Yue Hall's.

"Lil' Bro Hao Chen, you finally came."

The one who came out from the Hall was Li Xin. She was dressed the same as last time with light armor, a pony tail, and looking quite heroic. A year and a half didn't leave any significant change on her body except her expression which looked even more imposing than in the past. It was obviously due to training; like him, she made great progress since the last time they had met.

"Big Sister Xin'er." Looking at her, Long Hao Chen immediately had an a feeling of intimacy; his depressed feelings from the last few days almost faded. Under the stupefied look of the two guards, he threw himself directly into Li Xin's bosom.

Li Xin gave him a big hug and, affected by Long Hao Chen's sentimental behaviour, she hurried to ask: "Hao Chen, what happened? Anything bad?"

Long Hao Chen choked with sobs: "Father and Mother left. They left me alone."

Li Xing was astounded, "Are you saying that during the demon race's surprise attack...?"

Long Hao Chen suddenly heard her misunderstanding and hurried to clear it: "No, Father and Mother went to another place and left me to join Hao Yue Hall to continue my practice."

Li Xin lowered her tall and erect posture; she looked relieved, "I was really scared. You jumped at me so suddenly! What's the problem? I personally have no problem with the fact that I'm separated with my parents. In the future, Hao Yue Hall will be

your home. Whoever dares bully you will hear from me. Come, let's go in and then talk in more detail."

As she spoke, Li Xin pulled Long Hao Chen's hand and took big steps towards the center of Hao Yue Hall.

The two guards at the entrance exchanged a glance, revealing to each other their shocked expressions.

"Who is this youth? How can he be so affectionate with our Hell Rose Knight?"

"Be quiet, you dare inquire about the private life of Miss Li Xin? Even if you can turn into someone handsome and as talented as her, it is not set in stone that she will possibly view you in a new, favorable light."

Li Xin pulled Long Hao Chen inside of Hao Yue Hall. This place looked the same as before except that the six Divine Thrones in the center of the Hall shone in a different light in the eyes of Long Hao Chen: the feeling he had upon looking at them was completely different.

With a proud and, at the same time, somewhat sad feeling, he found with a glance, the second throne from the left symbolizing the Divine Throne of Doom and Slaughter. This is Father's glory!

There will inevitably be a day when he will, for sure, possess one of these six Divine Thrones. Long Hao Chen's eyes had a certain kind of fire in them.

The steps he took with Li Xin felt like they were becoming slower before their pace had both halted: "Lil' Bro, in the lapse of a whole year, you grew up so much! Two years from now, I'm afraid that you will have already surpassed this Big Sister. Em, you will even be better looking. It's a tragedy. After you have grown up, I wonder how many girls would get confused and disoriented."

Li Xin's figure straightened. Despite the fact that Long Hao Chen grew up a lot, she was, nevertheless, still one head taller than him.

However, when she looked at Long Hao Chen, her heart couldn't help but admire him, going as far as showing signs of an increase in her heartbeat.

Chapter 29: Saint Spiritual Stove (III)

Long Hao Chen, who would soon be 12 years old, was different from a year and a half ago: his pretty face and his delicate cheeks looked tougher. From his formerly weak and beautiful appearance, he now looked quite robust. His body was still slender and well proportioned, and his shoulder also grew larger. His appearance was basically flawless.

Li Xin, what's up with you? He's your Lil' Bro and he's eight years younger! Don't tell me you want to become like the old cow that eats soft grass? She rebuked herself in her mind; she was supposed to be quite a resolute person but, at the same time, she was quite fond of Long Hao Chen. In fact, she was the youngest at home and had always yearned for a younger brother, so even though she hadn't been with Long Hao Chen for a long time, in her heart, she felt unusually close to him.

“Wow, Lil' Bro, from what I can remember, your eyes didn't have this color! They should have a dark blue color, so why have they taken this golden color?”

Long Hao Chen came back to his senses and scratched his head: “Father helped me undergo the Divine Awakening and then they became like that.”

Li Xin became stupefied, “Divine Awakening can result in a change of color of your eyes? How is it that I have never heard about this? Ah! You have already undergone the Divine Awakening you say? Then your spiritual energy has already broken through the 200th level! Quickly tell Big Sis, how high is your innate internal spiritual energy level?”

Long Hao Chen nodded and said: “Big Sis, I don't want to fool you; the truth is that my father forbade me to reveal it.”

Suddenly, Li Xin looked as if she realized something and covered her own mouth before muttering in a low voice: “Heavens! A third

step knight below 12 years-old. Let's go, I'm bringing you to see Uncle Nalan Shu; he will be absolutely frightened by your progress."

"What is going to frighten me?" Hearing a voice that seemed a bit playful, Long Hao Chen and Li Xin turned their head, only to see that Nalan Shu has just come down the stairs.

Upon seeing Long Hao Chen, Nalan Shu was quite surprised, but he quickly took an earnest expression. He hurried in front of Long Hao Chen, looking at him from top to bottom, before asking without restrain: "That day... that day, wasn't it your teacher that..."

Long Hao Chen was a little surprised, but he quickly understood what he meant and proudly nodded.

Nalan Shu took a deep breath, his eyes revealing a scorching hot feeling of adoration, "I knew it! I knew it!"

Li Xin answered, unconvinced: "Uncle Nalan, what are both of you talking secretly about?"

Nalan Shu took a serious expression before asking her: "Why haven't you already left for practice? You are already a seventh rank knight, so whether you can participate in the Magical Hunting Selection and Competition prior to breaking through the level of Grand Knight will relate to how well you will be able to do in this magical selection."

Li Xin stuck out her tongue and looked at Long Hao Chen: "Lil' Bro, I am going to practice first. In the evening, dinner will be my treat, I'll invite you to eat a large meal. Hihi." As she finished, she turned around and ran out.

Nalan Shu said with a helpless smile and, at the same time, doting tone: "This kid, she'll soon be 20 but is still so mischievous. Those who come from normal households are supposed to marry by this age."

Turning back, Nalan Shu took a look at Long Hao Chen before nodding and said: “Hao Chen, come with me.”

Long Hao Chen went together with him to his office on the second floor, where Nalan Shu couldn't hold back his feeling of anxiety any longer: “The Divine Throne of Doom and Slaughter! Hao Chen, do you know how big this surprise attack of the demon race was? But with a single move from your teacher, their five army forces simply fled from the Alliance's border. He's your teacher right? Would it be possible to let me meet Senior Xing Yu?”

Long Hao Chen shook his head: “Nalan Hall Master, he left. This is for you.” As he spoke, he took out the letter that his father left to him, passing it to Nalan Shu.

Nalan Shu couldn't hold himself back and took apart the letter before taking a look, and a surprised look quickly appeared on his face. Still looking at the contents of the letter, he revealed a look full of disbelief as he looked at Long Hao Chen, “You, you were actually Senior Xing Yu's son? But, why would Senior Xing Yu let you study abilities used by Guardian Knights together with us? Why is it not the path of a Retribution Knight? Senior Xing Yu is the number one Retribution Knight of the Knight Alliance!”

Long Hao Chen said: “Nalan Hall Master, Father did not want me to reveal everything, so I cannot tell you anything that was not written in his letter.”

Nalan Shu took a deep breath and, while putting the letter away with a great care, he said: “Okay. Regardless of his reasons, I cannot disobey Senior Xing Yu's instructions. From now onwards, you will become a genuine member of Hao Yue Hall. I will give my best in training you. In his letter, Senior Xing Yu explained that he wanted you to participate in the magical selection.”

“Em, I will follow your guidance.” Long Hao Chen straightened his posture and faced Nalan Shu with a basic knight salute.

Nalan Shu clapped his shoulders and said: “In the future, you will be like Xin’er, so call me Uncle Nalan. Honestly, the knight skills I will pass on to you are, from my honest point of view, rather imperfect; but I believe that in the near future, you will definitely be able to become the biggest glory of our Hao Yue Hall. Come, I will bring you to a nearby location that I have arranged for you to stay at.”

“Thank you, Uncle Nalan.”

Hao Yue Hall occupied an enormous area. It was definitely not limited to what Long Hao Chen could only see: from behind the hall, there was also a big region. Among the three main parts, there was one where knights could rest as well as a public square where they could practice as knights and be passed on knowledge and skills belonging to the Knight Hall.

At the center of Hao Yue City, the scheduled arrival of the group of Knight Squires from the villages and small towns to Hao Yue Hall for their examination would happen in three years. Those who were successful at becoming Standard Knights would be able to remain in Hao Yue Hall to study and practice. If they could break through the third step within five years, they would then turn into genuine members of Hao Yue Hall as well as genuine members of the Knight Hall. If they couldn’t, the alternative for these Standard Knights would be to join the army or take up another kind of occupation in the Knight Temple.

Actually, what Long Hao Chen saw was only the facade of Hao Yue Hall. The real Hao Yue Hall was actually hidden behind this facade; 100 Knights and 2,000 Standard Knights lived there, but according to Nalan Shu’s presentation, besides its outward appearance, Hao Yue Hall actually also had an Earth Knight as well as seven Grand Knights. All those who could advance to the step of Grand Knight would sooner or later leave for the Knight Temple to begin a new journey.

Together with the differences in rank, the living conditions also

varied. Standard Knights had to share a room among four people, but each Genuine Knight had his own room.

Nalan Shu arranged Long Hao Chen's room to be next to Li Xin's room, and after eating, Nalan Shu told Long Hao Chen to rest for the remainder of the day. The next day, he would come back for practice.

When people reached the third step, no matter from which Temple they came, they would be treated well because they would be the main force against the demon race in battle.

Long Hao Chen's room was currently inside of a three-story monastery reserved for Genuine Knights. It was a suite. There was a bedroom, a quiet meditation room for practicing, and a private bathroom for personal hygiene. Inside the meditation room, there was a simple Magic Circle surrounded by a few Light-based magic crystals. Since the light-element affinity inside the room was much higher than outside, it had a supplementary effect when practicing inside.

Unaffected by the generosity he received, Long Hao Chen just took out his clothes from the space ring before sorting himself out a bit and went into the meditation room to practice.

Practice made time pass quite faster, a whole afternoon quickly passed. Before night fell, a clear yet calm knocking sound on the door could be heard.

"Who is it?" Long Hao Chen regained consciousness from his quiet practice.

"Lil' Bro, it's me."

Long Hao Chen opened the door and saw Li Xin standing at the entrance. At the moment, she did not wear her light armor but had changed into a white-colored attire, looking as though she had just taken her bath. Her pink colored hair that hung down to her shoulders' level was still somewhat wet. Her current appearance

looked quite less heroic and much more charming.

“Come with me, Uncle Nalan wanted me to take you to test your spiritual energy, but before I take you there, let’s have a good welcome dinner.”

Chapter 30: Saint Spiritual Stove (IV)

“Oh?” Long Hao Chen, who was still immersed in the practice of his internal spiritual energy and studying the knowledge regarding spiritual stoves, gave a simple reply before heading out together with Li Xin.

Li Xin had arranged her long hair, using a blue ribbon to tie it into a ponytail; then she left together with Long Hao Chen, going back to the main hall and heading straight to the third floor.

Nalan Shu was already waiting for them: upon seeing them, he came to Long Hao Chen and said, with a smile, “How was your rest? Were you satisfied with the residence?”

Long Hao Chen first gave Nalan Shu a salute, then replied, “I really liked the residence. Thank you Uncle Nalan.”

Nalan Shu faintly smiled. He was liking this child more and more: he had such a formidable father but didn’t show the slightest bit of arrogance.

“You have already completed the Sacred Awakening, proving that you have the potential to be a knight; however, in order for you to join our Hao Yue Hall, we have to carry out your registration. Therefore, it will be necessary to test your current spiritual energy. Tomorrow, you will have to start studying in the knight class to learn the skills and abilities of a Guardian Knight. If there is anything that you don’t understand, come to me and ask me directly.”

“Yes.” Long Hao Chen replied, moving his wrist and slowly drawing the heavy sword from his back. Because his father did not want him to reveal his abilities of a Retribution Knight, he only carried a single heavy sword on his back, the other one was, naturally, stashed inside the spatial ring.

“Lil’ Bro, you want to become a Guardian Knight?” Li Xin looked

puzzled.

Long Hao Chen laughed, “I made this choice after coming back from the last test.”

The tool used for the test this time was the same as the last time, still that black stone pillar.

“Start now.” Nalan Shu nodded at Long Hao Chen.

Long Hao Chen focused his gaze and took one step forward, the heavy sword on his right hand chopping and unleashing a sort of lightning; several layers of golden light obviously surrounded the blade. This was not a skill, but a phenomenon caused by pouring spiritual energy into the blade.

A Ping sound muffled, and a blue glow softly rose from the walls of the examination hall; whether it was Nalan Shu or Li Xin, both nervously stared at the top of the black stone pillar.

“268.” A huge number appeared there.

Nalan Shu and Li Xin both gasped at the same time, completely speechless, and she cried out: “You are only two spiritual energy levels away from being a third rank Genuine Knight. Lil’ Bro, are you really a normal human? A third rank knight who’s not twelve years old yet.”

As a matter of fact, a year and a half ago, when Li Xin met Long Hao Chen for the first time, she also had just reached the level of Genuine Knight. In merely a year and a half, Long Hao Chen had more than doubled his spiritual energy level. Although this growth speed was closely related to the fact that both his inner and outer spiritual energies had been cultivated, it could be still described as terrifying talent.

Long Hao Chen put his sword away and stood motionless; he was not surprised at all by his spiritual energy ranking, but this was obviously not the real spiritual energy he had reached. After fusing the Saint Spiritual Stove, his inner spiritual energy dropped by

over fifty levels. Otherwise, his spiritual energy level would be at a level surpassing a fourth rank and almost at the level of a fifth rank Genuine Knight.

“Genius, a real genius.”, Nalan Shu murmured.

Li Xin blinked her big eyes, fiercely looking at Long Hao Chen, and said: “It’s such a pity that you are so young compared to me, otherwise, this Big Sis would definitely have chosen to seize you.”

Looking at her, Long Hao Chen couldn’t help but blush. He could still clearly remembered the scene that occurred more than a year ago, when Li Xin had grabbed his hand, making it grope some highly located place that was soft.

“Let’s go, it’s time to eat.” Li Xin pulled Long Hao Chen’s arm and said some greetings to Nalan Shu before running out.

Getting out of Hao Yue Hall, Li Xin dragged Long Hao Chen to one of the biggest restaurants in the neighborhood and entered.

As soon as they entered, a waiter immediately came to serve them: “Welcome, Miss Xin’er.”

Li Xin nodded and said: “Get us something to eat.”

The waiter looked somewhat surprised upon seeing Li Xin pull Long Hao Chen’s arm, “Both of you, please follow me onto the second floor.”

Li Xin shook her head and said: “No need, the two of us will be fine in the main dining hall. We will be sitting there, close to the window. Bring out the menu, I’m starving to death.”

While talking, she pulled Long Hao Chen before sitting down.

Around this time, the main hall of the restaurant was fairly crowded. Immediately after sitting down with Long Hao Chen, Li Xin ordered food, but she did it in a way that broadened Long Hao Chen’s horizons.

Receiving a menu from the waiter, Li Xin pointed at five or six

dishes on it. While Long Hao Chen was still wondering why the waiter did not record her choice of dishes, Li Xin said: “Except for these, bring out everything.”

That was almost a full menu: there were twenty to thirty dishes!

“Big Sister Xin’er, there is really too much. There’s no way we can finish it.” Long Hao Chen made haste to say, having understood more about this new older sister. This easygoing side of hers made him feel very comfortable staying around her.

Li Xin put on a serious face and said: “How can there be no way we can finish? You’re still growing, so you need to eat quite a bit.”

“Come on, what is that? Making people eat more? Clearly it’s just you who are a big eater.” After Li Xin finished ordering food, a somewhat cold, mixed with mockery, voice reached her.

Long Hao Chen turned around and saw two men and a woman, three people who had also just entered the restaurant. When the three of them passed near them, they stopped advancing; more exactly, it was the girl who spoke.

This young girl was wearing a dark blue robe. It seemed as if elemental energy loomed around the robe, making it glow in a light blue color. On the left side of her chest, there was a three-starred emblem surrounded by six golden stripes.

A magical Robe. Is this a Mage? Long Hao Chen only knew about mages through his Father’s teachings, this was the first time he saw one in his life.

Three stars plus six stripes, that was the mark of a third step, sixth rank vocation. So this was a Genuine Mage. The three first steps of the vocation of mage were named Mage’s Assistant, Magical Student, and Genuine Mage.

Bang, Li Xin who violently pounded the table stood up, and angrily said: “Lin Jia Lu, who did’ya describe as a big eater?”

Lin Jia Lu snorted, “Who is the one who eats so much?”

Long Hao Chen, who at first paid principally attention to the magical robe, took another closer look at the mage's looks.

Lin Jia Lu and Li Xin could be described as rare beauties, yet their styles were completely different. Li Xin, straightforward and full of vigor, was a kind of robust beauty. On the other hand, Lin Jia Lu had a more ladylike, clever look.

White skin, medium build, long light blue colored hair letting loose behind her back, graceful eyebrows, beautiful nose, a pair of perfect, identical blue eyes, and her gentle face; all of those easily made people feel like treasuring her.

However, she was holding a 0,66 meter (2 Chi) long magic black wand made of wood in her hands, on top of which sprouted branches shaped like a small hand, just big enough to hold a fist-sized blue water gem. The magical elemental power that could be felt coming out of the magic wand was much more intense than the one from her robe.

“Are trying to pick a fight or what?” With anger sparking in her eyes, Li Xin stepped in front of Lin Jia Lu.

The two young men who arrived together with Lin Jia Lu rushed two steps forward, one on each side of Lin Jia Lu, looking rather nervous. Both of them were leather-armor-clad warriors, obviously Lin Jia Lu's bodyguards.

What mages feared the most was being attacked. Despite possessing with magic a formidable destructive power, they were very vulnerable. Therefore, a good mage would always have attendants following to protect them.

“You two ladies, please calm down. Exactly a month ago, you two received punishments from the Head Officer and the Minister.” The warrior on the left nervously reminded.

“Hmph!” Li Xin and Lin Jia Lu reacted almost at the same time, glaring at each other.

Chapter 31: Radiant Shield (I)

Li Xin voice trembled with anger: “Last month? You dare speak about last month? If my father and Uncle Lin had not arrived so quickly, I would have killed you with a single slash.”

Lin Jia Lu sneered: “If my father had not protected you, I would’ve turned you into an ice statue.”

Li Xin disdained: “If you have the skills to beat me, then don’t use any magic equipment.”

Lin Jia Lu contemptuously rebutted: “If you have the skills, don’t summon your unicorn mount.”

Seemingly not able to stifle her anger anymore, Li Xin moved her palm towards her back, drawing out one of her two swords she challenged the other girl, “Let’s go outside. This time I will not summon Rose, let’s see if you can do anything against me.”

Lin Jia Lu then handed her wand to the warrior apprentice next to her, “Well then, I will not use my wand either, I’ll let you see this lady’s casting speed.”

“Young ladies, the Head Officer and the Minister have already warned you that if the two of you were to raise a ruckus again, then both of you will be getting detentions.” Cold sweat broke out the warriors’ face as they stood between the girls who showed forced smiles mixed with frustration, having no choice but to agree.

Upon hearing the word ‘detention’, Li Xin and Lin Jia Lu immediately showed signs of restraint, once again a “Hmph” escaped their lips.

Li Jia Lu sneered: “Consider yourself lucky this time.”

“Lucky? This lady is a seventh ranked knight, unlike someone here who’s only a sixth ranked mage. I’m not sure who’s the lucky one here. Are you looking for a fight? Alright! Lin Jia Lu, would you dare make a bet with me?”

Lin Jia Lu grunted and said: “What bet?”

Li Xin pointed at Long Hao Chen standing behind her, “This is my little brother, he’ll go for me. You also send someone from your side. Since we are not duelling directly, the problem of getting detention does not rise.”

Long Hao Chen had been hidden by Li Xin’s body before, but now that Li Xin had moved aside, Lin Jia Lu could finally see him. Up on seeing the boy, Lin Jia Lu’s eyes sparkled. Long Hao Chen had a beautiful, near-perfect face and a unique pair of rare clear golden eyes, it felt like he had some more imperceptible qualities that were enough to make her dumbstruck.

Looking at Long Hao Chen, then at Li Xin, Lin Jia Lu toned down a bit, asking Li Xin: “Is she a girl crossdressed as a guy like you?”

Long Hao Chen’s face twitched, he dropped his hair and his brows wrinkled: “I’m a boy.”

He thought to himself, why can’t you people stop being like that?! Why does everyone see me as a girl? Can’t you people not see that I have an Adam’s apple? Can’t you have a little common sense?!

Li Xin triumphantly said: “So? My little brother is handsome, right? Have you ever seen anyone as handsome as he is?”

Lin Jia Lu, curling her lips, said: “So you have this kind of hobby. You like them younger, eh? However, you are much older than he is. Don’t you have any shame?”

“You...” Li Xin angrily said: “Tell me, do you want to bet or not? Let me tell you the truth: my little brother is also from Hao Yue Hall. He just joined today.”

Lin Jia Lu was somewhat surprised, “Aren’t you making a mistake? You want to send him out? How old is he? Is he even fifteen years old?”

Li Xin said: “Don’t worry about that, just tell me if you want to

bet or not. If you don't dare, quickly go away; don't ruin your Aunt's eating mood."

"Whose Aunt? Let's bet if it's what you want. Isn't he just a little kid? Xu Tiankong, you go." Lin Jia Lu didn't know herself why she and Li Xin were always at odds; it was obvious that they could not stand each other's provocation.

Li Xin said: "Let's duel outside so as to not affect other people's business. Also, since it's a bet, let's put something at stake."

Lin Jia Lu said: "What do you want to bet?"

Li Xin who had clearly decided long ago what she wanted to bet, pulled out a white-colored crystal and said: "I'll bet this magic crystal from the light-element fifth ranked beast Elegant Gold Tiger against the Radiant Shield from your house's business."

Lin Jia Lu fretted, "Are you crazy?" She also vaguely felt that something was off. An Elegant Gold Tiger's magic crystal was fairly rare. Among the fifth-ranked magic crystals, it was one of the best ones. Even though the Radiant Shield was good, its value was not as high as this magic crystal at all. So why was she so confident?

The magic crystal kept bouncing in Li Xin's hand, she looked at Lin Jia Lu and sneered: "If you are afraid to bet, then get out of my sight and from now on, remember to take another path when you meet me."

"What is there for me to be afraid of? Fine, Let's bet." Lin Jia Lu impulsively agreed.

Long Hao Chen had been standing next to them, without saying anything. He did not know what caused the tension between Li Xin and Lin Jia Lu. But he realized that even though these two were really noisy, they still had managed to keep their cool, and they were not really enemies either. Li Xin had been very nice to him. For the sake of his Big Sister, he could not refuse.

The group then got out of the restaurant together. Li Xin, pulling Long Hao Chen's arm, whispered: "Lil' Bro, I'm so sorry for making you do this even though you haven't eaten yet. However, you have to try your best! Sis did it with good intentions, you must win."

Long Hao Chen clearly saw there was some slyness in Li Xin's eyes, so he quickly nodded: "Big Sister, I'll try my best."

On the other side, Lin Jia Lu was also cheering her own attendant: "Xu Tiankong... this little kid seems to have some skills, but you have to win. If you win, I'll give you a good sword. However, remember not to hurt him."

Xu Tiankong helplessly said: "Miss, can you promise me that after the duel ends, regardless of the outcome, you won't cause problems with Miss Xin'er anymore? Otherwise, I will have to report it to the Head Officer."

Lin Jia Lu impatiently replied: "I know."

In front of the restaurant, there was an empty lot reserved for parking carriages; at this time, there weren't many carriages so there was just enough space for them to hold the duel.

Long Hao Chen stepped forward with a heavy sword already in his hand. On the other side, Xu Tian Kong also moved forward. Long Hao Chen looked at Lin Jia Lu and said: "Sister Lin, I've never faced a mage. I'm looking forward to your guidance."

"Huh?" Both Li Xin and Lin Jia Lu were stunned.

Li Xin quickly said: "Lil' Bro, calm down." She had seen Long Hao Chen fight. She knew that his fighting experience was not bad and his spiritual energy ranking wasn't low either. Lin Jia Lu's two guards had, at best, just reached the third step as warriors. If the two had not mastered any sacred skills, it would be difficult for them to win against Long Hao Chen. However, Lin Jia Lu was completely different. She and Li Xin were considered prodigies of

Hao Yue City.

Looking at Li Xin, Long Hao Chen said in a serious tone: “Big Sister, my father told me that first hand experiences, in many cases, are more important than training. I want to try dueling a mage. So please guide me well!”

Lin Jia Lu went around the puzzled Xu Tian Kong and suspiciously asked: “Kiddo, you want to duel me? If so, your sister Xin’er will surely lose.”

Long Hao Chen slowly lifted his heavy sword, shook his head, and replied: “One cannot know if one does not try. Big Sister Xin’er, may I?”

Li Xin looked at the calm and decisive posture that seemed to belong to someone much older than Long Hao Chen. She then smiled: “Good, that’s my Lil’ Bro! Show her how strong you are. Lin Jia Lu, don’t cry when you lose.”

“I’m gonna lose?” Lin Jia Lu stared at Li Xin, without taking out her wand, she pointed at Long Hao Chen and said: “Then come.”

“Sister Lin, please.” Long Hao Chen spoke, lightly tapping his heavy sword on his right shoulder, exercising a knight’s salute, pointing his toes downwards; he started charging towards Lin Jia Lu.

Not retreating, Lin Jia Lu quickly and quietly recited her spell,. There was a layer of pale-blue light spreading out from her body. Pointing her right index finger at Long Hao Chen, an [Ice Ball] was shot straight at him, all of this happening in less than a second.

Chapter 32: Radiant Shield (II)

Long Haochen slightly lowered his brows and, without trying to dodge, he approached the Ice Ball, intending to meet it head-on.

However, as if it knew what Long Haochen was trying to do, the Ice Ball suddenly sank. With a cracking sound, the attack targeted the ground. A blue halo of light immediately covered an area within a two-thirds of a meter diameter, and Long Haochen's charge was interrupted simultaneously.

With a chilling sensation on his foot, his steps halted. Long Haochen's body stumbled as if he had lost his balance.

Lin Jialu's face revealed a smile filled with self-confidence as she chanted another incantation, and a thin blue light enveloped her. That was the 2nd step mage spell Ice Mantle.

But her smiling face quickly became filled with surprise.

Long Haochen had arrived before her in an instant, and, suddenly, a golden radiance appeared below her with a cracking sound. A layer of the ground was unexpectedly frozen below his foot before being broken by his foot stepping on it, letting his body return to a steady state. He resumed his charge, but his speed, surprisingly, was not dramatically reduced. Instead, it had tremendously increased. His hand began executing a Thorny Charge, as he prepared to pierce the cover of ice with a stab.

A 3rd step Knight!

Regardless of whether it was Lin Jialu or the two retainers, all of them became flabbergasted. To be able to use the Sacred Light element internal spiritual energy was something only a 3rd step knight was capable of. Was that youth, who looked like he was probably not even fifteen yet, unexpectedly already a 3rd step knight?

Puu! Puu! Puu!

A series of sounds of something hitting ice echoed.

Although Lin Jialu was extremely frightened, she did not stop her actions.

Nonetheless, an Ice Ring made of white colored ice appeared all around her body and Long Haochen's formidable thrust merely pushed her back.

The Ice element spell, Ice Ring was the spell most commonly used by Ice Mages to deal with close combat vocations. Even without using her magic wand, Lin Jialu could still cast the spell swiftly and consistently; that made her well suited to her title as a genius.

Long Haochen, who was just released, became startled. He realized how different a fight against a mage was compared to fighting a warrior.

At that very moment, ten icicles rose at lightning speed by his side, blocking his route from the left as well as the right. The frozen air made Long Haochen feel a chill and he felt as if the speed of his internal spiritual energy had slowed somewhat.

Lin Jialu's fort  was her calm mind. She was almost equal to Li Xin. What she didn't know was that, although this little fellow was a 3rd step knight, she would not necessarily be a match for a person as gifted by the Heavens as him.

From the point of view of Li Xin, who was standing at the other side, it appeared that while being caged, Long Haochen would definitely be restrained by ice magic, thus reducing his combat ability. And, even before he could escape from the surrounding barrier, Lin Jialu would have probably beaten him.

However, at that moment, Long Haochen had already jumped up.

"This silly kid." Li Xin could not help but whisper. While dueling a mage like her, why did you jump up while you are still within her range? Isn't that making yourself a perfect target?

Lin Jialu's purpose when casting Ice Cage was to make him jump up. It seemed that he really didn't have any experience in combat against a mage.

Seeing the boy predictably leap into the air, Lin Jialu showed a knowing smile. She started bombarding Long Haochen with Ice Balls aimed straight at him. She was already going easy on him. Had she not used the first rank Ice Ball but the second rank Ice Edge or Ice Cone instead, the attack would have been even more powerful.

However, the next move of Long Haochen surprised the audience once again.

Long Haochen's body emitted a pale-gold aura, which spiraled upwards. He held the heavy sword with both hands to lift it over his head, setting off a golden aura that added a kind of divine feeling to his already handsome face.

Every single Ice Ball that was flying at Long Haochen disappeared around 33 centimeters away from him. Even the cold air that each of them released was unable to pass through that golden aura.

Lightning Cut, two words instantly popped up in Lin Jialu's mind. Her smile immediately froze. She then cast another Ice Mantle without hesitation.

Long Haochen dropped down from the sky. Brandishing his heavy sword, the pale-gold aura suddenly became more intense, forming a 33-centimeter-wide light-edged blade around the sword.

Lightning Cut was a 3rd step knight skill practised by both Retribution Knights and Guardian Knights and consumed 50 units of spiritual energy. By withdrawing holy power from the body, one can condense it into a blade to attack enemies. The attacking distance and power are proportional to one's own level of spiritual energy.

This was the first long-range offensive ability relying on internal

spiritual energy that knights could use. Even though it consumed the same amount of spiritual energy as Shining Solar Strike, its power was a lot less comparatively. The reason was that Lightning Cut was a long-range ability that could be used as both an offensive and a defensive measure.

Even so, only Genuine Knights who were 5th ranked or above could use Lightning Cut to its full potential. As a knight ranked up and had more spiritual energy, the power of the skill also increased.

The golden blade of light collided against the icy shield as a snapping sound rang out. The Ice Mantle instantly broke, and, simultaneously, the blade of light emitted by Lightning Cut also disappeared.

Long Haochen's actions did not stop at that. As soon as he landed on both of his feet, he immediately initiated another charge towards Lin Jialu.

As she realized that her Ice Mantle had managed to block the Lightning Cut, Lin Jialu felt relieved. She thought to herself, Fortunately, this kid's spiritual energy level isn't that high. Otherwise, it would have been hard to stop that one attack. I've underestimated him!

However, as she blocked the Lightning Cut, another smile appeared on Lin Jialu's face; she cast Ice Ring once more to stop Long Haochen's assault.

Since Lightning Cut consumed 50 units of spiritual energy, it was obvious that this kid did not have much internal spiritual energy left, so as long as she could stop another one of his attacks, his loss was confirmed.

The Ice Ring appeared in a blink and Long Haochen's stance suddenly changed. His right foot stomped strongly on the ground, interrupting his charge and stopping him, as he lifted the heavy sword up in front of him.

Ice Ring split around Long Haochen; however, he was not pushed back this time. A pale gold-colored layer of light now encompassed his entire body.

The heavy sword arrived, gently stopping right above Lin Jialu's shoulder.

Hiss!

Lin Jialu's retainers both gasped almost at the same time. Lin Jialu, who was prepared to continue, also froze in space.

Although Long Haochen's heavy sword did not hit her, she could clearly feel the touch of its divine aura.

"Sister Lin, please give in." Long Haochen took a few steps back, standing there with his sword withdrawn.

"Impossible... This is simply impossible! Even 4th step vocations would be pushed back when facing against my Ice Ring!" Lin Jialu had a look of disbelief on her face. Looking at Long Haochen, her smile from before had changed into a shocked look filled with incomprehension.

I... Have lost?

Being Haoyue City's genius female mage and losing to someone so much younger than her, how could she continue to live without feeling ashamed?

Even though she had been lenient to the boy by not using any magical equipment, she had lost even with the strength of a 6th rank 3rd step mage.

It wasn't only Lin Jialu herself; even Li Xin was puzzled at what had happened. However, because she knew more about Long Haochen than Lin Jialu did, after a brief moment, she had come to an understanding.

Divine Obstruction! As soon as Lin Jialu used Ice Ring for the second time, Long Haochen had used Divine Obstruction!

Chapter 33: Radiant Shield (III)

Compared to what he could do a year and a half ago, it was safe to say that, now Long Hao Chen had acquired a higher degree of technical proficiency in [Divine Obstruction]. In fact, even though [Divine Obstruction] was a powerful skill, perfect timing was crucial when using it. His use of the skill only lasted for a brief moment, therefore, it was necessary for him to predict accurately the opponent's move to effectively use it.

By using [Divine Obstruction], Long Hao Chen was able to resist [Ice Ring] hence was not knocked back. Lin Jia Lu never expected such a move, ultimately leading to his victory.

If Lin Jia Lu had decided to use her magic equipment, or if she had been more careful from the beginning, Long Hao Chen could hardly be considered as an opponent, considering that he had been depleted of a lot of internal spiritual energy to fuse with the Spiritual Stove. However, Long Hao Chen's young age confused her, plus he was using the heavenly countering spell, [Divine Obstruction], so Lin Jia Lu met a tragic end.

Li Xin was shocked at how well Long Hao Chen had used [Divine Obstruction], but what she did not know was that it was the result of his extreme daily training with Long Xing Yu. Thanks to the daily two hours of combat exercises, Long Hao Chen could already use intuitively the [Divine Obstruction], and predict perfectly the opponent's moves based only on his intuition.

Looking at the blank and troubled Lin Jia Lu, Li Xin broke out of her initial shock and laughed: "What are you calling impossible? You know nothing. If you can't even beat my Lil' Bro, don't even think of challenging me. Come on, you lost, so fulfill your end of the deal."

"Haha, that felt good." While speaking, Li Xin grabbed Long Hao Chen and gave him a forceful kiss on the cheek.

Long Hao Chen was stupefied; the next moment, his handsome face suddenly flushed with embarrassment.

Li Xin couldn't help but smile, "Lil' Bro, you look so cute when you are embarrassed. Though, you look cooler when you are fighting. Let's get back to eating."

With Lin Jia Lu's retreat, Li Xin was in a good mood. Together with Long Hao Chen, they had a scrumptious meal. They ordered a lot of food, but the portion she ate was unexpectedly a lot bigger than Long Hao Chen's, even though he was still growing. The two of them unexpectedly almost finished everything on the table by themselves.

"Woah~, I'm so full, Lil' Bro. If we have dinner together every day from now on, Sis will definitely gain weight."

Long Hao Chen had already recovered from being so suddenly kissed. The warm feeling when her cold, soft lips touched his cheeks only lasted for a little moment, but this feeling was deeply imprinted in his mind. After his parents left, that was the first time he felt the warmth of having a family. It is so nice to have a Big Sister.

"Big Sister, what exactly happened that caused such friction between you and Sister Lin?" Long Hao Chen curiously asked.

Li Xin grunted and said: "I get pissed off just at mentioning it. Originally, when we were young, we did not talk to each other much, but we were still good friends. About five years ago, we fell in love with the same guy, someone from the Mage Temple. He was not as handsome as you, but he was still good-looking. He was also talented. At that time, Lin Jia Lu and I were still good friends. When I knew that she also liked him, I was ready to give up on him. However, that guy came up to me, saying that Lin Jia Lu used her family's power to force him to be with her and that for his future advancement, he had to yield. Since then, I have yet to see that guy again."

“I then went to ask Lin Jia Lu about it, and we had a quarrel. She said that I was a liar, that I was despicable and all other sorts of things. The more we quarreled, the angrier we became; then we came to blows. Since then, our relationship has become like what you just saw. Who is the despicable one now...”

Long Hao Chen said unconfidently: “It might just have been a misunderstanding. Big Sister, I think you should talk it out with Sister Lin one more time.”

Li Xin said: “Misunderstanding? That guy has disappeared. She must have harmed him. Well, let’s not talk about that anymore, remembering these things of the past will only annoy me more. However, this Lin Jia Lu, although annoying, always keeps her word. Haha, we won big time. The Radiant Light Shield will be a very suitable shield for you to use, even after you’ll reach the fifth step as a knight.”

“Are you giving it to me?” Long Hao Chen seemed a bit surprised.

Li Xin said: “Of course it’s for you! Why else would I make a bet with her? I don’t need her things. Didn’t you want to be a Guardian Knight? What kind of Guardian Knight does not have a shield? There aren’t many decent shields you can get from Hao Yue Hall. However, with this Radiant Light Shield, your defense will be improved by a huge margin.”

Long Hao Chen suddenly felt as if his heart was bursting with warmth. He really did not expect that the fact she made him fight and the bet she made against Lin Jia Lu were to get him a decent shield.

Li Xin sighed, playing with her fingers, somewhat embarrassed: “It is all my dad’s fault. He refused to give me more pocket money. Otherwise, I would directly have bought you new equipment. Why would I have to use this method?”

“Big Sister –” Long Hao Chen let out a soft cry.

Li Xin smiled, “What’s wrong? Why have your eyes become red? Ahhh, you are such a sentimental little boy! Come on, let’s go back. You have to start school tomorrow, and Big Sis still has some advice to give you.”

When they arrived at the entrance of the Knight Hall, there was a middle-aged man who was respectfully waiting for them there with a huge bag in his hand.

“Miss Xin’er, my Lady ordered me to bring this to you.” The middle-aged man gave the bag to Li Xin, then turned away.

Looking at the man leaving, Li Xin laughed: “I can’t imagine how regretful Lin Jia Lu must have felt about this. It looks like she does not have much more pocket money than I do.”

After returning to Hao Yue Hall, Li Xin followed Long Hao Chen directly to his room.

“Lil’ Bro! Look! It is the Radiant Shield.” Li Xin spoke while excitedly opening the bag in her hand, then gave the shield to Long Hao Chen.

It was a circular shield about 0.83 meters (two chis, five cuns) in diameter, a medium-sized shield. The whole shield was dark silver colored, making it look somewhat ancient.

At the center of the shield, there was a round gem about the size of an egg of pigeon. The gem gave off a pale gold color. Using the crystal as the center, a sun was engraved on the shield with patterns fanning out all the way to the edge.

It appeared that the shield was not too heavy. There was, however, a pure light aura emitting from it.

“Quickly try it on.” Li Xin handed the Radiant Light Shield to Long Hao Chen.

Long Hao Chen did not decline. When he recognized someone as one of his loved ones, he would never refuse a present from them; at the same time, he would be willing to give his all for them.

Having received the Radiant Shield, Long Hao Chen realized that, behind the shield, there was not just a simple handle; it was something similar to a gauntlet. He slid his left hand in. The gauntlet seemed to be a bit too big, covering his entire arm. His hand reached all the way inside the gauntlet, just enough to grab a metal handle that was inside the gauntlet. As a result, the shield completely covered his arm. One could say it fit him in general. The shield, and especially that faint light aura that it released, gave a very comfortable feeling to Long Hao Chen.

Li Xin came forward to adjust the gauntlet on his arm. Inside the gauntlet, there were a series of buttons to adjust its size so that it would fit Long Hao Chen's arm better. After adjusting, it seemed as if Long Hao Chen and his shield were a unified entity when Long Hao Chen waved his arm again.

The Radiant Shield was not that heavy. After gently waving his arm and feeling its weightless nature, Long Hao Chen immediately fell in love with it.

Li Xin said: "The Radiant Shield, by itself, can defend against direct attacks of opponents with a spiritual energy level lower than 300. After pouring inside your internal spiritual energy, it will be enhanced. The light aura coming from the shield can protect you against negative effects from most magic spells, for example, the freezing effect of Lin Jia Lu's ice magic. It is also very powerful when combined with some of a Guardian Knight's skills. Look at this gem, it is a Harmony Crystal. With such a crystal, as long as the shield does not take too much damage, it should be able to repair itself. This shield might not be the strongest shield under the fifth rank, but it is definitely the most practical magic shield."

Chapter 34: Radiant Light Shield (IV)

Long Hao Chen tried to transfer some of his spiritual energy into the shield and at that moment, the sun pattern in the center of the Radiant Shield shone brightly, making the entire exterior of the shield emit a thin gold radiance, but this light aura didn't consume much of Long Hao Chen's spiritual energy.

"Big Sister, thank you so much." said Long Hao Chen from the bottom of his heart.

Li Xin smiled: "What are you thanking me for? You are the one who won this. Okay, I'll have to tell you about what you will study in our Hall."

After staying for an hour in Long Hao Chen's room, she finally left. After her introduction, Long Hao Chen's knowledge about Hao Yue Hall improved drastically.

Bright morning.

After Long Hao Chen took a simple bath, he ate the breakfast that was brought to him; only Knights were treated with such a preferential treatment, on the other hand, Standard Knights had to go to the dining room. After having his breakfast, he went to the Knight Main Hall on this early morning.

The Knight Main Hall consisted of two floors, it was not too big at all. The first floor was used for the Guardian Knights' lectures and the second was for the Retribution Knights.

When Long Hao Chen came, the classroom where lessons were supposed to be given to Guardian Knights was absolutely empty. He put down his heavy sword and his Radiant Shield in a corner of the room and calmly waited.

Other knights began to arrive one after another to the classroom, and in a little while the room became completely full. Long Hao Chen counted; there were about 80 knights around him, but there

were a lot more Guardian Knights than Retribution Knights.

Long Hao Chen was sitting in the corner, but he still paid attention, just like the others who focused their attention on him. These numerous knights all wore imposing attire and couldn't help but look at him with a strange eye. It was because he was much younger than them.

“Take a look, who's this little guy? Wow, that can't be a Radiant Shield? His family must be quite rich!”

“But one shouldn't be able to come to our Knight Main Hall just because he has money, can it be that he's the relative of an instructor?”

“It's hard to say. I heard yesterday from my little brother who was on duty that our Hell Rose brought a good-looking guy. Probably this little fellow here. Only, how can the Hall Master permit him to take class together with us?”

A large young knight came in front of Long Hao Chen and gently asked: “Little brother, aren't you at the wrong place? This is the Knight Main Hall, the classroom of the Standard Knights is on the other side.” From these knights' point of view, Long Hao Chen could be considered a great genius if he was already a Standard Knight at this age.

Long Hao Chen got up hurriedly and politely turned towards his side, performing a knight salute: “Hello, I came to the Knight Main Hall's class. My name is Long Hao Chen.”

As the knight looked like she still had something to say, a hoarse voice could be heard: “Class will now begin.”

The knights were quite frightened, and as if they feared this hoarse voiced master, they hurried to turn away and get back to their seats.

Long Hao Chen's gaze turned to the direction of the speaker; there stood a tall and thin middle-aged man with a circular shield

on his back. This middle aged man also looked at him.

“Do you have a problem?” The middle aged man calmly asked.

Long Hao Chen quickly shook his head.

The middle aged man continued in a serious and powerful voice: “Then why are you standing there?”

Long Hao Chen was startled by this unexpectedly loud voice and hurried to sit down.

The whole classroom was completely silent; each of the knight looked respectfully at the middle-aged man. The gazes directed toward him seemed to be completely filled with fear.

“Little newcomer, I am Ye Hua, the main Instructor of Hao Yue Hall. I don’t care how much of a genius you are, but as soon as you have arrived here, you have become an ordinary knight. If you cannot reach my expectations, I will chase you back to the Standard Knights’ place. Understood?”

“Yes.” Long Hao Chen stood up once more and performed another authentic knight salute in the direction of the head Instructor.

An ordinary knight? These few words created an uproar among the knights in the room. This youth, who was not even 15 yet, was a Knight? Wasn’t this a mistake?

“Everyone, stand up!” Ye Hua suddenly shouted.

As a reaction to this sharp voice, all the knights rapidly got up.

Ye Hua coldly looked at them, “Do you have so few prospects? What did I teach you? What is the most important thing to become a Guardian Knight?”

“To stay cool-headed in whichever circumstances.” The crowd of knights loudly agreed.

“And what have you accomplished up till now?” Ye Hua’s gaze intimidated these knights.

This time, no one answered.

Ye Hua said: “Put on your heavy equipment and run 50 laps around the training field. Otherwise, you won’t remember this lesson. Right now, hurry up.”

“Yes.” No one dared refute. The Guardian Knights started trotting one by one out of the classroom.

Long Hao Chen was also quite intimidated. He did not expect this Head Instructor to be so hot-blooded.

“Why on Earth are you standing still? Aren’t you a part of their group? Go together with them.” Ye Hua pointed angrily at Long Hao Chen as he shouted.

“Yes.”

The equipment warehouse was in the basement of the Knight Hall. After Long Hao Chen received a set, he couldn’t help but feel like crying. Since he was too young, his body was far from having grown enough. The heavy armor that was intended to protect one’s whole body was heavier than 50 kilograms (100 Jin) and could not be worn because his body was too small. He could only use it to cover his body, wrapping it from above, and he still had to use both his hands to carry the armor from both sides if he did not want it to fall down.

A metallic ringing sound resounded from afar. The training field was circular and 666 meters (200 Zhang) long. In addition to the requirement of having to wear heavy equipment, even for these 200th external spiritual energy level knights, this was not an easy feat.

Ye Hua who stood in the middle of the training ground, looked at him running, “Don’t fall behind. The ones who drop out will have to run fifty more laps. Long Hao Chen, come this way.” He obviously knew his name from Nalan Shu.

“Yes, Instructor.” Long Hao Chen dragged the heavy armor as he

ran in front of Ye Hua.

Ye Hua said lightly: “You are a newcomer, so you still don’t know the rule here: I am going to give you a chance and as long as your attacks can push me back, you won’t have to run together with them.”

Hearing these words, the knights who were running in circle clearly hastened their pace, no one dared to look towards Ye Hua. A lot of looks, however, were filled with pity.

“Yes.” Long Hao Chen quickly stripped off the heavy armor on his body; he had his shield on his left hand and his sword on his right hand. He had a first-class practical combat experience, had experimented enough pressuring situations, and could utilize his internal spiritual energy. The key point was that he did not fear losing. At worst, he would just have to run laps.

Ye Hua picked up his shield and, without paying attention to the impressive Radiant Shield that Long Hao Chen was using, he coldly said: “You can attack first.”

“Yes, please give me pointers, Instructor.” The left-handed shield and right-handed sword didn’t seem to suit Long Hao Chen too much. After all, it was the first time he was using a shield and that gave him an awkward sensation. Still, from his point of view, having a shield was better than being empty handed. Long Hao Chen had decided before coming to Hao Yue Hall that he would not rashly fight using dual swords against people. Only when he would be practicing by himself would he use the abilities of Retribution Knights.

Long Xing Yu gave his son a very important practical pointer when training him: he had to be careful never to let the opponent realize his weaknesses.

He rushed with a neat charge; Long Hao Chen’s pace raised and, just like a little leopard, he rushed towards Ye Hua. His speed wasn’t the best, but his steps were quite steady. His pupils locked

onto Ye Hua's body and, using his first class observation skills, he analyzed the Instructor.

Last evening, if we put aside the fact that Lin Jia Lu went easy on him, the most important assets that enabled Long Hao Chen to achieve victory were his excellent judgement and calculation capabilities that were both built with his excellent mental strength.

Chapter 35:Asura Ye (I)

Looking at Long Hao Chen who was facing him, Ye Hua nodded to himself, This kid's assault has not only met the standard, but he has also an excellent attack rhythm; he is not going all-out, and this way, his attack power is a little weaker, but there are more patterns in his attacks.

While shifting his body, taking advantage of the power coming from his assault, Long Hao Chen pointed the heavy sword in his hand forward; he then made an ordinary thrust. A silver-white aura seemed to have appeared almost instantly on the heavy sword and at the same time, a [Pure White Edge] was launched.

When the heavy sword was only less than a third of a meter (1 chi) away, Ye Hua moved. His movement was very swift; right hand behind his back, he lift the shield on his left hand to block in front. He did not directly block Long Hao Chen's heavy sword; instead, he slightly tilted his shield on contact.

Dang~, Long Hao Chen only felt that the sword grazed the shield, there was no direct hit. His sword just slipped past the tilted shield. The [Pure White Edge] grazed the face of Ye Hua's shield, bringing out a series of sparks. The next moment, he saw a big shield closing on his face.

Bang, Long Hao Chen was knocked flying back seven or eight meters away and he fell terribly on the ground.

During this whole process, he protected his body by using the Radiant Shield just in time before being sent flying away in the next instant.

Before standing up, Long Hao Chen started crawling on the ground, with a completely stupefied face.

Ye Hua wasn't holding any weapon, he only had a shield, but this shield was enough to end the battle and beat him.

“Trash.” Ye Hua coldly spit out this word.

Long Hao Chen’s gaze was frozen; as soon as he picked up his heavy sword, he saluted once more Ye Hua, “Instructor, please give me your guidance. ” After saluting him, he charged once more.

The knights who were running in circles were all peeping at this exchange of blows, and seeing Long Hao Chen get up after being beaten up like that, they could only look at each other in blank dismay.

“This little fellow is quite capable! It is the first time that I see someone in our Hall who dares challenge Asura Ye twice in a row.”

How could they know how cruel his training with Long Xing Yu was? Falling down once was nothing to him. In addition, it was his Radiant Shield that had absorbed most of the strike’s power. Long Xing Yu had trained him to become more and more courageous every time the boy tasted defeat; he was taught to learn from each defeat and find ways to improve himself.

Long Hao Chen charged once more, his steps briefly adjusting; his speed had clearly lowered, but his steps were even steadier. This time, the skill he used was not [Thorny Charge], but [Lightning Thrust].

With a flash of golden light, the internal spiritual energy from his Sacred Awakening burst out. The difference between [Lightning Thrust] and [Thorny Charge] was that [Thorny Charge] was a simple charge forward, whereas [Lightning Thrust] could easily change directions.

Internal spiritual energy? Third step? The knights who were running in circles were flabbergasted.

There wasn’t any change on Ye Hua’s face. He moved as before, his shield preparing to parry him the same way as before. The heavy sword sent out a crisp sound as it came in contact with the

shield but, this time, it was retrieved by Long Hao Chen after having just been in contact for a short moment and his balance hadn't been lost yet.

However, the shield on Ye Hua's hand was drawing nearer to Long Hao Chen. It was just like his previous move, a bump.

Lunge and shield block; Long Hao Chen raised his Radiant Shield, firmly blocking in front of him.

Bang, Long Hao Chen's body was sent flying away once more. This time, he fell much more brutally than the last instance, panting for a few seconds before standing up once more.

"Do you know why I could beat you just now?" asked Ye Hua in a desolate tone.

Long Hao Chen's brows wrinkled as he answered without hesitation: "Because you have trained much more than me."

Ye Hua nodded: "Correct. And do you believe that it is unfair that I am relying on my internal spiritual energy to fight you, even if I am not using any skills?"

Long Hao Chen nodded once more after hesitating for a little moment.

Ye Hua snorted, full of disdain: "Fool. On the battlefield, if you meet a foe that is much more powerful than you, will you complain like that? If so, you will only be able to complain in Hell. Facing a much more powerful foe, what you need to do is to surpass your limits to make up for the gap. Defeat the opponent by all means, even unfair ones, in order to defend yourself."

Long Hao Chen briefly pondered before showing a determined look on his talented face and strongly nodded: "I understand, thank you Instructor." As he said that, he faced him once more, performing a salute, "Please give me your guidance, Instructor."

Ye Hua answered in a calm voice: "Do you really understand? Come at me once more. This time, I will be using even more

strength to push you down.”

“Please give me your guidance, Instructor.” Long Hao Chen shouted. His gaze was brimming with a stubborn and persistent radiance in contrast with his cute appearance and pretty face.

“Come.” As before, Ye Hua showed a cold expression.

Charge and jump. This time, Long Hao Chen had leapt very high, and his heavy sword which shone brightly moved towards Ye Hua.

“Fool.” Ye Hua gave an angry look to Long Hao Chen. Knowing that the opponent is far stronger yet jumping into air? Wasn’t this the same as seeking for death?

But the anger that filled Ye Hua’s eyes quickly became surprise instead. Because at this moment, Long Hao Chen who had jumped, had unexpectedly arrived above Ye Hua’s head, the heavy sword in his hand targeting Ye Hua’s back. But it looked like Long Hao Chen had already lost his balance.

Still, Ye Hua couldn’t possibly expect his next move because he was looking at Long Hao Chen’s eyes. The eyes of Long Hao Chen who had just failed naturally did have a look that was as inflexible and firm as before.

Making a half turn, Ye Hua’s shield swept in the air.

Right then, Long Hao Chen who looked as if he had lost his balance a while ago suddenly moved. The shallow light that was, till then, emitted by the heavy sword in his hand suddenly vanished. The Radiant Shield was placed in front of his chest, and he made a little curving movement in the sky.

The spiritual energy issued by Ye Hua was enormous; his shield looked as if it had changed color, even though he moved it slowly, he could easily manage to block Long Hao Chen. His whole body had rotated at the same time.

Puff, the heavy sword was pushed into the ground as an imposing light appeared around Long Hao Chen.

[Heavenly Battle Array], a third step knight skill.

Ye Hua didn't imagine that Long Hao Chen would use such a method at close quarters. His body was strong and flexible enough to forcibly change his stature while still in the air. At the same time, he raised his shield. A spiritual energy of the level of this [Heavenly Battle Array] couldn't possibly harm Ye Hua, but the impact was on his shield arm, making him unable to adjust his shield's position. He also let out a huge burst of gold color energy from his body to form a protective aura.

Using the heavy sword buried into the ground, Long Hao Chen completed the [Heavenly Battle Array]. At the same time, he stabilized his body and used the Radiant Shield on his left hand to make a horizontal strike. With a burst of bright golden light coming from the Radiant Shield, the brightest one used since he first attacked, Long Hao Chen struck at Ye Hua's waist.

Pa——

Ye Hua's right hand that was behind his back all this time finally moved, grabbing the Radiant Shield, but the surprise look in his eye suddenly became that of astonishment.

A dazzling golden light came from his hand. He also released a body-protecting spiritual energy. However, upon the impact with the golden light, he was pushed back half a step momentarily.

Long Hao Chen was also surprised; he had done everything he could. The burst of light coming from Radiant Shield was [Shining Sunlight Strike], a fourth step knight skill. This was also his strongest skill so far. Because the shield's edge was not sharp, Ye Hua could grab it with a single hand; this showed how big the gap between them was.

Chapter 36: Asura Ye(II)

Ye Hua's right hand was directed forward; but Long Hao Chen had moved three, four steps back.

“Okay, you won. I underestimated you because of your outward appearance. This was my fatal mistake. Thank you for giving me this lesson.” Saying this, Ye Hua's right hand formed a fist against his chest as he performed a knight salute, facing Long Hao Chen.

Long Hao Chen made haste to return the salute, “Thank you for your guidance, Instructor.”

The knights who were still running had completely stopped, eyes wide and mouths opened on the side. Even though they did not see how Ye Hua lost, they were still surprised at the scene, especially when they actually saw this Asura Ye salute a student. It was weird, as inconceivable as seeing a cat kissing a mouse.

“What are you doing?! Taking your Father's words as farts?! Go back to running, fifty more laps!” In the next instant, the Asura Ye as they remembered him deep inside reappeared. His threatening roars frightened the other knights who all made haste to resume their laps.

“You, come with me.” Asura Ye said this sentence in a cold voice before turning back and starting to walk.

Long Hao Chen hurried to follow him, entering in the Knight Main Hall after Ye Hua.

A huge person seemed like he had been waiting there for a long time. Watching them come in, he smiled and asked: “How was it? Just like I said, right?”

“Nalan Hall Master. ” Long Hao Chen said in a somewhat surprised tone.

The huge person present there was Nalan Shu. This time, he appeared like an old fox, showing his beaming face to Long Hao

Chen and Asura Ye.

“Fat bastard.” Asura Ye coldly let out a loud Hmph.

Nalan Shu laughed and said: “Zombie face, this time we are at Hao Yue Hall, but are going to stay so proud. By the way, I forgot to tell you about his age. Hao Chen, are you twelve yet?”

Long Hao Chen shook his head and answered: “I’ll be twelve years old in four months.”

“What?” As the originally cold Ye Hua heard him, some changes finally appeared on his face, it looked as if his expression revealed shock and fanaticism at the same time.

“Not twelve yet? You are not twelve yet and you can still use [Shining Solar Strike]?” How could he not have noticed the shield skill that Long Hao Chen had previously used.

Nalan Shu proudly answered: “Didn’t I tell you that a peerless genius came to our Hao Yue Hall? Do you understand the word ‘peerless’? Idiot.”

Ye Hua looked as though he didn’t notice Nalan Shu’s taunt at all. His ice-cold face was incredibly serious, as he fixed his gaze at Long Hao Chen: “Since you can use both [Shining Solar Strike] and [Heavenly Battle Array], then all you have studied up to now were Retribution Knight abilities right? Why didn’t you continue practicing as a Retribution Knight, but instead chose to be a Guardian Knight?”

Long Hao Chen replied without hesitation: “I hope to have the ability to protect everything I want to protect. After all, Father told me that the power of a single person was limited. When fighting against the demon race to protect our homeland, a Guardian Knight has a much more important role than a Retribution Knight.”

Ye Hua’s eyes lit up; he smiled, slowly nodding and said: “Good, starting from today, you will follow me alone in learning the

Guardian Knight skills. Without my permission, you are not to duel with other knights. Do you understand?”

Long Hao Chen was stunned for a moment, then said: “But if I have not enough real combat experience, will that not affect my training?”

Ye Hua coldly hummed, “Say that after you’ve beaten me. Go to the practicing field and wait there for me.”

“Yes.” Long Hao Chen replied with a somewhat puzzled expression, then after saluting Nalan Shu, he turned around and left.

Looking at him leave, Ye Hua gradually looked fired up, “Fat bastard, where did you find such a treasure?”

Nalan Shu triumphantly said: “Zombie face, did you get served yet? You did not believe me when I told you all of this yesterday, do you believe it now? With this little guy joining us, in the future, our Hao Yue Branch Hall will shine, and maybe its status will be promoted to that of Chief Hall. You will also be able to show those who scorned you how powerful your disciple is.”

Ye Hua simply ignored Nalan Shu’s showing off. He pondered for a moment and said: “Do you know how high the innate internal spiritual energy of this little kid is?”

Nalan Shu nodded and answered: “I don’t know. I tried to ask him, but he wasn’t willing to tell me. However, I tested his spiritual energy and it was at the 268th level. Thus, it looks like this little fellow’s innate internal spiritual energy cannot be lower than 40; it may be even higher. But why are you asking this? Didn’t you hate to deal with those with a high innate internal spiritual energy?”

Ye Hua’s ice-cold face suddenly took a somewhat unusual expression, “If the inborn could be changed, the current me wouldn’t be limited to the level of a mere Earth Knight. If my

innate internal spiritual energy was 50, I would inevitably become a Divine Knight. However, the abominable Heavens that decided to give me wisdom and understanding deprived me of inborn capability.”

Nalan Shu’s plump palms patted his shoulder: “Okay okay, don’t blame everyone and everything but yourself. Didn’t the arrival of this child, Hao Chen, give you an occasion to put your talent to use? Even if you can’t aim to sit at that place, your disciple can. Isn’t it the same?”

Ye Hua took a deep breath, excitement appeared on his cold face that gradually became redder, “Thank you fat bastard.”

Nalan Shu laughed: “You’re still calling me this way? Originally, if it wasn’t for you, I would have left these 150 kilograms (300 Jin) of fat meat on the battlefield.”

Ye Hua said in a little voice: “You will have to help me take care of a few matters. First, from today onwards, except for carrying the knight examinations, I want to be independant from the other Alliance obligations, apart from the examinations. Second, block the news; I especially want the news about this child’s age to be tightly hidden. In particular, we cannot let other hall masters or branch halls know. During the Magical Selection and Tournament that is coming in two years, I want to shock and amaze the world with this child’s feat.”

“Okay, no problem. Only, Zombie Face, I don’t want you to be too impatient and eager on your quest for success. Regardless of the circumstances, you cannot harm this child. After all, being excessively enthusiastic will only have the opposite effect.”

Ye Hua said in a thin voice: “This child is stronger than you can imagine. I can see in him my hope, not because of his age and his talent, but because of his perseverance. From the Ten Standards of the Knight, he has at least already grasped courage and perseverance. Plus, he is a kid who never admits defeat, and

moreover, he has a different sense of observation and an imagination beyond limits. Although a duration of two years and a half is brief, I believe that he will shock the whole temple as much as he did me.”

Nalan Shu faintly nodded: “I still have the same words, don’t be too impatient and eager. I can not tell you of this kid’s origin but, in the near future, he will be able to become our humanity’s new hope.”

Ye Hua laughed, a smile was finally drawn on his ice-cold face; it was honestly uglier than his crying face, but Nalan Shu could be sure that he was smiling. On his face, a smiling expression that did not appear for almost ten years was finally revealed.

As he was laughing, Ye Hua left, and his voice was resounding one last time in Nalan Shu’s ears, “I treasure this kid even more than you. He is the continuation of my dream.”

Long Hao Chen had no way of knowing that after being freed from the tiger’s den that was his father’s training, he was going to enter in the clutches of a biased devil Asura.

From that day onwards, the head instructor of Knight Temple Hao Yue Hall, known with the nickname of Asura, Ye Hua, finally quitted his position of chief instructor Knight Main Hall, letting Nalan Shu personally take over this job of head instructor. And the short-lived legend of the juvenile genius knight also disappeared, together with him.

Chapter 37: Asura Ye (III)

A lot of people conjectured that this young knight was probably the descendant of a big shot, but got bullied by Ye Hua. And this important figure became furious and fired Asura Ye from his position. Either way, it was a joyful thing for the knights that they finally did not have to see that zombie face everyday anymore, nor undergo that hell-like training anymore.

Time passed day by day and even the person Long Hao Chen was the most familiar with, Li Xin, did not see him often. All she knew was that he was receiving Asura Ye's guidance. Even when they saw each other, Long Hao Chen avoided to disclose the training method used by Asura Ye.

The food served in Hao Yue Hall was pretty good, not to mention that Long Hao Chen himself received special treatment; training improved his physique, he received a sufficient and comfortable nutrition, and as a result, his body grew very quickly. The fact that could surprise anyone was that his face had become even softer and more glamorous.

Two years later.

Hao Yue Branch Hall's examination ground.

Dang, Dang, Dang, weapons were colliding against each other as a sacred atmosphere completely filled the examination ground that was protected by a magical barrier. Its exterior wouldn't be affected either.

Peng —

A figure could be seen. It was knocked back and continuously flew towards a wall more than twenty meters away before slowly falling down.

The figure that was sent flying away had a height of approximately 1.7 meters. It looked quite robust, but at the same

time, very slender. The figure wore a blue-colored attire, had black hair, yellow-colored pupils, bright red-colored lips, its eyebrows looked extremely soft, and it had white delicate skin where the slightest pore could not be found. If this figure were to crossdress, its appearance would absolutely look natural.

“Long Hao Chen, get up! You trash, what did I teach you?! When your opponent is far stronger than you, a direct confrontation is the most unsuitable choice. Don’t tell me that because I just said you were a wimp, you cannot keep going anymore? A Guardian Knight’s most important trait is supposed to be patience! Once more!”

“Yes.”

This youth who was sent flying was, undoubtedly, trained individually by Asura Ye.

The astonishing growth he underwent during these two years was due to training: Asura Ye had no way to compare with Long Hao Chen’s father but, while training under his guidance, Long Hao Chen could faintly feel that this Asura Teacher was different from his father in a lot of ways, especially regarding their field of specialization; regarding understanding and mastery of the skills, he was not as good as his father at all, but he lent priority to practice.

Of course, following Ye Asura’s guidance was not a joyful thing at all. Asura Ye’s temperament regarding training made him worthy of his title. He always looked quite discontent, immediately beating him up nonstop.

Regarding Long Hao Chen’s combat experience, Asura Ye was fully satisfied.

The kind of combat training that Asura Ye gave to Long Hao Chen was different from the one given by Long Xing Yu. Long Xing Yu did not use spiritual energy at all, training his skills by relying only on technique to attack Long Hao Chen.

However, this was not the case with Asura Ye. He seemed as if he was a teacher from hell, going all out at every fight, at best showing little mercy. However, he would still never harm Long Hao Chen's bones and muscles for real, a typical case of the strong bullying the weak.

In such an oppressive environment, Long Hao Chen's speed of growth was astonishing. Everyday, he would end up completely worn out before seated meditation training, but his body's potential was coming out little by little.

Nonetheless, the gap between this master and disciple was really too big: a mere two years couldn't possibly make up for it despite the following cultivation training that happened daily. Even though Long Hao Chen's speed of cultivation was gradually becoming faster and faster, the enormous gap between him and Asura Ye was still present.

In fact, Genuine Knights who want to reach the tenth rank are required to cultivate their spiritual energy from the 201th to the 500th level; but for Earth Knights, the requirements extend from the 2000th to the 4000th. The disparity between the two steps is close to being tenfold and this applies to any vocation. The reason for this disparity is that as the step grows higher, the difficulty to grow in ranking increases tremendously.

For example, Long Hao Chen's father, the Divine Knight Long Xing Yu, had a 9th step vocation's spiritual energy level of at least 10,000.

“Dang-.”

“Hum? Time is up. ”

Two successive colliding sounds resounded practically at the same time, and the fight on the examination ground finally came to a halt.

The reason of the two successive sounds was simple, it was that

Long Hao Chen relied on his Radiant Shield to block Ye Hua's heavy sword.

A thick golden aura was emitted by both master and disciple; although Ye Hua said that the time was up, Long Hao Chen did not show the slightest bit of negligence. This teacher frequently surprised Long Hao Chen by his acts, such as sneak attacking.

“For you to be able to block this frontal attack, even if you relied on the Radiant Shield, means that your spiritual energy has already made a breakthrough. Rest for an hour, and then we will test your spiritual energy.” As he said these words, Ye Hua's ice cold face couldn't help but show a smiling expression. Every time Long Hao Chen was sent flying, he would reveal a smiling face intentionally. Of course, Long Hao Chen never treated his expression as a smile, he just thought that his stiff face's muscles were simply suddenly twitching, and apart from the fact his face looked even more ferocious, it had also another effect...

“Yes.”

An hour later.

“Bang—” A dazzling light momentarily brightened the whole examination ground, as if a layer of gold was coating it.

Ye Hua silently nodded: “1,014. Very good, you finally broke through the 1,000s, just like me. I had already stopped my progression at the 5th step 5th rank six years ago. My current spiritual energy level is approximately at the 3,000th level.”

If someone were to see this scene with his own eyes, and knew Long Hao Chen's precise age, he would most likely be so shocked that his jaw would drop.

With each spiritual energy round number level becoming a bottleneck, breaking through the last rank of each step was truly hard. Ye Hua was personally stopped by the bottleneck of the 3,000th level and, for six years, he wasn't able to pass it!

Regardless of his efforts, and his cleverness, he was just unable to breakthrough. However, he clearly remembered that approximately one week ago, he tested Long Hao Chen's spiritual energy and it was still roughly at the 980th level that time. In other words, within a week, his spiritual energy grew and gained thirty levels despite the fact that he just broke through a bottleneck.

"Hao Chen, these few days, when you practiced, did you feel any sluggish feeling?" Ye Hua asked.

Long Hao Chen shook his head: "I didn't. It was as usual."

"Ah –" Ye Hua, who didn't expect this answer, let out a kind of nervous cry.

Long Hao Chen stood on the side unperturbed, looking at him; this was clearly not the first time he got to see this kind of expression on his teacher's face.

After quite a while, Ye Hua's mind recovered to a somewhat stable state, and he coldly said: "Go back and pack up your things, you will go out with me tomorrow."

"Yes." Long Hao Chen put away his Radiant Shield and his heavy sword, respectfully performing a knight salute in front of his teacher before turning around.

As he looked towards Long Hao Chen who was disappearing from the entrance, Ye Hua looked up and loudly bellowed, filled with grief and indignation: "The Heavens have no limit; evil Heavens, you bastards, you are just inhuman! This brat actually did not even feel the bottleneck, what kind of level will these innate gifts make him reach?! In two years, he broke through the 1,014th spiritual energy level from the 268th! Holy shit, didn't these bastards from the Temple say that below 20 years-old, the spiritual energy growth couldn't be very fast, and only after 20 years old would it become truly faster?! Bunch of divine cocks, did you see that?! 13 years-old and has a 1000th spiritual energy level, fuck it, a fourth rank Grand Knight! I'm not a fifth of this kind of genius; I, your

Father, am not even a Radiant knight!”

Long Hao Chen came back to his room, washed his whole body, and changed into clean clothes. He ate a simple meal and was about to head back to practice before a knocking sound could be heard...

Chapter 38: Asura Ye (IV)

“Sis.”

The one who was coming was Li Xin.

Although they could still occasionally meet each other, the way Li Xin looked at Long Hao Chen’s charming appearance had not changed compared to before. She couldn’t help but blankly stare at him, especially since his body still let out a faint fragrance from the bath he just took.

“I just finished my practice and happened to see you return, so I decided to come over and visit you.” Li Xin showed a beautiful smile as she spoke, caressing Long Hao Chen’s wet hair.

Long Hao Chen had a shy reaction: “Sis, you should come inside, I’ll serve you a cup of water.”

“Don’t be so formal. I just came to see you.” Li Xin held Long Hao Chen’s shoulder in a very natural way as she entered. Although Long Hao Chen had already a height of 1.7 meters, Li Xin was 1.75 meters. Her slender thigh, her slim waist, as well as her round butt could excite to death an unimaginable number of people. Only, no one dared to approach her, the woman known as the Hell Rose.

After she patted Long Hao Chen’s shoulder, she started pinching his arms, and said with an amused smile: “It looks like results are finally showing up. You are becoming more and more tempting. Sometimes, Big Sis really wants to eat you. It would be so great if I had a skin as nice as yours!”

Long Hao Chen spoke helplessly: “Sis, here we go again. Do you think that I feel the same way? My appearance was given to me by my parents, I cannot do anything about it. I just resemble Mother, nothing more.”

Li Xin fell into laughter: “Okay okay, I’m stopping, let’s have a proper talk. After half a year, the Magical Hunt and Selection

Competition will take place. I have already broken through the second rank of the step of Grand Knight so, this time, I will work hard to be selected as a participant of the Magical Hunt. I have already told Uncle Nalan to bring you along for your personal experience, to experience this scene. Five years later, you, who are not even 12 years-old yet for the moment, will also be able to advance to the Magical Hunt and Selection. You will already have some first-hand experience at that moment. Only, we still need Asura Ye's agreement. It is better that you tell him yourself. At worst, Uncle Nalan will just order him to let you go, and he will not be able to do anything about that."

Long Hao Chen chuckled: "Okay, I will tell him. Sis, I am going out with Teacher Asura tomorrow. I will tell him at that time." He felt quite helpless because Asura Ye was really too uptight, he would never permit him to show the results of his training to anyone else, including Nalan Shu. Using Nalan Shu's words, this zombie face could be described as the most troublesome thing possible, with his resolution fixed at amazing the world with Long Hao Chen's brilliant feat.

Li Xin's eyes had an astute feeling, "Lil' Bro, you are not allowed to tell me about your training, but since you are following this Asura Ye, it shouldn't be lacking. This time, when we from Hao Yue City participate in the Magical Hunt and Selection Competition, there will be several people, like this fucking servant Lin Jia Lu who also intended to go. So you should help your big sis later."

Long Hao Chen was somewhat speechless: "Sis, you have been babbling for so long, forget about it. From what I can conclude, although the both of you quarrel whenever you meet, in reality you consider each other like a friend."

"Peuh, peuh, peuh, who considers this girl like a friend? Alright, I'm leaving, you have to train hard for this half year too." This girl was the high-paced type.

Looking at her leaving figure, Long Hao Chen felt a very warm feeling: after he left his parents, the only affection he could receive came from this big sister. In his heart, Li Xin had long ago become his dearly loved big sister that he was willing to use his life to protect.

Long Hao Chen was not good at all at expressing his feelings, but deep inside, he was very grateful towards her.

Returning to his quiet room, Long Hao Chen sat cross-legged; he seemed like he was finally going to enter the meditative state. Gifted people weren't always meant to become successful. Countless geniuses fell down during their period of practice, and even more of them died because of their temperament. Long Hao Chen's training speed was incredibly fast, but his mental state was as important as his innate gifts.

Going step by step, with a serene mental state, he didn't have any distracting thoughts during his practice: his state of mind was much better than average people's.

It looked like a supple wave of spiritual energy rippled around him. A faint shining light could also be faintly seen, spreading out from his body. On his chest, another light shone even more brightly, the pulsation and fluctuation of this light seemed to be matching the pace of his heartbeat.

The pure holy aura released from Long Hao Chen's body, with his physique of a Scion of Light, absorbed a great part of the essence from Heaven and Earth, and way more easily than average people. The most important thing was that his internal spiritual energy was unceasingly increasing as he trained; Long Hao Chen discovered that the sacred light element internal spiritual energy he had was purer than the other knights'. This was something he discovered as he was practicing using the Guardian Knight skills.

When he used a skill taught by Asura Ye that was supposed to consume 50 units of spiritual energy, it used only 30 units.

This was, however, a secret he didn't even reveal to him. In his heart, although he was fully aware that Asura Ye deeply care about his well-being and, at the same time, considered him as the person he was the closest with, the place Asura Ye occupied in his heart was nowhere close to the place he held Long Xing Yu. As a result, he never forgot his father's words that he should never completely expose his talent. In addition, the details were something completely inconceivable from the point of view of ordinary people.

The gold color faintly discernible on his chest was the Saint Spiritual Stove's undulating energy. This Saint Stove inside of his body floated quietly, and, around it, his internal spiritual energy was rotating, acting like a funnel.

This internal spiritual energy shaped like a thin gold colored mist that was spinning quite slowly, but could be stimulated by meditating: it would increase its rotation speed. Even without stimulation, the time needed to complete a whole cycle was only two hours.

It looked like the cultivation of the internal spiritual energy was extremely slow, but even though this process looked full difficult to comprehend, it could be simply summarized: every time the golden light rotated six times around, Long Hao Chen's internal spiritual energy increased a little bit.

In other words, even if he didn't do anything, his internal spiritual energy would still be cultivated a bit everyday. This little quantity of spiritual energy should not be underestimated; a bit every day would become 365 bits in a year. In fact, even if he only spent all of his days sleeping, after three years, he would still promote from a Grand Knight to the realm of an Earth Knight.

This period of countless bouts started a month after he arrived in the city; his internal spiritual energy was constantly being used up and refilled. At the beginning, Long Hao Chen could not sense the rotations at all and could only go all out while fighting, he was full

of flaws. What differed back then, compared to the present in which he had broken through the 1000th spiritual energy level, was that he could now control these rotations. Long Hao Chen's current cultivation speed was completely astonishing.

Long Hao Chen by nature couldn't spend all of his days sleeping, his diligence combined with Asura Ye's training were bringing great results together.

Perception, attraction, absorption, assimilation, filtration, condensation, this was the process of the cultivation of Long Hao Chen's internal spiritual energy; it was very fast, especially when he entered this peculiar state.

Bright morning.

Long Hao Chen arrived in time in front of Asura Ye.

"Time for us to go." Asura Ye still had his zombie face.

"Teacher, where are we going?"

"To the Knights' Sacred Mountain."

"For my mount?"

"Yeah."

An intense feeling of excitement appeared in Long Hao Chen's heart. With this bright red fiery feeling, hoping that a mount that was as fast as the Rose Unicorn could belong to him, Long Hao Chen shouted from inside, I want my own mount too!.

Chapter 39: Knights' Sacred Mountain (I)

That day, Asura Ye was wearing a different outfit than usual. He had put on a suit of silver coloured light armor, covering his whole body. Apart from the shield he used when he trained Long Hao Chen, there was also a heavy sword on his back. His portable luggage was thrown on to Long Hao Chen who placed it into his spatial ring, 'Forget-Me-Not'.

Long Hao Chen's attire was very plain compared to his teacher's. He did not even wear his armor suit, he only had a sword and a shield, the shield being the same Radiant Shield that Li Xin gave him.

"Teacher, aren't we going to the Knights' Sacred Mountain?" Long Hao Chen asked with a puzzled look as he came back. It seemed as if he was heading to the rear of Hao Yue Hall.

"Just follow me." Asura Ye said relaxedly.

His response was like so only because Long Hao Chen was the one who asked. If it was another person, he would just have been discredited while being cursed.

When they entered into the training ground, the knights' training had not started yet. Most of them were still probably having breakfast in the cafeteria, so it was really quiet inside the training ground.

Asura Ye stopped and like a double edged sword, he thrust his right hand suddenly into the void. Pale gold glows gathered together to form golden patterns that moved in the air.

Long Hao Chen had seen these actions before. Li Xin had used them once, isn't this the method to summon a battle mount? Could it be that this teacher also became a Genuine Knight before the age of twenty, and furthermore, visited the Knights' Holy Mountain?

Golden light rose and bright golden glows formed a gate that

shone with a bright light. Together with a loud scream that could be heard, a figure came out from the golden light.

Seeing this figure clearly, Long Hao Chen could not help but stare at it. He had been training with Ye Hua for two years, but this was the first time he had seen Ye Hua's battle mount.

It was a big bird with its whole body colored light yellow. It came out from the golden light, its height was over two and a half meters, its yellow feathers were in exotic circular shapes, and its head was also perfectly round. Its body looks very rough and tough, and there seemed to be a faint earth-element yellow layer of light emanating from it.

During his practice with his father, aside from the everyday training, Long Xing Yu also taught him all kinds of knowledge; that naturally included knowledge about magical beasts.

After a brief moment of surprise, Long Hao Chen recognized this was a rare earth-elemental flying magical beast; its name was Vibrant Mountain Bird, a sixth ranked magical beast.

Generally speaking, the majority of flying magical beasts belonged to the wind-elemental system, the rest were in other elemental systems, but earth-elemental system flying magical beasts were the most rare of them all. The Vibrant Mountain Birds' speed might not be very fast, but whether in terms of loading limit or defense, there was no flying magical beasts of the same rank that could match them.

"Teacher, so you are an Airborne Knight." Long Hao Chen said with admiration.

Among fifth stepped knights, only one who had a flying battle mount could call himself 'an Airborne Knight', otherwise he could only be called an Earth Knight. Without a doubt, within the same rank, Airborne Knights were naturally the stronger ones.

As Asura Ye revealed rare gentle eyes, the Vibrant Mountain Bird

lowered its head, letting him pet it a little before expanding its huge wings wide, five meters across, and slightly crouching down.

Asura Ye pulled Long Hao Chen, slightly jumped up and landed on top of the Vibrant Mountain Bird's back. Before Long Hao Chen could react, fierce wind rose up, the Vibrant Mountain Bird did a short head start, strongly flapped its two wings, then took flight into the sky.

This was the first time Long Hao Chen traveled on a flying magical beast; feeling a little nervous, he grabbed the Vibrant Mountain Bird's feathers subconsciously.

The scenery below quickly became smaller, and soon, the Vibrant Mountain Bird was already high into the air.

A layer of yellow-colored earth essence was released from this Vibrant Mountain Bird's body, it wrapped Long Hao Chen and Ye Hua, making sure that they wouldn't be blown away by the wind. Its pair of wings was still flapping, advancing towards the horizon.

Long Hao Chen knew that magical beasts mounts were spiritually connected with their master, so this Vibrant Mountain Bird naturally knew where they were headed.

So fast, Hao Yue Town was gradually becoming smaller under them as the Vibrant Mountain Bird rose in the sky until reaching an altitude close to a kilometer, the height for flying. Being seated on its wide back gave one an unexpectedly smooth feeling.

After all, Long Hao Chen wasn't fourteen years old yet, it was the first time he got to see such a fantastic scene. This Vibrant Mountain Bird was clearly a fully grown magical beast, the feeling when flying on its back was truly wonderful! When we will arrive in the Knights' Sacred Mountain, it would be awesome if I could get this magical beast!

Ye Hua reacted: "So envious?"

Long Hao Chen nodded without the least restrain.

Ye Hua told: “You will also have the opportunity. I am gonna to tell you about the places at the Knights’ Sacred Mountain where you can look for a magical beast companion, you have to remember what I’ll say.”

“Yes.”

Ye Hua continued: “The Knights’ Sacred Mountain is the magical land our Knight Temple was established on. This mountain range is a cornerstone that several generations established after great efforts. More precisely, the Knights’ Sacred Mountain is, in itself, a huge magical array. Inside of its range, all the magical beasts become friendly with humans, while their power is restricted.”

“In the Knights’ Sacred Mountain, the oldest magical beasts can even communicate mentally. Each human who enters the mountain has to be below 20 years old, his spiritual energy must have reached the 200th level, he must have undergone the Sacred Awakening, and he must also have the approval of the Knight Temple to get close enough to these magical beasts.”

“You have to keep in mind that, there, what you will be looking for is a companion for life, not simply a mount. He will be your most loyal friend and, unless you die, he will accompany you for your whole life. He will even be more reliable than the future companions you will have.

When looking for a mount in the Knights’ Sacred Mountain, there is a big factor of luck. By chance, you will perhaps find your suitable mount after your first step. But if you don’t have this chance, I am afraid that even if you wait for ten years or a hundred years, there will be no magical beasts that will pay attention to you. Thus, entering the Knights’ Sacred Mountain, in some kind of meaning, is a process consisting to seek chance.”

Hearing up to this part, Long Hao Chen asked: “Teacher, how can I seek this chance?”

Ye Hua let out a sigh, gently caressing the feathers on the back of

his companion, “Everyone has a different fate. At that time, when I met my Vibrant Mountain Bird, it wasn’t a third of a meter high yet, and yet the first time I saw it, my heart had an intense feeling of intimacy with it.

“The vast majority of the magical beasts in the Knights’ Sacred Mountain won’t attack humans, but there are some with a violent temperament that will warn you as soon as you step into their territory. If you meet this kind of magical beast, the tile provided by the Temple will inform you to some extent. Don’t rashly enter in the range of its territory. If both of you are brought together by fate, it will naturally come to you. These kinds of magical beasts are often comparatively powerful existences in the Sacred Mountain Knight.”

Long Hao Chen kept in mind Ye Hua’s pointers: he wouldn’t dare be the slightest bit careless. A companion, Teacher is right, in the future I will have my own mount and companion. But what kind of mount will it be?

“Teacher, will the kind of mount that I am destined to tame be related to my innate potential?” Long Hao Chen curiously asked.

Ye Hua nodded and answered: “Of course it will be related. Simply said, to a mount, acknowledging you is kind of like acknowledging your innate potential. The more formidable the magical beast, the more exigent it will be regarding its companion’s abilities. About this matter, my luck was very good at that time.”

Chapter 40: Knights' Sacred Mountain (II)

While he was speaking, Ye Hua's look became very gentle.

“Hao Chen, do you know how high my innate internal spiritual energy is?” Ye Hua asked. At this instant, his voice sounded as cold as ice.

Long Hao Chen shook his head.

Ye Hua said: “My innate internal spiritual energy is only nine.”

“Ah?” Only nine? Long Hao Chen clearly remembered his father's words: if one's innate internal spiritual energy could not even reach ten, it would be very hard for him to break through the third step to enter the fourth step.

Ye Hua said this with a smile, but this smile looked even uglier than a crying face.

“Yeah, only nine. At the time the evil Heavens gave me a smart brain, they also gave me a poor innate potential. Even if I wracked my brain completely, thought of countless training methods, in the end, I will never bypass the rank of Airborne Knight. In the end, I am afraid that I will never reach the stage of Radiant Knight in my life.

On the year of my fifteenth birthday, I completed the cultivation of my external spiritual energy and became a Knight. The me of that time was very ambitious, acclaimed by everyone around as a genius. However, on the day of my Sacred Awakening, to me, it was as if thunder fell from the clear sky: innate internal spiritual energy, nine. The worst trash possible. The teachers who had valued me weren't willing to teach me anything anymore. They didn't even let me know where the Knights' Sacred Mountain was located. The 15-year-old me wasn't willing to believe that at all! It was impossible... impossible that a low innate internal spiritual energy could prevent me to become a formidable knight. I was

really not willing to believe that at all! I was convinced that, as long as I could rely on hard word, I would be able to break through and overcome this restriction from Heaven.

As a result, I relied on my own two legs to go to the Knights' Temple to request permission. And then, I relied on my own two legs to go to the Knights' Sacred Mountain, before finally arriving. Every Knight below 20 years old who entered could only remain for a month after entering, and if he didn't find his opportunity within a month, he would be forced to leave the mountain by the Temple's authorities.

I was looking for the opportunity day after day, persistently looking for it day after day. Every time I met a magical beast, even if it was a second or a third ranked small and weak one, I was willing to interact with it, but even these small and weak fellows didn't accept me.

Time passed day after day. Finally, as a month had passed, it looked like I was going to be ordered to leave. I was really unwilling, really really unwilling! As I looked up high in the sky, I was so frustrated that my bitter tears flowed. I knew that if I was forced out of the mountain like that, I could only remain as a trash. Losing the little thread of hope to become a formidable knight that I had, I would not have any more opportunity.

However, at this moment, I met him. He heard my cries and before I noticed him, he had appeared on my shoulder. It was as if he could read and understand the pain in my heart. Since then, he became my only close relative, my best partner. I am willing to protect him with my life, because he is like a little brother to me. ”

At this point, from the ice-cold Ye Hua, a drop of tear flowed as the Vibrant Mountain Bird slowly turned its head, looking at it with a gently look, as if trying to comfort it.

Ye Hua calmly patted his back, “Don't worry, old partner, I'm okay.”

“Long Hao Chen, I am an orphan. In this world, I have never experienced what familial love felt like. In the past, I would never imagine that I would one day feel such an unreal thing. That was until I met him, this little brother. And then, I realized that fate really existed. This affection that he let me feel, unceasingly encouraging me to try all kinds of training methods. And then, after twenty years, from trash, I managed, little by little, to break through the realm of an Airborne Knight. I suffered countless bottlenecks. I am afraid that a little genius like you will never be able to understand it, this feeling. ”

“After having said so much, there is one last thing Teacher wants to tell you. It is that, after you possess your own companion, you have to treat him well, consider him as a member of your family. This kind of opportunity is something that will appear only once during your whole life: you have to grab it. Protect him well; otherwise, when you lose him, you will regret it for your whole life.”

Hearing such an emotional speech from Ye Hua, Long Hao Chen unconsciously tightened his fists. He was full of respect for both this teacher and this Vibrant Mountain Bird under him.

The personal efforts he made were not few, but how could they compare to his teacher's? If he had the same innate talent as his teacher, would he be able to, like him, spend a few dozens of years as if it was a single day, to try to complete an impossible goal, and struggle so much for it?

“Teacher, don't worry, I understand. I will put my life at stake to protect my companion.”

Ye Hua slowly nodded, “This fat bastard, Nalan, doesn't want me to ask you, but, Hao Chen, I really want to know how high your innate internal spiritual energy is. This is for the sake of looking for your suitable mount. The most formidable magical beasts are also the most proud ones. I have not been able to estimate your innate talent up to now. During this trip, you will perhaps be able

to show Teacher a really nice surprise.”

“Teacher, I... ” Long Hao Chen looked at Ye Hua somewhat hesitantly. Long Xing Yu clearly told him that his innate internal spiritual energy was something extremely important to keep secret. Moreover, this teacher before him, who was known by others as Asura, couldn’t compare with him at all in terms of innate internal spiritual energy. However, did he really have to conceal it to such stubborn teacher?

Ye Hua waved his hands, letting out a light sigh: “Let it be. It is your private matters, and even the fat bastard, Nalan, doesn’t know. No need to reveal it, I don’t want to seem irritating to you.”

“Teacher, I want to let you know.” Long Hao Chen blurted out these few words. He had never been moved as deeply as just now, with Ye Hua’s lonely eyes revealing the pain engraved deeply in his heart.

“Mh?” Ye Hua’s eyes shone, looking at him with a burning gaze.

Long Hao Chen took a deep breath and said: “Teacher, since two years ago, you devotedly taught me all kind of things regarding Guardian Knight knowledge and skills. You were very strict, forcing me into a life full of beating and scolding, but deep inside, I knew that you did all of that for my own good. When I followed Father to train, his guidance was completely different to yours. Without you, I wouldn’t have grown so much. I heard Nalan Hall Master say that I was your sole disciple. You did not hold back any of the knowledge you acquired in your many years when teaching me. How could Hao Chen be unable to recognize your good intentions? In Hao Chen’s heart, you are a father as well as a master. To others, my secret will forever remain secret, but to you, I am willing to reveal it, as you are like a father to me.”

Looking at Long Hao Chen, the muscles on Ye Hua’s face started to relax as he hurriedly shook his head: he didn’t want to let him see the sparkling tears that began to flow from his eyes. He didn’t

expect at all that, on such an ordinary day, such a clever kid, usually silent but never refusing whichever hard training, his innately gifted disciple with the appearance of beautiful kitty, would speak out these words. Behind such a delicate outward appearance, he apparently had a very large heart.

Such fantastic words came out from Long Hao Chen's mouth, before a pure gold colored radiance enveloped Long Hao Chen and Ye Hua inside of it.

[Divine Light Mantle], a third step defensive skill used by Guardian Knights isolating him while producing a sound effect. A defensive skill acting like a monomer . With Long Hao Chen's current spiritual energy, he could barely use [Divine Light Mantle] to fully envelop him and his teacher inside.

Chapter 41: Knights' Sacred Mountain (III)

“Hm?” Such caution? Ye Hua gave a puzzled look to Long Hao Chen. Long Hao Chen’s voice rang out at this moment.

“Teacher, my innate internal spiritual energy level is 97.”

“Mh.” Ye Hua let out a little reaction; he was still thinking about Long Hao Chen’s words, describing him as a teacher as well as a father. His heart felt warm and his joy could not even be described anymore. He lived his whole life as an unmarried man. Having such a sensible treasure as a disciple, it was natural that he regarded him like his son.

“97. Eh? Wha’did’ya’say?” Ye Hua’s look suddenly became overly fierce, the tears that were flowing from his eyes completely disappeared. His tone had completely changed, he could only yell.

Long Hao Chen’s face showed a faint smile: “That’s why I was reluctant to tell you. I knew you would show this kind of reaction.”

Ye Hua’s body was clearly somewhat drawn out, forcefully gulping a mouthful of saliva as he suddenly waved his hands, creating a much more imposing [Divine Light Mantle] that spread out from his body, covering both master and disciple inside with one more layer.

“You, you said, your innate internal spiritual energy is 97?” Ye Hua’s eyes were wide opened.

Long Hao Chen nodded.

“No, that’s impossible.” Ye Hua said resolutely, “When you just came to our branch Hall, Nalan Shu, that fat bastard, told me that your internal spiritual energy was only at the 268th level. When you underwent the Sacred Awakening, you should have had a 200th level external spiritual energy, so even if your innate gift is so formidable, your innate internal spiritual energy shouldn’t be higher than 68.”

Long Hao Chen scratched his head: “At that time, my internal spiritual energy was much greater than 100. Only, I had fused with a spiritual stove, so my internal spiritual energy was temporarily depleted. Had you not noticed that during the first month we trained together, my internal spiritual energy was cultivated at a phenomenal speed? It was the restoration of the spiritual energy depleted from fusing with the spiritual stove.”

“Spiritual stove... you, you even have a spiritual stove...” Ye Hua almost plucked the feathers of his Vibrant Mountain Bird out of surprise as he frantically looked at Long Hao Chen.

“Stinky little kid, do you know what I really want to do right now?” Ye Hua’s eyes revealed an ominous glint.

Long Hao Chen gave him a surprised look, “Teacher, what do you want to do?”

Ye Hua’s cheeks were streaming with tears, “I really want to kick you down. Fucking shit, why did you have to tell me?! You have just injured me mentally, why did I have to ask?! A disgrace, this is simply a disgrace!”

After a full hour, Ye Hua’s emotional state was finally stabilized. But every time he turned around to look at Long Hao Chen’s gentle jade like face he could almost see a nine written on his left cheek, and a seven written on his right cheek, with a spiritual stove drawn on his nose...

After another full hour, as Ye Hua’s mind could finally be considered as stable, Long Hao Chen requested: “Teacher, I’ll depend on your help to find a magical beast that is suitable to become my companion.”

Ye Hua glanced at him, “Naturally, the higher is the cultivation level, the better it is, but with your potential, even the 7th or 8th stepped magical beasts can only be ashamed at their inferiority upon looking at you, there is no way they will be self-confident enough to become your companion. At best, we could find a ninth

stepped young magical beast. Right, what kind of spiritual stove did you get?" As he asked, he took out a water gourd to drink a mouthful.

"Saint Spiritual Stove."

"Puff—" The mouthful of water that Ye Hua just drank splashed out. "You, you, are you even human?! Please don't be so cruel to me!" Ye Hua's face was full of grief and indignation.

Long Hao Chen distractedly asked: "Teacher, are you alright? The Saint Spiritual Stove should be a spiritual stove that is suitable for us knights to fuse with, ranked at the bottom of the ranking, right?"

Ye Hua took a deep breath, "I am going to tell you this once more, this uncle's heart has just been violated! You don't understand at all, dammit! That's right, Saint Spiritual Stoves are at the bottom of the ranking, but did you know that among the three Grand Divine Knights, two of them are old Guardian Knights, and they both possess a Saint Spiritual Stove?"

"I didn't know." Long Hao Chen gave a sincere answer.

Ye Hua angrily said: "A Saint Spiritual Stove can be described as the most optimal spiritual stove in collaborative battles. A knight who has fused with a Saint Spiritual Stove will be able to take care of all of his teammates at the same time, and increase their security by at least 30%. Fortunately, you told me all of this; after we come back from the Knights' Sacred Mountain, I will properly teach you how to use this Saint Spiritual Stove."

The Vibrant Mountain Bird continued to fly towards the south: even if its flying speed was slow compared to most magical beasts of the sixth step, it was still a lot faster than travelling on the ground.

The Knights' Sacred Mountain was located in the northeast of the Temple Alliance; it was bordering the Knight Temple. From

Hao Yue City, it was very distant; more precisely, Hao Yue City was in the southern part of the Temple Alliance. It thus required travelling across almost all the Temple Alliance's region before reaching it.

The positions of all of the Six Great Temples were at the borders of the Temple Alliance, completely surrounding it and protecting its territory. The headquarters of the Knight Temple was actually at its center, and the six Temples were approximately at equal distance to the center of the territory. Because of the apprehension and the protection brought by these Six Great Temples, for so many years, the demon race was unable to proceed with their invasion of the human lands.

Among the Six Great Temples, the Knight Temple was the most formidable, the Warrior Temple had the most people, and the Mage Temple was the richest.

The strength of the Knight Temple and the Warrior Temple was known in almost each village. The influence of the Mage Temple also extended to most towns, from little ones to big ones.

The Assassin Temple, the Priest Temple, and the Spiritual Temple, because of their lesser number of members, only had branch halls in big cities: even in a medium sized city like Hao Yue City, there was only a Priest Temple, and the most mysterious ones, the Assassin Temple and Spiritual Temple, never set up a branch hall there.

However, this didn't mean that these three Great Temples, with fewer people, were not powerful. Their capability was something the Temple Alliance could not do without.

The Vibrant Mountain Bird kept flying unyieldingly: he only needed to go back to the ground to rest once. Long Hao Chen had already told his biggest secret to his teacher, and every day, as they were flying on the back of the Vibrant Mountain Bird, he cultivated his inner spiritual energy. Ye Hua could clearly feel

Long Hao Chen's spiritual energy rising.

15 days later.

"We have finally arrived, old partner, let's go down." Ye Hua said with a happy voice.

Long Hao Chen, gazing from afar, was startled as he discovered that far away them, a drizzling gold-colored brilliance shone, but because of the hazy fog before them, this brilliance could not be clearly seen at all.

This faint golden envelop had an extremely wide range, and inside, it seemed that a mountain peak could faintly be seen.

The Vibrant Mountain Bird landed on the ground, his wings intensely flapping before resting on the weeds below.

Long Hao Chen jumped to the ground together with his teacher. This 15-day journey was not tiring at all for him; he was cultivating everyday, and during this trip, his spiritual energy increased by approximately 50 levels.

"Old partner, go back first."

The Vibrant Mountain Bird lowered its head, it seemed reluctant to part with Ye Hua, and as it was rubbing against him, Ye Hua canceled his summoning to send it back.

"Teacher, does the Knights' Sacred Mountain have a protective barrier? Why do we have to walk more than fifty kilometers, instead of directly entering from the sky?" Long Hao Chen asked.

Ye Hua answered: "There is no protective barrier, but you have to keep in mind that, in the Knights' Sacred Mountain, there are countless magical beasts. These magical beasts won't take the initiative to attack people, but a foreign magical beast flying above them can be interpreted as a taunt. Only if your mount possesses the strength to deal with all of the magical beasts here, can you enter from the sky; otherwise, don't even try. Let's go."

Both master and disciple advanced, facing the Knights' Sacred Mountain, when suddenly, a gale of wind blew as an enormous silhouette descended from the sky.

Chapter 42: Knights' Sacred Mountain (IV)

Long Hao Chen moved his arm and took his Radiant Shield out; he was taught that all knights were required to stay on constant alert.

This enormous silhouette was slowly nearing the ground, currently at a distance of 3.3 meters (10 zhang). This incredible figure was a flying magical beast.

However, this flying magical beast was even more imposing than Ye Hua's Vibrant Mountain Bird. With its appearance of a divine enchanting horse; its height of roughly six meters, and its whole body emitting a faint golden light, it was a dragon-headed beast with a body of bird. Its head as well as its tail was covered with long feathers with five different colors. After landing on the ground, it slowly folded its wings and raised its head; what a beautiful creature!

Seventh step magical beast, Dragon Eagle. Long Hao Chen instantly recognized the specie of the beast.

A Dragon Eagle is a light attribute flying beast. To knights, light attribute mounts are the most valuable ones, because they are able to substantially increase their fighting capability.

Two people jumped down from the back of this Dragon Eagle, a middle-aged man accompanied by a young boy. They just got down from its back, so they didn't see Long Hao Chen yet.

"Oh! Look who it is. It turns out that it is Elder Brother Ye Hua, long time no see!" Looking at Ye Hua, they were a little surprised at first, but quickly wore smiles on their faces as they approached.

Ye Hua looked as cold as before and he did not even bother to welcome them.

This middle-aged man wore golden armor, clearly letting out a holy aura. He didn't have any weapon, nor a helmet, and his long

golden hair was spread out behind.

He seemed a little younger than Ye Hua, his face looked a little feminine, specially his pair of sensual eyes, giving off a vague impression of someone who thinks he is hot stuff.

The youth beside this middle-aged man resembled Long Hao Chen a lot: he looked approximately 17-18 years old from his appearance, and his body was quite tall. His face was clearly showing some arrogance.

The middle-aged man approached, asking with a smile: "What's wrong? Doesn't elder brother Ye Hua recognize me? Even though it was only six or seven years since the last time we met? Still, we grew up together. I just saw this Vibrant Mountain Bird from afar and although it is only a sixth step magical beast, its species is quite rare so I deduced that it was most likely yours."

Ye Hua coldly talked back to him: "Gui Ying, you are still as arrogant as before."

The expression on the face of this middle aged man changed, and the youth beside him could not help but blurt out in an angry voice: "What did you just say?!"

"Shut up!" The middle-aged man faintly smiled; his face's expression was already back to normal, "Ye Hua, Teacher really misses you, you know? It has been a while since you left our Xiu City, but you haven't even come back once to visit Teacher. Teacher for one day, father for life, have you forgotten that!?"

Ye Hua's complexion became colder than ever before, "I don't need you to teach me that. We will leave." While speaking, without paying the slightest attention to Gui Ying, he grabbed Long Hao Chen's hand and they left together in the direction of the Knights' Sacred Mountain.

Looking at their leaving figure, the youth couldn't help but ask Gui Ying: "Dad, who is he? How can he be so insolent?"

Gui Ying unenthusiastically answered him: “He is nothing more than a trash. This time, it looks like he came with this youth to the Knights’ Sacred Mountain to help him in getting his mount. After entering the Mountain, if you have the chance, you have to cause trouble for him.”

The young guy excitedly nodded, “I will make him understand what power is. Let’s see what kind of magical beast will be willing to get close to him after I break one of his legs.”

Gui Ying narrowed his eyes, they looked as if they were intensely shining as his memories from a few dozens of years before flashed little by little before his eyes.

.....

“Big Bro Ye Hua, you’re gonna turn into a Knight soon. How are you cultivating your spiritual energy so quickly? Do you have any kind of secret? Is it okay to teach it to me?”

“You have to rely on your own efforts and practice diligently, there isn’t any shortcut.”

“Hmph, I’m sure Teacher favored you and taught you a special training method. Otherwise, how could you turn into a Knight while you are only three years older than me?”

Pow–

“You dare hit me? You dare hit me...”

“What if I hit you? If you dare tell it to Teacher, I’ll just break all the limbs in your body, and the Hall Master of Xiu City will lose his interest in you. Get lost, I never want to see you again.”

That year, he was twelve years old, while Ye Hua was fifteen years old.

.....

“Gui Wu, if you have the occasion, go ahead and break all the limbs of this little boy.” With a cold sneer, Gui Ying took big steps

forward.

An air of arrogance appeared on Gui Wu's blank face, "To break all his limbs! Isn't that too ruthless? Never mind, I like this idea." A fierce expression was drawn into his face.

Ye Hua silently stepped forward, his face was as cold as before, and Long Hao Chen, who was so familiar with him, could feel that his state of mind was currently quite unstable.

"Teacher, is this person an enemy of yours?" Long Hao Chen asked in a calm voice.

Ye Hua gave him a quick glance, "We were formerly from the same place; Xiu City, a city adjacent to the headquarters of the Temple Alliance, the biggest city of the Alliance. My teacher was a Temple Knight. He possessed a Silver Foundation Warrior Armor. I joined the Xiu Chen Chief Hall at 13 years old and broke through the third step at 15 years-old. I was acclaimed as the best genius of the 100 last years in Xiu City. I was Teacher's direct disciple. But after taking a step into Heaven, I took a step into Hell. When we discovered that my internal spiritual energy was nine, from a genius, I became a useless individual in their eyes. I trained with great efforts for two more years in Xiu City, but the cultivation of my internal spiritual energy was incomparably slow. As a result, Teacher drove me away from Xiu City Main Hall, and among the few people responsible for driving me out, Gui Ying was included. The one who ridiculed me the most, calling me a useless trash nonstop, was him."

After he finished speaking, Ye Hua became completely silent. It almost seemed as if all he said was completely unrelated to him. And the pace of his steps suddenly sped up. He was relying on his spiritual energy to speed up, as if an arrow was shot at him from behind.

Long Hao Chen couldn't refrain from clenching his fists as he pledged that the disgrace of his teacher, would be cleansed.

Although Ye Hua explained his situation casually, he could imagine that his teacher of those days had surely suffered a lot from this situation too, and that Gui Ying was the first person who provoked this situation of his.

Turning his head to peek a glance at Gui Ying and his son, a third of a kilometer away, Long Hao Chen's golden colored eyes shone brightly from afar.

A distance of fifty kilometers was nothing at all for them, and after an hour, Long Hao Chen and Ye Hua were already near the Knights' Sacred Mountain.

As they approached the Knights' Sacred Mountain, the light-element aura became even stronger. A haze filled with light element aura was being emitted from behind. The mountain peak was faintly visible, towering in the sky. Clearly, the Knights' Sacred Mountain was not a single mountain, but a mountain range. The haze scattered as they approached it, so the sight was not as unclear as one may think.

Slowly walking across this haze that faintly shone, Long Hao Chen discovered, to his surprise, that this haze was imbued with a very pure light attribute, and after entering the haze, the light attribute was at least five times superior compared to outside, and did not contain any impurity.

“Feel it. The light element attribute here is a lot stronger than outside. The Knights' Sacred Mountain is actually, in itself, an enormous magical array that extends throughout an entire mountain range. This light essence is also issued out by the magical array, and if knights like us cultivate here, it will be, as a result, twice more effective, but obviously, this is impossible because as long as these light essences exists here, the violent nature of these magical beasts will be suppressed. Thus, no knight is allowed to stay in the Knights' Sacred Mountain to cultivate. None of the elders that guard it would allow it. Otherwise, the balance of the light attribute magical array would be destroyed and

it would likely result in the rebellion of the magical beasts that reside here. Upon entering the mountain, the self-rotations of one's internal spiritual energy will not matter anymore, and obviously, you will be forbidden from meditating to increase your cultivation speed.”

Chapter 43: Starlight Unicorn (I)

After listening to Ye Hua's advice, Long Hao Chen felt a little regretful. However, when he entered the area, he clearly felt in his body that the rotation speed of his internal spiritual energy around his spiritual stove accelerated significantly. Even without meditating to accelerate his cultivation speed, the rotation of his spiritual energy would not be much slower.

"Your name?" asked a deep, hoarse voice.

Long Hao Chen was startled; with the increase of his cultivation speed, his mental capacity also became all more formidable here. At this moment, he did not know that the fact using skills depleted less of his spiritual energy was not only because of his physique as a Scion of Light, but also because of his excellent mental capacity. Despite all of that, he still did not detect this person who was approaching.

"Gui Ying, the Hall Master of Xiu City Hall has brought his son Gui Wu to the Sacred Mountain to choose a companion mount."

A shadow flashed: Gui Ying and his son, who were behind them all along, came close, standing next to Long Hao Chen and Ye Hua.

The figure of an old man slowly came out in front of them; his body was like a part of the pale golden haze, and his breath was completely overshadowed by the haze.

This elder had a hunchback posture and, inside his armor, he was clad with simple grey-colored clothes. He was mostly bald, but still had a few sparse and fragmentary strands of white hair. A simple wrinkle of his brows was a weapon that could catch mosquitoes and the yellow color of his eyes was very pure. The appearance of the old man is like someone who is in his last days and seemed like a gust of wind could end his life.

"Ye Hua from Hao Yue Branch Hall, I came with my disciple,

Long Hao Chen, to the Sacred Mountain to choose his companion mount.” Ye Hua’s voice sounded as cold as ever. Even here, his old habit did not change at all.

The old man slowly approached them. When Long Hao Chen clearly saw his appearance, he couldn’t help but feel somewhat startled.

The old man had a single arm: his left arm was cut off, and he was blind in the right eye. He even had a very large scar on his face, extending from his lower jaw to the top of his head. It was as if his head had been split open.

When he could clearly see the appearance of this old man, Long Hao Chen also discovered that his teacher with a usually ice-cold temperament unexpectedly had a respectful look on his eyes at this moment. He was slowly bowing down before this elder, and Gui Yin was doing the same at the other side.

Long Hao Chen didn’t dare to slack off and hurriedly gave his respects as well.

Although Gui Wu was bowing down like his father, a disapproving look could be seen in his eyes. Since his childhood, he had been the proud son of the Hall Master of Xiu City. Regardless of whether they were people from the Knight Temple or Xiu City, everyone was polite and courteous with him. He was really unwilling to bow down to a disabled old man in his late days.

The gaze of this elderly man swept in front of these four people, before saying in a hoarse voice: “Take out your certificates.”

“Yes.” Gui Ying and Ye Hua answered simultaneously, and Gui Ying, a step faster, handed over a scroll to him. Ye Hua shot him a cold glance before handing over a scroll at his turn.

The elderly man first gave a look to the scroll handed by Gui Ying and nodded. When he next gave a look to the scroll handed by Ye Hua, he couldn’t help but look at Long Hao Chen, analyzing him

from top to bottom.

Long Hao Chen vaguely knew already that this scroll recorded everything about the time after he joined Hao Yue Branch Hall, naturally including his age and his cultivation records.

Being stared by this elderly man, he felt a huge pressure in his whole body, as if a formidable power had penetrated his inner being.

The elderly man gave him another look before waving in his direction, "Come."

Gui Ying pushed his son, giving him a meaningful glance.

Gui Wu quickly took a step forward, showing a respectful expression.

The elder lifted his hand, consciously moving it on Gui Wu's shoulder. As a reaction, Gui Wu subconsciously shook with his entire body, struggling, but when the dried up and old-looking palm touched his shoulder, he instantly became stiff and completely unable to move.

A drop of sweat flowed from his forehead: he could clearly feel that the palm of this elder was as imposing as a mountain, and he felt as if he was disappearing without hope of returning.

"Hm, 18 years-old. You have my approval. You may enter." was the next sentence he told to Gui Ying.

Turning his hand, he grabbed a long black colored tile. He handed it to Gui Wu's hand before telling him: "Upon meeting magical beasts of different levels, this token will take on a different color. In the Knights' Sacred Mountain, the weakest beasts are at the second rank, corresponding to a red color. In a similar fashion, the others colors are yellow, green, dark green, blue, purple, white, and silver. Ninth is the peak level here. If a shining golden color appears, it means you have encountered an aggressive beast. Unless you feel a compatibility between the both of you, you are to

stay as far from it as possible. If you cannot initiate a link among the both of you, keep searching until you find your target. The time limit is 30 days, you have 30 days to look for the suitable magical beast for yourself. Also, you will be transported out of the mountain 20 seconds after this tile shines with a pure gold color. Is everything clear?”

“Yes.” Gui Wu answered.

Then, the scroll that was in the elder’s hand suddenly turned into ashes as a grey colored energy was sent out, covering the black colored tile in Gui Wu’s hand. The tile quickly shone before going back to normal.

“Thank you very much, senior.” Gui Ying respectfully saluted this elder before heading back to the mountain. Gui Wu did not dare be negligent, and shot a glance at the nearby Long Hao Chen before moving forward and stepping in the haze, disappearing inside.

The elder faced Long Hao Chen and beckoned, “Come, little fellow; let this old man take a closer look to you. I want to see if you can really amaze an old man like me.”

“Yes.” Long Hao Chen gave a glance to this teacher before approaching him at a slow pace and respectfully standing in front of him.

Like before, the elder placed his hand on his shoulder, and a warm feeling was instantly transmitted. Long Hao Chen didn’t move the slightest bit, and calmly stood there.

After a short moment, the elder opened his eyes wide, and after withdrawing his hand he stared at Long Hao Chen’s face once more.

“Hao Yue Branch Hall.” the old man murmured in a deep voice.

“This young one is listening.” Ye Hua took two steps forwards, respectfully saluting him.

The old man turned his head, looked at Ye Hua, and said: “Where did you find such a little freak? He is really not 13 yet, but he is already a Grand Knight. Moreover, his spiritual energy is above 1,000, ten years earlier than that little fellow Long Xing Yu, whose innate talent cannot even compare to his. This is a genuine genius! You can report my approval to the executive of the Temple and let him directly pursue his cultivation in the Temple.”

Ye Hua’s complexion faintly changed: he didn’t expect this elder before him to become so fond of Long Hao Chen, and a thought came to him, it seems that even within a century, such a prodigy will not appear for sure.

“Senior, it is not that this young one is unwilling, only, in half a year, there will be the Magical Hunt and Selection, that major competition. And this young one firmly believes that his teachings are definitely not lacking.”

The old man pondered for a little while, before nodding: “Alright. This old one will not meddle in your affairs. He will simply leave you be. Kid, did you clearly hear what I said earlier?”

Long Hao Chen respectfully answered: “I heard clearly.”

The old man nodded, “Then you can go. However, as you broke through the step of Grand Knight before you turned 20, you can have one more privilege. If after 30 days, you haven’t found a fitting mount for yourself, you can enter the Sacred Mountain’s summit to summon a magical beast to serve as your mount from another place. Only, if we have to come to this, it means we are leaving everything to chance: it will be for sure a suitable mount for you, but it is hard to say whether it will be a strong one or a weak one, and it can even be a first step magical beast; hence, you have to make great efforts when searching during these 30 days. Understood?”

Chapter 44: Starlight Unicorn (II)

“Thanks a lot for your instructions, senior.”

“Hm, you go too.” The elder waved his hand, and the scroll was consumed and assimilated into a tile that was then handed to Long Hao Chen.

Long Hao Chen turned towards Ye Hua and performed a knight salute.

“Go.” Ye Hua returned the salute. His face displayed a smile that seemed kind of forced, but his gaze was as fiery as before.

Long Hao Chen faced the other side before going through the haze and fading away inside.

After looking at his leaving figure, Ye Hua wanted to take his leave as the handicapped elder told him : “This kid is a very rare good seedling. Young fellow, to be able to foster this kind of disciple, you are pretty good.”

Ye Hua looked pleasantly surprised by this praise, “Many thanks for senior’s praise.”

The elder indifferently told him, “I never praise others, I just state the facts. You go too.”

“Yes.”

Ye Hua withdrew into the haze; he still looked as respectful as before. Before coming here, he never told Long Hao Chen about the kind of existences that were the elders here, because when he came before, he was actually not qualified to know about them.

These guardians of the Knights’ Sacred Mountain were all at least seventh step knights from the Alliance who completed their personal task, got a suit of Secret Silver Foundation Warrior Armor, enjoying their life in retirement here.

There were even some eighth step Saint Knights here. And if not

for the fact that Divine Knights could only hand over their Divine Throne upon dying, there would perhaps be some who would appear here.

With the Knight Temple being the head of the Six Great Temples, the power gathered at the Knights' Sacred Mountain could only be described as an absolute terror.

Except from the Divine Knights, no one knew how many formidable knights this mountain range contained. However, no matter from where one entered, he would always run into a guardian immediately upon entering the mountain.

The elder who appeared at that moment seemed quite feeble, he was still at least a seventh step powerhouse! Even though he was handicapped, even Ye Hua together with Gui Yin could not possibly be a match for him. Besides, the scars and deformities on his body were all brought by battles against the demon race. It could be said that the guardians of the Sacred Mountain were all genuine heroes.

Even if the three Divine Knights of the Knight Temple showed up, they had to salute these elders who deserved respect. They were the pride as well as the glory of the Knight Temple. Thus, even a strange phenomenon such as Ye Hua was respectful when facing the elder they met earlier.

“You also came out, Elder Brother Ye Hua? It looks like this disciple of yours is really young. Such a young knight is really a rare thing. I wonder what his current rank as a Knight is.”

Gui Ying hadn't left yet, and looking at Ye Hua who just appeared before his sight, he asked with a serious tone.

Ye Hua answered in a cold voice, “What does it have to do with you?”

Gui Ying laughed out loudly: “It naturally has nothing to do with me. Only, we will have to wait here for a while, so how about we

make a bet? Between this disciple of yours and my son, which one will get the highest ranked magical beast as a mount? If I win, I won't even bother you, just let me give you a good slap like in those days. If you win, as the loser, I will give you 3,000 gold coins, how about it?"

The purchasing value of gold coins was considerably high. With 3,000 gold coins, he would be able to buy a pretty good magical equipment.

Ye Hua coldly looked at him, "Then let's wait until the Demon Hunt Selection Competition and then bet. After all, mounts cannot decide everything. Let us compare their rankings during the Demon Hunt Selection Competition; would you have the guts to dare? If I win, I don't want your gold coins, just let me give you a slap."

Gui Ying showed a cold expression, "You are still as arrogant as before. Look at the age of your disciple, how could such a young kid even participate in the Demon Hunt Selection Competition? This is just so ridiculous. Can it be that you forgot that the upper age limit for the Demon Hunt Selection Competition was 25 years-old?"

Ye Hua indifferently answered: "All you have to do is to give me your reply, whether you dare or not."

Gui Ying's pupils shrank, "I dare, what is there to fear? I originally also wanted Gui Wu to participate in this Demon Hunt Selection and Competition to temper himself. He will participate in this Demon Hunt Selection and Competition at 23 years-old and amaze the world! My son is already an eighth rank Knight, so he may even be able to fight his way to reach the final phase of the competition before becoming a Demon Hunter."

Ye Hua said: "Let's wait for that moment then. Wash your face well for that moment, I don't want to make my hand dirty."

Gui Ying's complexion changed, but he didn't dare be rash here;

they were in the territory of the Sacred Mountain, so in the case that the guardians acted, his position as the Hall Master of Xiu City would not be enough to excuse him.

Long Hao Chen stepped into the haze. Feeling the surrounding light attribute becoming increasingly dense, it gave him an indescribable comfortable feeling. Deep inside, even if he managed to find his magical beast companion earlier, he would still want to stay here for thirty days. After all, he could clearly feel that the speed of the circulation of his internal spiritual energy was doubled here, not much less compared to when he meditated. In these circumstances, he would gain at least three or four spiritual energy levels daily.

Walking forward, he suddenly paused. Looking at the scenery before his eyes, it seemed that he had already passed through the haze, as this scenery had become much more distinct.

Lifting up his head, he discovered to his astonishment that what he could see was completely different from the past haze: the sky was clear and blue.

With a warm feeling coming from the bright sunlight, before his eyes there was a tree swaying to the breeze, letting out a fresh and sweet natural sound, restoring his energy and alleviating his fatigue.

At this moment, he arrived at the foot of the mountain range; he could only see a mountain forest before his eyes. There were thick and solid trees, at least 40 or 50 meters high. There were many kind of trees in this diverse mountain forest, and there wasn't a single straight path.

Holding the Radiant Shield in his left hand, drawing out the heavy sword with his right hand, and clenching the black-colored tile together with the hilt of his sword, he was ready to react to any circumstances.

Whoosh, a yellow colored figure appeared in front of him, it was

a monkey specie magical beast. It was lurking near a tree, but grinned upon seeing Long Hao Chen before turning around and running away.

What a miraculous magical array! Long Hao Chen sighed loudly. In the outside world, the majority of magical beasts were hostile to humans. In eight cases out of ten, they would immediately take the initiative to attack upon meeting a human. They were friendlier here, because of the influence of the Knight Temple's magical array and the holy aura it emitted. The Knights' Sacred Mountain is really a miraculous place.

Lowering his head to look at the token in his hand, he saw an orange colored glint, symbolizing that this magical beast was of the third rank.

Without delay, Long Hao Chen advanced and entered the mountain forest. A sound was emitted as a powerful defensive [Divine Light Mantle] was released, enveloping him inside. As he was advancing forward, he carefully observed his surroundings.

Ye Hua told him earlier that after entering the Knights' Sacred Mountain, if he wanted to reach his objective, the first thing he had to do was to climb the mountain and advance towards the interior of the Sacred Mountain. While approaching the center, the magical beasts he would meet would be more powerful.

The vegetation in this mountain forest was really dense; it went to the extent that Long Hao Chen had to use his heavy sword to make his way through quickly. After half an hour of labor, he had finally climbed to the summit of the first mountain.

On the road, he also met several magical beasts, but they were all low ranked, at most third or fourth step magical beasts. Upon seeing him, these magical beasts didn't show any desire to get close to him.

Climbing over the mountain, the scenery before his eyes suddenly became clear and open, and after continuously moving

up and down this mountain range, he was respectful before this scenery.

It was a green colored ocean, and from the distant peak, some trees appeared especially tall. Even from his current position, they could be clearly seen.

Chapter 45: Starlight Unicorn (III)

So beautiful! Long Hao Chen couldn't refrain from gasping in astonishment. Such a magnificent wide-opened scenery could only relax him and add a beautiful feeling of clarity to his mood. Taking deep breaths, he felt the abundant light attribute whirling all around him. Resisting, with great difficulty, the urge to enter into seated meditation, he simply took a look around, then directly advanced at a high pace toward the direction of the core of the Sacred Mountain.

The Knights' Sacred Mountain was enormous, and covering it was challenging. Five days passed in a flash. Long Hao Chen had climbed to the peak of dozens of mountains, and had discovered that he had only covered a third of the total distance. He was still far from the core of the mountain.

In addition, the deeper one went, the higher the peak of the mountains would be, and climbing it would accordingly become harder.

However, he still advanced unceasingly, and the grade of the magical beasts he met also increased accordingly. Fifth and sixth step magical beasts seemed to appear endlessly. Sadly, none of them expressed any will to approach him.

In the 'Forget-Me-Not' ring, a sufficient amount of food and water was stored. Long Hao Chen would rest for approximately three hours every day, and although he did not meditate here, he could clearly feel the progress of his spiritual energy.

"Pfiou, need water." After reaching the summit of another mountain, Long Hao Chen could see to his astonishment that on the other side of this mountain, there was a lake.

From a height, this lake looked like a huge block of sapphire embedded in the mountain, reflecting the shining sun. It looked just like the entrance to a wonderland in this human world.

“Excellent. Teacher said that there would be a lot of strong water type beasts in this kind of region. Maybe I can find my destined companion here.”

Without a single pause, he hastily went down the hill. Maybe it was because he had a goal set, but this time he sped up a lot, and descended the mountain in little time.

From afar, he saw that some magical beasts were drinking water on the lakeside, and halted his steps, advancing slowly, approaching them from the front.

He could quickly see a marvellous scene and Long Hao Chen’s heart skipped a bit. What is that?

More than ten unicorns were lingering near the lakeside. These unicorns were clearly a community, they all had a snow white body, gold-colored mane, and a spiral pattern could be seen drawn on the front of their proud faces. Each one of them had a pair of enormous wings, pure-white colored wings with gold-colored feathers at the edge.

This, this is...

Starlight Unicorns?

Unicorns were certainly the mounts knights were the most fond of. Regardless of whether on the sky or on the ground, they were extremely powerful. They were really formidable magical beasts on the surface as well as the air. In addition, unicorns were gentle beasts, and relatively docile. Without a doubt, they were also arrogant. Only by conquering one, or if it took a fancy toward a person, would it perhaps consider concluding an agreement.

Starlight Unicorns are among the most commonly known kinds of unicorns. A fully grown Starlight Unicorn is a peak eighth step magical beast. Its strength is just a step away from that of a ninth step magical beast, second only to the ninth step Divine Unicorn.

A Starlight Unicorn was, in addition, a light attribute magical

beast, so if a poll was to be done, inquiring What kind of mount do knights desire the most as their companion?, at least half of those who were asked would have chosen it.

Looking at these Starlight Unicorns, Long Hao Chen ceased breathing while approaching them, they were indeed even more formidable than his big sister's Rose Unicorn!

They were so pretty, their body simply looked beautiful as well as powerful. The rich holy aura they released was very pure, as if they seemed to have completely merged with the lake, their bodies emitting a faint golden rippling radiance.

Taking a deep breath, Long Hao Chen took out his heavy sword as well as his shield, he knew that the opportunity had come.

He did the best he could to stay tranquil, slowly walking towards these Starlight Unicorns.

Even if it wasn't in the Knights' Sacred Mountain, the kind-hearted Starlight Unicorns would probably not rashly attack humans; besides, they weren't influenced much by the magical array here.

In this group of Starlight Unicorns, there was an especially big one; its body was 6,6 meters (20 feet) long, 4 meters (12 feet) high, and its horn was, in itself, two-thirds of a meter (2 feet) long. Also, it had a pair of completely dazzling gold-colored eyes. While the other Unicorns were drinking water, it was the only one who calmly stood there, observing the surroundings.

Without a doubt, this unicorn was their king.

Seeing Long Hao Chen slowly coming towards it, this Starlight Unicorn looked a bit surprised, its right leg lightly hitting the ground.

Long Hao Chen hurriedly stood in front of it, and sincerely requested: "Respectable Starlight Unicorn, I am a knight from the Knight Temple. I came here to seek a companion. I wonder if it is

possible for both of us to initiate an exchange?”

High leveled magical beasts were generally extremely wise creatures, not the slightest bit inferior to humans, and gaining their acknowledgement was accordingly difficult. Establishing communication was the first step.

This Starlight Unicorn King stared at Long Hao Chen's figure with its pair of golden eyes and upon seeing Long Hao Chen's golden eyes that were even more limpidly dazzling than his, could not help but feel surprised.

An intense light was emitted by the horn at the top of its head, spraying out some gold colored powder that started to envelop Long Hao Chen's body.

Simultaneously, a faint gold color was released from Long Hao Chen's body, especially his chest that was sparkling in golden light.

Such an abundant holy aura came from Long Hao Chen, giving a warm and intimate feeling; he immediately felt exalted from the bottom of his heart, this Unicorn King was willing to communicate with him, it was the proof that he had gotten an opportunity to gain its acknowledgement. It gave him in addition a cordial feeling.

“Hello there, human. ” A gentle, manly sound resounded in Long Hao Chen's mind.

Although Long Xing Yu had told Long Hao Chen before that all high-ranked magical beasts had the ability to communicate with humans, it was the first time he encountered this kind of magical telepathy, he was thus quite nervous. He hurriedly answered, in his thoughts: “Hello there, Starlight Unicorn.”

The Starlight Unicorn then said: “The holy aura released by your body is extremely pure. It is clearly above the level of mine, it makes me feel very comfortable.”

Long Hao Chen's heart skipped up a beat, "In that case, can I become your companion?"

The crucial moment arrived. If this Starlight Unicorn gave his agreement, in that case, Long Hao Chen would obtain a peak eighth step formidable magical beast as his mount. Exactly, a young unicorn! If he was to possess such a formidable mount, even Earth Knights would not necessarily be a match for him.

The Starlight Unicorn became silent upon hearing Long Hao Chen's question. The golden radiance it released became even more intensely strong, and under its influence, Long Hao Chen's eyes became even more sparkling, clear like crystal, reflecting this unicorn's silhouette.

"I really want to agree to thine request." The Starlight Unicorn suddenly started using respectful tone, "But, I don't want to deceive thee."

Long Hao Chen was stunned, "What... what do you mean by that?"

"Respectable Scion of Light, I can clearly see the source of your light. I would really like to become your mount, your companion. If I did so, in my lifetime, it would probably be possible for me to become a ninth step magical beast. But I cannot do that. For the simple reason that we, unicorns, are honest beings. With my innate talent, I do not have the qualifications to serve the Scion of Light. I am sorry, I can only decline your offer."

"Oh? You don't have the qualifications?" Long Hao Chen suddenly gasped. Even if this Starlight Unicorn says he doesn't have the qualifications, he cannot be so much in awe. Before my eyes is a peak eighth step formidable being after all! If he doesn't have the qualifications, what kind of magical beast would be suitable to become my companion?

"I am afraid that this time, you went on an errand for nothing. From what I know, inside of this Knights' Sacred Mountain, I am

not the only one who doesn't have the qualifications, but even the other ninth step magical beast as well as their descendants don't have the qualifications to become your companion." The Starlight Unicorn spoke to Long Hao Chen in a helpless tone.

Chapter 46: Starlight Unicorn (IV)

Long Hao Chen was flabbergasted, “Then, what kind of magical beast should I seek to become my companion mount?”

The Starlight Unicorn answered: “You need a companion with the same innate talent as you. How can there be that kind of existence in the scope of this mountain range? Although this environment is not bad, unless we make a contract, we have no real freedom here, and we are forever unable to leave.”

Long Hao Chen showed a forced smile, “Then, how am I supposed to look for a companion?”

The Starlight Unicorn answered: “You may still have some chance. Inside of the great array of this Sacred Mountain, there is a magical core array. Every so often, new magical beasts will be transferred through it. If those humans can let you directly pick a beast from a fresh transfer, then you may be able to get a fitting partner. However, it is also possible that what you will get will be a low level partner.”

“Thank you.” Long Hao Chen said, somewhat disappointed.

Withdrawing his light aura, the Starlight Unicorn nodded once more in the direction of Long Hao Chen before shifting his gaze to his clan’s members.

“The disciple of trash is also trash. Being deluded enough to attempt to get a Starlight Unicorn as a mount, it’s so ridiculous.” A voice full of disdain could be heard. From the middle of the forest, a figure came out.

Long Hao Chen stared attentively, his expression immediately becoming filled with anger.

What came out from the forest was an excessive 6.6 meter (20 feet) long figure on a 5 meter (15 feet) tall magical beast.

This magical beast had a red colored body and was entirely covered by thick scales, making it very sturdy. On its back, a man was seated, but wasn't that the person who entered a step earlier than Long Hao Chen into the Knights' Sacred Mountain, Gui Wu?

A Scarlet Shelled Earthworm, a seventh step magical beast belonging to the inferior-dragon species. However, the Scarlet Shelled Earthworm before his eyes was clearly underaged. It couldn't fly but, on the ground, it was extremely powerful in terms of fighting capability. It was a beast of the fire attribute.

After no more than a few days, this Gui Wu had surprisingly already found a personal mount. In terms of potential, this Scarlet Shelled Earthworm was an existence of the same rank compared to his father's Dragon Eagle.

"I won't allow you to insult my teacher!" Long Hao Chen shouted loudly.

Gui Wu snorted before saying in response, full of disdain, "Unconvinced? Very well! Come and duel me then. Don't worry, I will not kill you, At most, I will just break all your limbs, nothing more." At the same time, something shone in his hand, and on his left hand appeared a shield while on his right hand appeared a 6.66 meters (twenty feet) lance.

There were two kinds of weapons generally used by knights: heavy swords and lances. Without considering that he had gotten a mount, even if there wasn't this Scarlet Shelled Earthworm, Gui Wu was confident enough in his ability to defeat Long Hao Chen.

Not stepping back, Long Hao Chen, holding his shield and drawing his sword, faced Wu Gui who was riding this Scarlet Shelled Earthworm. Right when he was about to accept Gui Wu's challenge, suddenly, a beam of golden light was shot out from the side.

This dazzling beam of light enveloped Gui Wu together with his Scarlet Shelled Earthworm inside. The previous Starlight Unicorn

appeared by Long Hao Chen's side, upright and unafraid.

Fear appeared in the eyes of this Scarlet Shelled Earthworm; Gui Wu also felt a formidable oppressing power, he was completely aghast at this scene.

Can it be that he really got acknowledged by a Starlight Unicorn? No, that is impossible!

However, Gui Wu was no fool, he wouldn't dare contend against a peak eighth step formidable magical beast; he had practically instantly used his spiritual energy to stimulate his tile. A rich shining golden light was emitted and he fled together with his Scarlet Shelled Earthworm.

The changes before his eyes caused Long Hao Chen to become astonished, this Starlight Unicorn King slowly lowered its head, its shoulder shaking down, gently looking at him. It apparently wanted to say, The dignity of the Scion of Light is not something that can be offended by such a clown.

With a respectful cry, the Starlight Unicorn looked once more at Long Hao Chen before suddenly moving out, closely followed by the group of Starlight Unicorns that were previously drinking the lake's water; they spread out the wings on their back, gracefully flying through the sky, leaving a golden luster behind and disappearing behind the mountains in a blink of an eye.

Standing lifelessly at the same location, Long Hao Chen looked disappointed for a long time because the Starlight Unicorns were magical beasts that were the most suitable to become knights' mounts. Both Long Xing Yu and Ye Hua had described to him the features of this kind of magical beast.

Starlight Unicorns were a symbol of the light element; they were naturally kind-hearted, gentle, truthful, they treated their companions well, and were sure to defend them with their life, but never killed their foes mercilessly. In the Temple Alliance, young girls often fantasized about a Prince Charming on his white horse

coming to get them, the white horse being this kind of Starlight Unicorn.

If it didn't deceive me, then I will not have any result this time. I can only leave it to my luck and rely on the magical array, or hunt magical beasts by myself in the future, with the goal of taming it.

Both routes were uncertain but, without a doubt, the former one had a higher chance of success. After all, if he relied on the magical array to gain a companion magical beast, it could potentially result in summoning a quite formidable one. However, taming a magical beast was impossible, as his current cultivation level would only enable him to confront a magical beast of the fifth step at most. If a peak eighth step Starlight Unicorn said that it could not match his innate talent, how could a fifth step wild magical beast be willing to see itself as Long Hao Chen's companion?

Moreover, his current goal was his own father, chasing after his father's steps to become a Divine Knight. If a future Divine Knight were to have a mere fifth step magical beast acting as his companion, how could this not be as ridiculous as the heavens turning upside down?

After pondering for a little moment, Long Hao Chen made his ultimate decision. He chose to take the bet.

Although he had already made his decision, Long Hao Chen did not immediately convey the leaving message. After all, he could not inform this elder, a guardian of the Sacred Mountain, of the Starlight Unicorn's words. In that case, he would just expose the fact that he possessed the body of a Scion of Light.

Therefore, he decided to simply remain in the mountain, until thirty days had passed. In addition, even though he believed the words of the Starlight Unicorn, in the end, he still wanted to leaving it to luck try one last time. What if a ninth step magical beast took a fancy for him here?

The reality is always cruel; the words of the Starlight Unicorn

weren't the slightest bit biased. During the following twenty days, Long Hao Chen had crossed almost the entire mountain range constituting the Knights' Sacred Mountain, even entering into the domain of several ninth step magical beasts. However, after a single glance, they only drove him out. There was even a very aggressive magical beast that almost seriously wounded him in the process.

Thirty days passed in a blink of eye, and the tile in Long Hao Chen's hand undulated while shining in a pure gold color. The spreading radiance turned into a light mantle that enveloped him inside, and at the next instant, with a flash, the scenery before his eyes changed completely.

The scenery became once more distinct. The first thing Long Hao Chen saw upon opening his eyes was his teacher. Ye Hua was waiting, showing an anxious expression on his face. Thirty days. During the whole thirty days, Long Hao Chen did not take the initiative to convey the leaving message. It could only mean that he did not find a suitable mount. But how was that possible? After all, he possessed the physique of a Scion of Light. How could it be that no magical beast expressed the desire to get close to him?

The handicapped elder was also here, looking at Long Hao Chen all along after the leaving message had been conveyed, he slightly scowled, looking at him with a look filled with doubts. A knight who is not fourteen yet, but is a Grand Knight in terms of cultivation training. Those magical beasts should be fighting among themselves to become his companion! Could it be that he was too high from their scope?

Chapter 47: Long Hao Chen's Companion Mount (I)

Besides Ye Hua and the elder guardian, Gui Ying and Gui Wu were, unexpectedly, also there.

Gui Wu was so frightened by the Starlight Unicorn that he immediately used his tile, though hearing afterwards about the bet with Ye Hua and its stakes frightened him even more. He hastily told his father everything that happened when he met Long Hao Chen.

Gui Ying was also flabbergasted. If that Long Hao Chen got a mount like a Starlight Unicorn, his son had absolutely no way to even be a match for him. Therefore, the father and son decided to remain, cultivating outside of the Sacred Mountain while waiting for Long Hao Chen's return, to see what kind of mount he would get.

The wait lasted twenty days in total; seeing that Long Hao Chen didn't show up at all, Gui Ying's smile became wider and wider day after day, and he occasionally provoked Ye Hua with a few sentences.

At this moment, Gui Ying couldn't help but feel as if he was in heaven upon seeing Long Hao Chen coming back empty handed. He laughed out loudly, looking at Ye Hua, "Elder brother Ye Hua, don't forget the stake of our gamble. I look forward to meeting you at the Demon Hunt Selection Competition. Wu'er, let's go." At the same time he was speaking, Gui Ying made Gui Wu summon his Scarlet Shelled Earthworm on purpose. Showing on his face an expression full of disdain, Gui Ying left with the arrogant Gui Wu at high speed.

Long Hao Chen's gentle jade face was filled with anger, he coldly looked at Gui Ying and his son who were leaving as he engraved this disgrace in his memory.

“You didn’t find a companion?” Ye Hua showed a bitter face. He absolutely did not think that his disciple would follow in his steps; this time, he did even worse than him.

Long Hao Chen lowered his head, “Sorry Teacher, I disappointed you.”

The elder, puzzled, reacted: “With such an innate talent, how is it that you couldn’t find a mount? Don’t tell me that all of these magical beasts are blind? It’s so strange.”

Long Hao Chen showed a forced smile, “I don’t know why it went like that either. I crossed the entire Sacred Mountain, meeting a variety of magical beasts, but none of them was willing to let me approach it.”

The elder let out a sigh, “You don’t have to care so much about that. A lot of warriors who didn’t have a formidable mount either, still became powerhouses. A mount is very important to knights like us, but it isn’t everything. What is your final choice? Do you want to tame a magical beast by yourself in the future, or do you want to try out your luck here? Only, you have to know that if you use the magical array to summon a mount, you will have to conclude a contract with it, so the magical beast that will be summoned will only be able to complete a contract with you. We, knights, can replace regular mounts, but when summoning it completed with a contract of equals, the contract is only nullified when the companion mount dies. Your teacher and I can dirty our hands and take care of this little matter for you, but if we are to do it, it will, for sure, be likely to leave a traumatic experience in your heart, which will be detrimental to your future cultivation.”

Long Hao Chen gave his reply without hesitation: “Elder, I am willing to try out my luck.”

The elder nodded, “Then it’s okay. However, don’t get your hopes up too high. The more one expects, the bigger his disappointment will be.” At this point, he seemed as if he was

speaking about his personal experiences, as the handicapped elder showed a disappointed and frustrated face.

A golden tile appeared in the elder's hands, and with little gestures, he created a golden colored light that enveloped the three of them inside. High overhead, six bizarre symbols appeared, twisting the space around it.

Long Hao Chen vaguely understood that the elder was using the power of the magical array, using a peculiar method to control the inner power of the Knights' Saint Mountain. Apparently, the reason why some mysterious phenomena occurred here was inextricably linked to this magical array.

The golden light was glittering, causing Long Hao Chen to keep his eyes shut; he discovered to his astonishment that during this teleportation, the self-rotations in his chest had become more and more fierce, moving with at least tenfold the ordinary speed.

This process only lasted for roughly ten seconds, after which the self-rotations immediately slowed down, recovering to its original speed. Long Hao Chen then opened his eyes, discovering that the scenery around him had completely changed.

They were, to his surprise, inside of a cavern, and in its walls, blocks of precious stones were inlaid. An insipid golden light illuminated the entire cavern.

Inside the cavern, the light attribute was not strong. It couldn't compare to the Knights' Sacred Mountain at all, it was just at most a little stronger than outside.

This cavern was enormous. Lifting his head, one could see that the roof was 66,6 meters (200 feet) high, the cave had an irregular circular shape as far as one could see, and its diameter was at least 333 meters (1000 feet) long, just like a sort of enormous public square.

However, this place was absolutely empty, no one else other than

them was inside.

Long Hao Chen looked at the ground and discovered, to his astonishment, that there were on the ground some kind of trapezoidal pattern, tightly linked to each other, forming an enormous ring with the shape of a symbol he did not recognize. These patterns were darkly colored.

“No need to look, and neither do you need to say you are unable to recognize it. Even old geezers like us don’t recognize these patterns. It is a spiritual language from ancient times, the language used by an ancient race that is already extinguished. Our ancestors from the Knight Temple wondered what kind of mystery it was upon discovering it too, but around this enormous magical array in the Knights’ Sacred Mountain, a lot of areas existed since an ancient time, drawing their power from mysterious spiritual incantations. This is the first transportation array. Through it, a link can be established to a parallel space for a little moment. To activate it once consumes a huge energy, so it will only last fifteen minutes. If, within fifteen minutes, you cannot find and complete a contract with a companion who is willing to get close to you, I am afraid that you will really have to return empty-handed from this trip.”

The elder’s voice sounded like he felt quite sorry for a genius such as Long Hao Chen; he had never met such a genius in his life before. If such an outstanding young child could not obtain a formidable mount, it would really be a pity.

“Thank you elder.” Long Hao Chen respectfully saluted the elder.

The elder shook his head, “Come in the transporting array and sit down. After I activate it, you should be able to feel it to some extent.”

“Yes.”

Long Hao Chen acted in accordance to the elder’s instructions, taking large strides towards the center of the array. It was shaped

like a circle with a diameter of 10 meters (30 feet) and there was a large symbol in its center.

This symbol looked somewhat similar to the word “如”, but it had a kind of distorted appearance, and for an unknown reason, when Long Hao Chen saw this enormous word, the Saint Spiritual Stove in his chest began throbbing all of a sudden.

Sitting cross-legged, Long Hao Chen got rid of all of his distracting thoughts. This was his last opportunity.

Ye Hua was almost as nervous as Long Hao Chen. He tightly clenched his fists to the extent that the veins could be seen, his fingernails almost digging in his palms.

The elder slowly raised his hand with the gold colored tile inside. Ye Hua clearly saw that at this instant, his right hand turned into a golden colored penetrating light, his palm seemingly becoming just like a sort of precious stone.

It was [Brilliant Body], the symbol of seventh step knights, turning a portion of their body into light. Temple Knights with a formidable level of cultivation could even turn their entire body into light. In this form, the holy attribute spiritual energy they could use would double. Even though it could only be maintained for a short time, it would double the defense of the body against any type of attack, what kind of notion was that?

Chapter 48: Long Hao Chen's Companion Mount (II)

Soon enough, Ye Hua discovered that it was not only the hand of the elder that turned into a body of light, but even his head and his few sparse specks of white hair that suddenly became gold colored, his head becoming transparent. As if it was soaking in an enormous ocean of holy aura, his hair was rising; Ye Hua, feeling surprised, was falling back, leaning his body against the stone wall at a side of the cave.

“A [Complete Brilliant Body]?” Ye Hua cried out in alarm.

[Brilliant Body] was, after all, something only knights of at least the seventh step, Temple Knights, could use. But in a higher cultivation level, the range it could cover would be increased. Only when the appearance of one's whole body turned into something similar to a crystal could the ability be called [Complete Brilliant Body], symbol of a ninth rank Temple Knight! In other words, the elder before their eyes could be an eighth step Saint Knight, or at least a ninth rank Temple Knight. This kind of existence, in the outside world, could become the Hall Master of a regional Knight Hall.

The effect of [Brilliant Body] could not go to the extent of affecting an entire area. At most, it could double the offensive power, and the higher one's cultivation level, the longer [Brilliant Body] could last.

The elder coughed before suddenly pouring the light elemental spiritual energy into the golden tile; at this moment, a rich bright light spread out.

The bright light spread out in every direction, the ancient trapezoids on the ground were all stimulated, shining one after another while an imposing magic undulation started occurring.

As Ye Hua was leaning against the wall, looking at this scene, he felt as if his eyes were drawn into the scene, and he had a strange feeling as if he had finally broken through the threshold of the 3,000th spiritual energy level.

Psh— —

All the ancient symbols were set aflame in a split second, the multitudinous patterns composing of ancient symbols turned into ripples of light, intensely shining throughout the room.

At this moment, Long Hao Chen felt that the Saint Spiritual Stove in his chest was wriggling violently in his body. The dense external light attribute element seemed to stimulate the Spiritual Stove in his body, passing through Long Hao Chen's body with a part of it remaining inside, stimulating the self-rotations in his body.

The myriad of golden bright patterns soared and began to whirl in this process. What it formed looked like a huge tornado that did not have the slightest bit of air inside: this huge and terrifying shape was made of light element.

Long Hao Chen suddenly felt his body shake. It was as if an inexhaustible source of light energy had filled his body, boosting the self rotations that occurred in it.

Mh

A sound similar to a bird humming could be heard as the light pattern converged at a point, making a golden circular vortex of light appear, while simultaneously, from this vortex, a golden light grew suddenly bigger and bigger. Long Hao Chen, seated upright in the middle of the great array, was being enveloped by this vortex.

The voice of the handicapped elder reached Long Hao Chen's ears, "The selection may now start. You will be able to feel the aura of countless magical beasts. From these auras, you have to find the one that seems the most intimate and suitable to become your

equal for a contract. Keep in mind that you have to find the one that seems the most intimate to you, otherwise, the contract will be impossible to make and there will be no way to bring it to our world.”

Long Hao Chen could clearly hear everything the handicapped elder said, but he did not give a single reply because a bizarre feeling was already filling his body.

At the moment this golden light dropped, Long Hao Chen felt as if his soul was already far away, entering in another mystical world.

This world was filled with countless specks of light. These specks of light converged to form an essence of light element that surrounded him. The current him seemed as if he was the center of this world; the light essence contained countless specks of light that followed his gaze, as if they were under his control.

However, the specks of light were really too numerous and brilliantly colored. Each speck of light had a different aura. A quarter of an hour, he firmly kept in his mind that he had only a quarter of an hour. He had a single chance at this.

Unwilling to spend too much time pondering, even more unwilling to waste time, Long Hao Chen began casually looking at the numerous specks of light, filtering the aura of each one of them.

He had no way of knowing that each one of this essences of light was a parallel space, and these specks of light composing it were the auras emitted by magical beasts coming from this parallel space. This location, the antique great array, was precisely a formidable existence that included this parallel space. It was also the core of the Knights' Sacred Mountain.

Coldness, fear, opposition, wrath... he could feel countless states of emotions, each one of them launching attacks against him mentally. Only, these attacks were not powerful at all. Relying on

his formidable mental strength, he increased his perception. It seemed as if every split seconds, dozens of golden specks were filtered out.

The benefits of having an exceptional innate mental strength were undoubtedly manifesting right now. If it was someone else, he would perhaps not even be able to examine a tenth of these specks of light.

Time passed, minute by minute, second by second, and Long Hao Chen could not help but feel more and more anxious. He could feel that the auras that were affectionate to him were way too few, the overwhelming majority of these specks of lights was transmitting terror, as if they were afraid of him.

The quarter of an hour was going to soon come to an end, and Long Hao Chen could feel that everything before his eyes gradually looked more and more illusionary.

No, no, I have to find my companion! Long Hao Chen unwillingly bellowed. At this moment, his perception of the surroundings suddenly became a bit clearer.

Inside of the cave, the elder kept observing Long Hao Chen. The reason why the time limit was only set at a quarter of an hour was that the extreme limit of time Long Hao Chen's spiritual energy enabled him to bear this was precisely a quarter of an hour. It was also the reason why only young talents under 20 years of age could use this method. If the age exceeded this number, the magical array would instead harm the user.

At this moment, a quarter of an hour had passed, but the golden light Long Hao Chen emitted had not disappeared yet. His face was very pale and he was clenching his teeth in pain.

What formidable willpower! The elder secretly gasped in admiration. He clearly knew that when too much spiritual energy had been consumed, and the body could not stand the process anymore, the magical array would send the person back. Only

formidable willpower could enable one to endure it longer and stay for a few more moments.

“I found it!” The scenery before Long Hao Chen’s eyes became unreal. He was in a fuzzy state and subconsciously shifted his look at the direction of the light essence. An intense feeling of affection and happiness was completely filling his soul.

Without hesitation, Long Hao Chen initiated the contract of equals. The stamp that Ye Hua handed him earlier used his mental strength to connect the two souls. As long as both sides agreed, it would succeed, but otherwise, it had no way to succeed. It was a kind of peaceful magical contract. As time was running out, he did not even have the time to show his excitement.

With a bright radiance, the link was completed in a flash, and as he was filled with joy and cordiality, his breath seemed to have accelerated intensely. Both sides had agreed to the contract in a split second.

The light specks disappeared together with the wide area of light essences and everything turned back to a golden color. In the middle of this blazing gold color, Long Hao Chen felt that another presence was together with him. It was an aura that was brimming with affection.

Chapter 49: Long Hao Chen's Companion Mount (III)

“He succeeded!” The handicapped elder called out, pleasantly surprised. His [Brilliant Body] was gradually reverting back to normal as the bright colored lights that filled the whole cave accordingly disappeared.

The elder's forehead was already full of sweat; clearly, supporting this enormous transporting magical array was a huge burden for him.

Hearing about the situation, Ye Hua hurried together with the elder to the center of the cave.

As the bright light became weaker, Long Hao Chen's figure gradually appeared before them. Except for the fact his face was somewhat pale, there wasn't any other change on him.

As his soul returned, Long Hao Chen felt completely empty, inside as well as outside. Almost all of his internal spiritual energy had been consumed, making his originally slow-moving self-rotations almost stagnate, together with an important dimming of the light emitted by his Saint Spiritual Stove. Fortunately, as a knight, he still had his external spiritual energy. Although he felt empty inside, it still did not affect his ordinary movements.

Subconsciously, Long Hao Chen's vision shifted towards the presence that was in front of his body. The fact that he exerted so much mental and physical strength, that it was precisely a month ago that he came to the Knights' Sacred Mountain, wasn't that just for his sake?

However, when Long Hao Chen saw the companion he concluded a contract of equals with facing him, he was immediately astonished; the nearby Ye Hua and handicapped elder were astonished as well.

The reason why they looked so sluggish wasn't that Long Hao Chen's companion magical beast looked too formidable, but it was actually that...

It was a lizard, a little more than a meter tall, with a layer of thin black scales covering its skin. These scales formed an exotic shape somewhat resembling a trapezoid. Two arcs were formed from both sides and linked together, forming a final shape quite similar to that of a tower shield like those used by heavy armored knights.

Its head did not look special compared to ordinary lizards, its pair of little red colored eyes winking while looking at Long Hao Chen, expressing an indescribable familiarity. It was sticking out its tongue ordinarily, seemingly able to feel Long Hao Chen's flavor under his foot.

If it was only that, Long Hao Chen would not look so dull, the fact it was at most a second step Earthfire Lizard was no big deal for him. However, on the body of this lizard, there were dozens of criss-crossed scars, its blood was flowing all around, and a big bulge could be seen on its neck, buckling upwards; this bulge was almost as thick as its neck. Using the word 'ugly' to describe the scars on its body would almost seem like a compliment.

Long Hao Chen didn't expect at all that all those hardships he went through to finally manage to summon his companion would result in summoning a seemingly handicapped creature. Additionally, it was a second step evil mutated Earthfire Lizard. Since the time Long Hao Chen began cultivating, everything went smoothly until now; this was the first blow he ever received.

"Woo woo—" The Earthfire Lizard seemed like it enjoyed Long Hao Chen's smell: it was rubbing against his body, showing intimate little red eyes.

A sort of forced smile appeared on Long Hao Chen's face: through the pact of equals, he could feel how strong this lizard was. It had a cultivation level corresponding approximately to the second step.

Starlight Unicorn King, did you deceive me? You told me that because of my body of Scion of Light, you weren't qualified to become my companion, but then, what is it that I have before my eyes right now? A second step Earthfire Lizard!

Ye Hua silently walked to Long Hao Chen's side, pulling him from the ground. He unenthusiastically said: "What you have to bear is nothing compared to what happened to me. You couldn't find a satisfactory companion mount in the Sacred Mountain, so you will simply have to rely on hunting magical beasts to find one in the future. If you can reach the step of Divine Knight, even making an enormous dragon to yield will not be impossible."

With the sound of jingling metal, Ye Hua took out the heavy sword from his back, preparing to launch a powerful blow.

The Earthfire Lizard seemed to be able to sense its life being threatened, and although it was covered all over in scars, it hid behind Long Hao Chen's back, exposing only its drum-shaped head, shooting terrified looks at Ye Hua.

"Teacher, what are you doing?!" With a Dang sound, Long Hao Chen took out his sword and used its handle to block Ye Hua's chop.

Ye Hua didn't expect that, "Little fool, don't tell me that you want to keep this useless cripple? You have to know that if it is not killed, the contract with you will be completed and you will never be able to conclude another contract of equals with another magical beast."

Long Hao Chen's look was unwilling, helpless, and even angry, but he did not show the slightest murderous intent.

"Teacher, do you remember the story of you and your Vibrant Mountain Bird? In that extremely difficult moment, he chose you, and as a result, you regarded him like your closest relative. Don't you know that it was at the last moment that this little guy answered to my call? Despite the fact that he's not powerful at all,

that he's handicapped, he's the one who accepted making a contract with me at the very last moment."

"We are companions, so I want to protect him, to keep him safe, even if I cannot get a genuine mount for the rest of my life. I cannot give up on him because of what he is. It is not by fear of being haunted by a traumatic experience. It is because at the moment we concluded the agreement, he already became my dear relative."

As he said this, Long Hao Chen slowly crouched down, gently patting this Earthfire Lizard's head. He could feel that its scales were covered in a kind of silk-like material that did not feel thick at all.

The Earthfire Lizard did not move the slightest bit. It was as if it had turned into a statue, looking attentively at Long Hao Chen with its two red colored eyes.

"Don't worry little guy, I will not abandon you. Neither will I require you to fight with me. I just wish that you could become my friend, is that okay?"

The Earthfire Lizard recovered its ability to move, and gently stretched out its tongue, licking Long Hao Chen's hand.

Ye Hua withdrew his heavy sword and sighed, "Kid, you are really too soft-hearted, your feelings are too deep."

Long Hao Chen gave his teacher an apologetic look, "Teacher, trust me, I will cultivate very seriously, so even if I don't have a companion mount to assist me, I won't lose to this Gui Wu. Teacher, my internal energy is nearly exhausted, can you please help me treat the injuries on my companion's body?"

What else could Ye Hua say? He simply silently nodded, "Okay."

Using holy light in his hands, he released a recovering skill, while the handicapped elder, who didn't say anything until now, suddenly interrupted him: "Wait a moment."

“Mh?” Long Hao Chen and Ye Hua turned towards him at the same time.

The handicapped elder said in a deep voice: “If you don’t want him to die, don’t treat him.”

Long Hao Chen stood, doubtfully asking, “Senior, why?”

The handicapped senior gave him a serious look, showing a sincere smile: “You are a good person, a really good person. I can see in you the standards of a knight that are pity and compassion. Unfortunately, although you are kind-hearted, you must bring yourself to abandon this little guy. I am afraid that you cannot take him away, for the simple reason that he possesses a physique with the darkness attribute. If you are to use holy light skills to treat him, it will only harm him instead.”

“Darkness attribute!” Long Hao Chen was astonished.

The elder nodded, answering: “When summoning a magical beast through the magical array, some will come from a place similar to the abyss. Regardless of their elemental attribute, those ones will innately have a physique with the darkness attribute. All the darkness attribute magical beasts, upon leaving this cave, will get killed by our great holy light array. But here, you cannot send him back to cancel the contract and any kind of magical beast has no way to affect this magical array. Although it looks strange to me that a a magical beast with this kind of dark attribute physique could be attracted to you, and furthermore make an agreement with you, I have no other option but to tell you that by choosing to answer to your call, he followed the path of his own demise.”

“Wha-?” Long Hao Chen was shocked. It seemed as if this Earthfire Lizard had understood everything, as it pressed up against Long Hao Chen’s body, trembling and showing a pair of little red eyes brimming with fear.

Chapter 50: Long Hao Chen's companion mount (IV)

The elder bitterly said: "Give it up. I know you are really unwilling, but it will not influence your future cultivation. Even through the option of taming a magical beast yourself, you would get a much more powerful mount than this mutated Earthfire Lizard."

Long Hao Chen lowered his head and saw the Earthfire Lizard's pair of eyes. They were linked by contract, so he could feel the current state of mind of this Earthfire Lizard.

This little guy seemed like he could understand the content of their conversation. His current face was full of fear, loneliness, pain, and unwillingness.

Long Hao Chen naturally wanted a formidable companion mount, but seeing the changes on this Earthfire Lizard's complexion, he was reminded of the time when his parents left Odin Mountain. That time, did he not experience the same feelings? He's my companion! How can I abandon him like that?

"Elder, is there really no other solution? I don't want to abandon him." Long Hao Chen stooped, and hugged it without avoiding the slightest bit the parts of its body that were dirtied and full of dark, red-colored blood.

Held in Long Hao Chen's embrace, the Earthfire Lizard's mood became better, moving its head on Long Hao Chen's bosom. Just like a kid who found a close relative, its two thick and solid claws were holding Long Hao Chen's shoulder, tightly hooking his clothes.

The elder hesitated for a moment, and lightly sighed, "You are actually such a kind-hearted kid. It's not that there's no solution, but it will be enormously harmful to your body."

Long Hao Chen held the Earthfire Lizard, weighing 25 kilograms, and feeling his heartbeat, pursed up his lips, “Please give me your pointers, elder.”

The elder’s voice sank down, “If you want him to leave this place alive, there will only be a single solution: to change his physique. Turn its attribute from darkness to light. Only then, he will be able to safely leave.”

Ye Hua was flabbergasted, “Elder, it doesn’t seem very realistic. How can a darkness attribute body turn into a light attribute?”

The elder answered, “Of course it is impossible for us, but it is possible for him. Relying on the existence of this contract of equals, this Earthfire Lizard receives a lot of power from you. And using your body which possesses a strong light attribute, you may transmit your blood into the Earthfire Lizard’s body, to wash off its darkness attribute.”

Ye Hua took a deep breath, his ice-cold face showing a look full of incomprehension, “How much blood would be needed to accomplish that?”

The elder shook his head, “I don’t know either. It depends on how much of Long Hao Chen’s blood the Earthfire Lizard will reject during the process, as well as the quality of the light attribute energy contained in his blood. Regardless of whether it succeeds or not, the vital energy of this kid will be reduced. In my opinion, it is really not worth saving a second step magical beast of this kind.”

“Hao Chen.” Ye Hua turned at the direction of Long Hao Chen, he was shocked like never before.

“Teacher, no need to say it, I have already made my decision. Since we entered into an agreement, this is the destiny that links me to him. If I am to abandon such a little guy and forsake his life, how can I deserve to be called a Guardian Knight?” Long Hao Chen, full of determination, tightly held the Earthfire Lizard in his

embrace; bowing little by little, he performed a salute to the elder, “I await the Elder’s guidance on how to do it.”

The elder sighed, “A kid with your temperament is really a rare thing; even though you didn’t get a formidable mount this time, your future accomplishment will be limitless. The method is simple: make use of your contract of equals and let your blood pass through your agreement mark to enter his body.”

“Many thanks, elder.” Long Hao Chen quickly replied before slowly crouching down, facing the Earthfire Lizard on the ground.

The Earthfire Lizard lifted its head, gave a look to Long Hao Chen, unceasingly letting out ‘Boo hoo’ sounds.

“Don’t be afraid, I will do all I can to save you. I am already your companion, if I cannot protect you, how can I be considered a Guardian Knight?”

Long Hao Chen sat cross legged, facing the Earthfire Lizard; before thinking, he had already pulled and brought the marks of equals on both sides closer.

A contract of equals, also known as the summoning contract of equals, required a human initiating a link and launching the request, enabling him to summon the magical beast.

A drop of purple-colored radiance lit on Long Hao Chen’s forehead, the purple light gradually growing to the size of a fingernail, faintly discernible on his forehead.

“Yi.” The handicapped elder gave Ye Hua an astonished look, “It’s so strange, his agreement contract mark seems extremely complex.”

Normally, the more formidable the magical beast that agreed to the contract was, the more complex the agreement contract mark would be.

Ye Hua looked full of doubts, “What?! Isn’t that a mere speck of light?”

The elder shook his head, answering, “No, it is nowhere so simple: the agreement contract mark is just covered by this purple light; even though I cannot see how it is shaped, it is for sure not so simple. Look at this Earthfire Lizard.”

Accompanying the activation of Long Hao Chen’s contract, a contract mark appeared on his forehead as well as on the body of the Earthfire Lizard.

Generally speaking, the human as well as the magical beast were supposed to have the contract mark appear on their forehead, but it was not the case with this Earthfire Lizard. An excessively large bright purple-colored pattern was slowly appearing on its back until it almost covered the lizard entirely. This dense bright purple color looked like a layer of mist, covering its back. Although it was many times bigger than Long Hao Chen’s head, they could not see clearly the pattern of the purple-colored mist enveloping its back.

Long Hao Chen told the Earthfire Lizard in a calm voice, “Little guy, don’t be afraid. I will use the light attribute in my blood to change the attribute of your body. I don’t know if it will be painful, but you have to endure, okay?”

Upon hearing his words, the Earthfire Lizard unexpectedly nodded, showing a look full of comprehension, its pair of red eyes filling with gratitude and affection.

Long Hao Chen lifted both of his hands, and a thin ball appeared in his left hand’s forefinger. Immediately, a gold-colored light appeared from his fingertips that released a golden light about 6.6 centimeters long. Externalizing the internal spiritual energy, this ability was the symbol of knights of the fourth rank. Third step knights could, through the use of [Lightning Cut], externalize their spiritual energy, but fourth step Grand Knights did not have to use a skill to externalize their spiritual energy.

With a spark of golden light, Long Hao Chen cut open his right wrist and, at this moment, fresh blood gushed out, funneling into

the big mark on the Earthfire Lizard's back.

“Woo——” The companion screamed; the Earthfire Lizard lifted its head, its body violently shaking. Its four claws exerted a lot of physical force, grabbing the spiritual mark on the ground to stabilize its own body and keep itself from moving suddenly.

The handicapped elder displayed an astonished face once more, “This Earthfire Lizard is really mentally capable. It seems that he is more mysterious than his appearance would suggest it.”

Ye Hua showed a smile that looked kind of forced, “I hope it's true.” He really wanted to prevent Long Hao Chen from proceeding with this; a second step Earthfire Lizard was really not worth it at all! Besides, the Demon Hunt Selection Competition was going to take place in half a year. With his vital force decreased at this moment, it was uncertain whether Long Hao Chen would be able to handle the competition. However, could he really block this disciple of his? Long Hao Chen did not lose his spirit yet; he did not give up hope and, from Ye Hua's point of view, this was something even more precious than the title of Demon Hunter.

Long Hao Chen's blood dripped onto the mark on the Earthfire Lizard's back, instantly melting into it, and golden halos spread all around this purple mark, covering the entire body of this Earthfire Lizard.

As each halo of golden light flowed around, and the Earthfire Lizard's body shivered violently, as if its body was withstanding electric shocks. However, like before, it did not move.

In a similar way, layer after layer of golden halos flowed around, as a terrifying darkness attribute gas was being emitted from the Earthfire Lizard's body and progressively dispersed.

Chapter 51: Evolution (1)

Long Hao Chen observed the evolution of the Earthfire Lizard carefully; his right hand was clenching into a fist. Despite the fact that his blood was still being drained, he looked quite stable.

Layer upon layer of gold-colored halos were unceasingly cleansing the body of the Earthfire Lizard as it emitted a white smoke, the wounds on its back becoming vestiges of the past. Clearly, the dark energy of this Earthfire Lizard was being attacked by the holy energy, and it looked painful.

If not for the contract of equals between them, the large amount holy energy released by Long Hao Chen's physique as a Scion of Light would have already destroyed it.

Veins appeared on the Earthfire Lizard's face; blood was continuously seeping out from its mouth as it violently shivered, its four claws tightly dug into the ground from beginning to end to prevent it from making sudden movements.

It lifted up its head towards Long Hao Chen, and human and beast looked at each other with looks filled with determination and affection. That's right, their eyes were filled with the affection family members would have for each other.

With his blood still being drained, Long Hao Chen's face became paler and paler, and signs that he was becoming feebler were appearing. Even though he was already above the 1,000th spiritual energy level, he was still human in the end. If a human lost a third of his blood, he would die, and at the rate he was losing his blood, it would not be long before this kind of fatality would occur.

Time passed, minute by minute, second by second, and both Ye Hua and the handicapped elder were, at this moment, extremely nervous.

The handicapped elder, guardian of the Sacred Mountain, was

not young anymore, and it was not the first time he had seen this kind of situation. It looked like this was likely to be successful. In the first scenario, the Earthfire lizard would not be able to bear the holy blood baptism and would die. In the second scenario, after the holy blood baptism was done, it would become magical beast with a physique of light and Long Hao Chen would have reached his goal. In the third scenario, the Earthfire Lizard would not be able to stand the pain and would run away from the baptism. All of the effort would have been for naught in this case. In the fourth scenario, the one that the disabled elder and Ye Hua were the most unwilling to see, Long Hao Chen would be unable to persevere because of the blood loss. If it got to that point, not only would the Earthfire Lizard's baptism not be completed, but Long Hao Chen's life would also be endangered because of the blood loss.

Long Hao Chen's right hand that was originally steady began to gradually shiver more and more. His fair white skin had already turned pale, the original luster and moisture had disappeared long ago. The speed of the blood flowing in his wrist was also gradually slowing; besides the external harm to his body, he had also lost a large amount of blood.

However, the strange thing was that, right now, the body of the Earthfire Lizard was not shivering. On its originally pitch black colored scales, a faint golden luster was forming little by little. The rotted wounds were healing at an astonishing speed. Clearly, the hard times were over, and its body was transforming at an astonishing speed.

The most peculiar changes were on the contract mark on the bodies of Long Hao Chen and this Earthfire Lizard, simultaneously acquiring, little by little, a purple-gold color. It was already purple-colored in the past, but with the addition of this faint golden luster, the whole mark appeared a lot more dazzling. The layer of purple mist also became duller, and behind it, astonishingly complex patterns could faintly be seen.

Long Hao Chen's body shook, almost falling down.

"Not good, Hao Chen cannot persevere." Ye Hua's heart was beating quickly. He could not refrain himself from rushing to his side.

"Keep waiting." The handicapped elder lifted his hand, blocking Ye Hua from rushing forward.

Long Hao Chen lifted up his left hand, pressing it on the neck of the Earthfire Lizard to support his own body. He was already unable to see anything before him clearly; the blood loss gave him a dizzy feeling that could make him fall down at any time.

Do not abandon, do not renounce. Long Hao Chen gritted his teeth and bore the pain, silently remembering these six words.

Despite the fact that he had not spent a significant amount of time together with this Earthfire Lizard, it was the first time he experienced the effects of this contract of equals. The fact that he felt as familiar with it as a close relative, while hating the idea of having to leave its side, showed that it already had an important place in his heart.

Long Hao Chen had no siblings; these few years, Li Xin was like a dear sister to him. A moment ago, he made this ultimate decision because he thought if such a calamity were to fall upon him, would Li Xin not have chosen to do the same?

Companion, what is a companion? Together in life and in death, that is what a genuine companion is.

Vaguely seeing the Earthfire Lizard in his sight at this moment, Long Hao Chen did not find it ugly at all.

At this moment, more than a third of Long Hao Chen's blood was already drained out; his situation was critical.

The handicapped elder had stopped Ye Hua, but made preparations to intervene at any time. In the case Long Hao Chen's vitality was exhausted to the very limit, he would immediately

make his move

“HOUU–” A roaring sound full of excitement resounded while a golden luster was being emitted from within the Earthflame Lizard. The darkness attribute aura vanished completely, together with its fierceness.

A golden light shot out from the hands of the elder directed at Long Hao Chen’s wounded wrist, healing it instantly.

Long Hao Chen’s body felt weak: he had already fallen down, but he still did not lose consciousness because he wanted to see whether he had succeeded or not.

A wet tongue was gently licking his face; the pair of red little eyes brimming with health and vigor were just like two embedded rubies.

The gold-purple-colored agreement mark on its back was quietly disappearing, and the wounds on the Earthfire Lizard’s body had already disappeared as its scales took the shape of a shield and a golden luster was being emitted all around.

Ye Hua let out a sigh and advanced at a stroll, with the intent of having Long Hao Chen take some medicine. He knew that Long Hao Chen had succeeded, but he had paid a great price for that. Having lost so much blood, he would, unfortunately, take about a year to recover.

“HOUU–” The Earthfire Lizard suddenly approached Ye Hua, letting out a deep roar and looking at him with its pair of healthy little red-colored eyes. A big fireball was released from its mouth, aiming to bombard Ye Hua directly.

“Mh?!” Ye Hua really did not expect that action as a [Divine Light Mantle] wrapped around him, aiming to block the incoming fireball.

“Let’s not approach him for the moment! It seems like he is trying to do something!” The handicapped elder shouted loudly.

The Earthfire Lizard's little fireball stopped Ye Hua in his tracks, and its gaze was directed at Long Hao Chen's weakened face once more. Right afterwards, a purple-colored brilliance suddenly appeared, emitted from its back and directed at the top of the cave.

This purple ray was aimed straight; it was as if its back was suddenly split open, letting bright patterns appear, before the Earthfire Lizard lifted its head once more. Only, at this moment, a purple-colored brilliance appeared in its pair of red eyes. These purple shrouded eyes seemed ice cold and noble.

Chapter 52: Evolution (2)

Purple-colored patterns extended on its back from its tail to neck, and from there, starting to extend in a non-straight line into two paths: the first one going to the top of its head and the second one going to the bulge above its neck.

A peculiar spiritual energy was calmly undulating. The Earthfire Lizard suddenly seemed to be in pain, but it was mostly excited. Its body started to shake violently. This unstable spiritual energy was still surging out in the shape of purple-colored lines, but the level of these undulations clearly exceeded what an average second step magical beast could do.

“Evolution?! This Earthfire Lizard wants to evolve!” The handicapped elder cried out in alarm. A magical beast evolving was not a rare thing, but generally, only magical beasts above the fifth step had the possibility to evolve. This Earthfire Lizard was merely a second step magical beast, but right after having received Long Hao Chen’s blood, it wanted to evolve!

With a Pu sound, intense purple-colored turbulences suddenly appeared in the air, and immediately, its one meter tall body started to grow at an intense speed that could be seen with the naked eye.

The evolution was not just about the size of its body, the scales also underwent fantastic changes: from their originally flat and slippery appearance, they became sharper and longer, visibly thicker. The most peculiar change was on the bulge above its neck: this bulge, unexpectedly, expanded together with the rest of the body.

With a Puchi sound, the body of the Earthfire Lizard suddenly became stiff, and immediately afterwards, from the bulge on its neck, a brand new head started forming, appearing by the side of its former head. At this moment, its body grew two meters long

from its former length of a meter.

A purple light suddenly shone and it was as if everything became motionless. The purple colored patterns extended to its second head, a few traces of bulges forming above this second head; it looked much fiercer.

It seemed that after the evolution, there was no difference between the second head and the first one. The only thing that was not similar was the color of the eyes. This second head had a pair of gold-colored eyes.

After the evolution of the Earthfire Lizard, its four main limbs became much thicker and the shell on its back more resistant. Its new appearance after the evolution, resulting in this pair of heads, did not look handicapped anymore like it used to because of the former bulge on its neck.

After having evolved, by the root of the neck of the second head, a new bulge appeared again. Only, it was not as big as the former bulge, it was just the size of a fist.

“Fourth step middle rank?” Ye Hua and the handicapped elder looked at each other, face to face; in their eyes, there was a look of extreme shock.

Each magical beast step was divided into low rank, middle rank, high rank, and peak rank. To jump from the middle rank of the second step to the middle rank of the fourth step was an eight-stage evolution!

Not even speaking about having seen that in the past, they had not even heard about this kind of phenomenon. Ordinary evolutions of magical beast were supposed to make only a few changes to the body at most, increasing strength by a bit and raising from the middle rank to the high rank. A step evolution was something they never heard of, but it was just accomplished by this Earthfire Lizard before their eyes.

No, it could not be called an Earthfire Lizard anymore: the second head's attribute was completely different, emitting a holy aura.

A dual-headed dual-attributed lizard race magical beast, what kind of species was that?! In particular, after the breakthrough that occurred during this evolution, the new appearance of this Earthfire Lizard was not that of a good-for-nothing magical beast anymore.

Ye Hua paid special attention to the new bulge that appeared from its new head; could it be that a third head would appear in the next evolution of this Earthfire Lizard?

Ye Hua swallowed a gulp of his saliva and asked the elder by his side, "Elder, do you recognize this kind of magical beast?"

The elder bitterly laughed as he shook his head, "Not in the least. There is no one who can identify all the kinds of magical beasts, especially those summoned from different dimensions. It looks like this little guy had picked up a treasure! So long as this lizard can evolve once more, Long Hao Chen will possess an outstanding mount. Yi, what is he doing?!"

While they were speaking, the two-headed lizard who just completed its evolution lowered its pair of heads. Long Hao Chen watched attentively, also shocked by the evolution. The long tail was swung from behind to the front and the second head bit into it, effusing an insipid purple colored blood. With this evolution, the color of its blood had also unexpectedly changed.

The agreement mark appeared once more, but this agreement mark on the back of the lizard did not grow bigger together with the evolution; this time, the lizard was the one who triggered its apparition.

The long tail slowly moved forward, purple blood flowing at the edge of its tail, directly aiming for the mark on Long Hao Chen's forehead.

Long Hao Chen's body remained stiff as he felt a warm blazing current flowing, pouring into his forehead, and instantly spreading through his entire body.

"Returning the favor. He's using his own blood to transmit it to Hao Chen." Ye Hua was amazed at this scene.

The higher the level of a magical beast, the more intelligent it was supposed to be. Magical beasts above the sixth step were supposed to have an intelligence superior to that of humans, but this two headed lizard before their eyes seemed excessively intelligent; it had even learned the method Long Hao Chen used to help him to make up for the deficiency of Long Hao Chen's blood.

Two heads, four eyes, two red and two golden colored, warmly gazed at Long Hao Chen, the body of the two headed lizard lightly shaking.

Veins started to appear, going from Long Hao Chen's forehead to the rest of his body; he felt as if his whole body was a kind of forge and was unable to say if he felt painful or comfortable. He could only vaguely sense his blood vessels filling with a scorching hot feeling, undergoing changes capable of turning heaven and earth upside down. His dull feeling gradually disappeared in this scorching hot feeling.

The insipid blood was flowing out from the two headed lizard's body, taking the shape of a red halo, slowly converging and then gathering into the agreement mark on its back.

Long Hao Chen and the lizard shook simultaneously, and both sides sensing a vague familiar feeling.

"Their blood contract is even deeper than the relation between master and servant." The handicapped elder involuntarily shouted out, "Starting a blood link to save his master! This two-headed lizard is really repaying Hao Chen for his kindness."

Ye Hua also knew about the blood contract, a rare kind of

extreme contract: as long as Long Hao Chen was the slightest bit harmed, this two-headed lizard would be harmed too. And if Long Hao Chen was to die, then it would undoubtedly die as well. However, if he was the one to die, that would not affect Long Hao Chen the slightest bit.

A blood contract was said to have a lot of other uses: it was even possible for one to transmit his capabilities to his master through it. Though generally, no magical beast was willing to enter this kind of contract; thus, the mysteries of blood contracts were something known by only a few people.

The handicapped elder took a deep breath, speaking slowly: “Whether this lizard can or cannot evolve once more in the future, he will be far closer to your disciple than any other knight companion. This is, perhaps, something beneficial coming from this setback.”

The radiance gradually vanished and the purple veined patterns on Long Hao Chen’s body were slowly disappearing. The two-headed lizard took back its tail, advancing to Long Hao Chen’s side, using its two heads to gently stroke his leg.

“I have such a great companion! My name is Hao Chen, and I will give you this name, Hao Yue”

Chapter 53: Entrance Examination and Equipment (I)

Ping, ping, ping The door was being knocked.

“Lil’ Bro, we have to set off. Are you ready?” Li Xin was hitting the door in an unladylike fashion as she called out.

“I’m ready, I’m ready.” Opening the door, Long Hao Chen came out from the room.

Li Xin’s eyes shone, “Wah, so handsome.”

Long Hao Chen wore a white warrior outfit, neat and functional. A silver dragon was embroidered on it, covering the two sides of the cloth including the collar. At the center of the belt, a shining stone was inlaid and holy energy was spread around it.

Long black hair was scattered on his shoulder, and it was as if a starry sky could be seen through his limpid golden eyes. Red lips, white teeth, skin emitting a luster of gems and as moisturized as jade, a high nose, and a deep gaze: a single flaw absolutely could not be found on his appearance.

Barely six months had passed but, once again, Long Hao Chen had grown a little: he had a tall and thin build without any excessive fat built up. It was a well shaped and perfectly proportioned body.

Ordinarily, Long Hao Chen’s appearance with regular clothes was already stunning; but now that he changed his clothes into this gorgeous warrior outfit, he could simply make any girl jealous of him.

Long Hao Chen felt somewhat awkward wearing these clothes, “Sis, there’s no need to be dressed so formally. I’m really not used to it.”

These clothes were specially made by Li Xin for him, so Long Hao

Chen's clothes were quite different from the standard clothes of Hao Yue Hall's knights.

“How can you remain uncomfortable with it? Lil' Bro, the color white is the one that suits you the best, you are a hundred percent handsome like that! Ai, why weren't you born a few years earlier? A shame, a shame. We spent a long time together, and this old sis' range grew bigger. In the future, if I cannot find a man, then I'll just seize you.”

Li Xin sized Long Hao Chen up with her gaze, as she clenched her fist menacingly at him.

At this very moment, two heads came out from Long Hao Chen's back, gently stroking his leg, producing a Wu Wu sound with their mouths.

Long Hao Chen bent down, patting the two heads of lizard, “You cannot come tonight, stay home to look after the house. Be obedient, I'll bring dried fish for you to eat later.”

This two-headed grotesque lizard was clearly the magical beast companion Long Hao Chen had brought home from the Knights' Sacred Mountain, that was given the name Hao Yue.

Hao Yue became a new species recorded by the Knights' Sacred Mountain, and half a year had already passed since the time Long Hao Chen had brought him home.

Ordinary magical beast mounts lived in a specific place of their own. Only when the knight needed them would they be summoned from their side through the contract. However, this little Hao Yue was different, he shamelessly wanted to stay by Long Hao Chen's side no matter what, and whatever he was told, he would remain unwilling to go back to his original place.

Due to the blend among their blood vessels, because of the fact that he did not discard him at that time, because of the feeling of not being abandoned, the degree of familiarity between the both of

them had far surpassed the relation between the others knights and their companions.

The first good deed brought by the blood contract was that from the time he came back, Long Hao Chen could already feel that their hearts were interlinked. With an ordinary contract of equals, only the magical beast could sense the feelings and intents of the knight. However, the blood contract brought to each one the awareness of the other. Hao Yue could not speak, but Long Hao Chen could always feel each change in his mood. Even if they were far apart, it would be the same.

Hearing the two words ‘dried fish’, Hao Yue’s two heads opened their eyes wide, giving each other an extremely human-like look, raising their noses, and repeatedly nodding while advancing towards Long Hao Chen. It looked like even his saliva was flowing out.

Long Hao Chen held both heads in his embrace, telling them: “Then I’m leaving first, I will return later.”

As a member of Hao Yue Hall, Long Hao Chen received a monthly income of five gold coins, but he had basically no money left because all the money he received was used to buy food for Hao Yue.

This little guy was extremely voracious and especially liked to eat fish, his favorite meal being five spice seasoned dried fish, to the extent that Long Hao Chen became the kind of person who spend their monthly income even before they earn their next salary.

Along with the increase of the duration of contact, Long Hao Chen discovered, to his astonishment, that each one of Hao Yue’s head could actually think on its own. When he just came back from the Knights’ Sacred Mountain, he did not feel it in the slightest bit; but half a year later, he had figured that the nature of the red eyed head was a little more violent, whereas the golden eyed head was a lot gentler.

Obtaining Long Hao Chen's promise, Hao Yue went back to the room in high spirits, swinging his large tail to effortlessly close the door.

Li Xin said, somewhat envious, "Hao Chen, this Hao Yue is extremely intelligent even if he seems like a kid, sticking close to you all day."

Long Hao Chen chuckled in great delight: "That's right! He's just like my little brother; no, I should say my two little brothers, there's really nothing that can be done about them. Sis, let's go."

The two people left Hao Yue Hall and, while walking on the street, Long Hao Chen asked: "Sis, what is happening today? Why does Uncle want to treat us to a meal?"

Previously, when Li Xin gave Long Hao Chen the clothes, she only told him that, today, her father wanted to treat him to a meal and had some things to tell him.

After they spent so much time together, Long Hao Chen already knew that Li Xin's father was, in fact, Li Ao Xiao, the chief minister of Hao Yue City, and Lin Jia Lu's father, Lin Yin Jia, was the consulate of Hao Yue City.

All the cities inside of the Temple Alliance had a consulate in charge of government affairs as well as a chief minister in charge of military affairs, two complementary roles.

Li Xin smiled, "It is not only my father who is going to treat us to a meal today. There will also be Uncle Lin, Uncle Nalan, as well as the Hall Master of the branch hall of Hao Yue Mage Temple, Uncle Bai Yu, and finally the Hall Master of the branch hall of Hao Yue Warrior Temple, Uncle Chun Hua."

Long Hao Chen was flabbergasted: these five people were all extremely important figures of Hao Yue City, filling the most important positions of the city. Hao Yue City was a mid-sized city and, in it, only three of the six great temples had a branch hall

established. With the addition of the consulate and the chief minister of military affairs, they handled almost all of the decisions related to the city. These five big figures actually wanted to treat them to a meal; how could Long Hao Chen not be shocked?

“Sis, for what reason are we invited?” asked Long Hao Chen, puzzled.

Li Xin answered: “We are obviously convened for the eve of the Demon Hunt Selection Competition. We are all competitors and they gathered us to bother us with their lectures.”

While they were talking, they had already arrived at Hao Yue City’s office hall, and Li Xin led Long Hao Chen directly to the third floor. Specialized staff members welcomed them and guided them inside to a reception hall. When Long Hao Chen and Li Xin arrived, it was already night; dishes were arranged on a round table with only two seats left, obviously prepared for the both of them.

Long Hao Chen swept before him with his eyes, discovering that, among everyone present, there was none he recognized apart from Nalan Shu and this Lin Jia Lu he had formerly dueled.

Li Xin naturally saw her as well. Their eyes met each other and, simultaneously, they turned their head around with an excessive motion, each of them both ignoring the other one. However, when Lin Jia Lu’s look swept past Long Hao Chen’s figure, she could not help but stare at him blankly.

On the seat of honor was seated a dignified middle-aged man who gave a stern look, “Li Xin, you are not allowed to act rudely.” Clearly, he was Li Xin’s father and Hao Yue City’s military affairs’ head minister, Li Ao Xiao.

Li Xin stuck out her tongue before giving her greetings to the others who were already seated, “Greetings Uncle Lin, Uncle Nalan, Uncle Bai, Uncle Chen.”

The middle-aged men nodded in succession and Long Hao Chen called right after Li Xin to these few important figures of Hao Yue City, giving them his greetings.

Chapter 54: Entrance Examination and Equipment (II)

Apart from these several people and Lin Jia Lu, there were also two sturdy youths present. They took the initiative to give their regards to Li Xin, which led Long Hao Chen to return the courtesy. Between these two youths, one was a little taller and was called Chen Si; the second one, a little shorter, was called Chen Chen. They were a pair of brothers, both from the Warrior Temple.

Li Ao Xiao looked at Long Hao Chen and was very pleased, “I have heard Li Xin mention you before; as expected of a genius, you are so young and yet you look brave and talented!”

In reality, after Long Hao Chen and Li Xin arrived, all the gazes seemed to be focused on him. Li Xin and Lin Jia Lu were beauties, but Long Hao Chen’s appearance was so dazzling that it seemed to conceal them.

“Uncle Li is just flattering me.” Long Hao Chen half rose out of his chair, politely replying.

“Elder Brother Li, we should start the banquet first. Let these children get something to eat before getting to business.” said Lin Yin Jia.

Li Ao Xiao said, “Right, we should proceed like that. No need to be polite everyone, eat without restraint.”

Excluding Long Hao Chen, everyone else knew roughly what would be discussed today; even though the mood was far from being enthusiastic, it was still comfortable. In particular, the two brothers Chen Si and Chen Chen were devouring the food ravenously. Their portion was even more astonishing than Li Xin’s. Of course, Long Hao Chen would never mention that to Li Xin...

After simply eating and not drinking alcohol, everyone was

quickly almost full. Almost the entirety of the food had entered the bellies of these few youngsters.

Li Ao Xiao spoke: “The Demon Hunt Selection Competition is about to start, and you five are the elites of our Hao Yue City that have been selected to take part in the competition. This food has been prepared to nourish you and, at the same time, for us to warn you.”

Now that the time had come, Long Hao Chen put down his hand and attentively listened.

Lin Yin Jia continued: “The Demon Hunt Selection Competition is very important to our Temple Alliance; this tradition has existed for a very long time. It can be said that during these thousands years, our Temple Alliance not being annihilated by the demon race, is due to the benefits of Demon Group Hunts. We will proceed this way: let the three of our branch halls introduce us the circumstances of these children you selected. Elder brother Chen, please.”

The Hall Master of the Warrior Temple was a tall and sturdy middle-aged man. Hearing Lin Yin Jia’s words, he nodded, “Chen Si and Chen Chen, you two have been the elite of our Warrior Temple for these few years. Chen Si will be 24 years old this year, right under the age limit of 25 years old for the Demon Hunt Selection Competition. He’s a second rank War Grandmaster, an orthodox shield warrior with a very good defense.”

The Soldier Temple’s ranking system was similar to the Knight Temple’s, the step of War Grandmaster was the fourth step of the vocation of warrior, equivalent to the step of Grand Knight.

Chen Si and Chen Chen were two brothers who seemed quite straightforward; hearing the word of Chen Chun Hua, they immediately stood up.

Chen Chun Hua was clearly fond of these two disciples, and said very proudly: “Chen Chen is two years younger, Chen Si’s little

brother, a berserker adept in offense.”

Li Ao Xiao and Lin Yin Jia looked quite pleasantly surprised. Only youths below 25 years old were allowed to participate in the Demon Hunt Selection Competition, and they had to have reached the third step of their vocation to be admitted. These two youths from the Warrior Temple had both reached the fourth step, it was indeed impressive from them.

To any city, having one of their youths be selected to join the Demon Hunt was a high honor. If he could get a good rank during the selection competition, the consulate, the military head minister, as well as the branch hall masters would be awarded.

Li Ao Xiao looked extremely pleased: “Very good, very good, young and promising. I really wish for you to enter the last stage of the competition.”

The hall master of the Mage Temple, Bai Yu, showed a smiling face: “Fourth step in their vocations, there shouldn’t be any problems with them; with the protection of these two children, they shouldn’t have any problems getting the right to enter the qualifiers. Everyone here should be familiar with Jia Lu, she’s the absolute genius of our Mage Temple. 21 years old, a mage specialized in ice binding, and already a fourth step Grand Mage.”

Although Lin Yin Jia had been trying his best to control his emotions, he could not conceal the pride in his look upon hearing Bai Yu’s presentation.

At his turn, Li Ao Xiao said, “This child, Jia Lu has really a great potential, she’ll absolutely be the future hope of our Hao Yue City.”

Hearing her father praising Lin Jia Lu, Li Xin was immediately dissatisfied and could not help but retort: “Father, please don’t make another one’s spirit seem bigger than it is while lowering your own prestige. In any case, your daughter is already a third step Grand Knight despite being three months younger than her.”

Li Ao Xiao glared at her, “Only babbling.”

Li Yin Jia laughed: “You two girls! Even after such a long time, you could not forget your disagreements in the slightest bit? You have to keep in mind that, this time, in participating in the Demon Hunt Selection Competition, you will have to join forces if you want to obtain the qualifications to compete. It’s really dangerous, so when the moment comes, you cannot let your disagreements hinder you.”

Li Xin and Lin Jia Lu exchanged a glance before suddenly turning their head away with an excessive motion.

Nalan Shu chuckled, “Xin’er has already said everything about her own cultivation, she specializes as a Retribution Knight. As for Hao Chen, I have to keep his cultivation level a secret, but I can tell you his age. Hao Chen will be, this year, 14 years old, specialized as a Guardian Knight.”

“14 years old?” Except from Li Ao Xiao who knew some facts in advance, everyone else could not help but gasp.

Lin Yin Jia’s brows were puckering up as he said in a low voice: “Nalan Hall Master, are you joking? How can we let a 14 years old child participate in the Selection? Don’t tell me that you don’t know that they have to kill at least five demon race soldiers per person to have the qualifications to participate.”

Nalan Shu answered, calm and unhurried: “The teacher of this child is Ye Hua, the zombie face known as Asura Ye in our branch hall. Everyone knows his character, and he said that his treasured disciple was qualified to participate to the Demon Hunt Selection Competition; there is no way he was telling lies. Also, our Knight Temple could not possibly risk the life of such a young genius simply to play a joke.”

Lin Yin Jia’s brows were wrinkling as before, while looking at Li Ao Xiao, Chen Chun Hua, and Nalan Shu without saying anything. Bai Yu calmly looked at Nalan Shu, “Fatty Nalan, you have to know

that this doesn't only relate to his life. If anything holds the team back, it can go as far as to lead to them being wiped out."

Nalan Shu snorted loudly, before speaking back: "Don't worry, don't worry. Even though I don't know at what level Hao Chen's cultivation have reached, I can tell you all that he will certainly enter the finals of this Demon Hunt Selection Competition, shining upon the splendor of the Five Great Temples."

Nalan Shu bluntly said these words without any hesitation, his face showing enormous confidence.

Long Hao Chen sat there without a single word. Ye Hua had warned him repeatedly that he could not easily divulge his cultivation level at the present time, that he had at least to wait for the formal participation to the Demon Hunt Selection Competition to reveal it, so he could currently only shut his mouth.

At this moment, Lin Jia Lu unexpectedly spoke: "Father, Uncles, I believe Uncle Nalan's words. This is because I have formerly competed against little brother Long. He is very strong."

Hearing Lin Jia Lu speak in support of Long Hao Chen, Li Xin instantly became on the alert, shifting the chair she was seated in to advance towards Long Hao Chen.

Li Ao Xiao nodded, "I have also heard Xin'er speak about Hao Chen's strength, and I believe that he really has the ability to participate in this competition."

"The examination to see if they have the qualifications required to participate in the Demon Hunt Selection Competition is really harsh. If one wants to participate to it, this one has to obtain the right to enter the competition first. A moment ago, elder brother Lin said so. We five have to do our best, join forces, and become qualified to leave for the Temple Alliance to participate in the competition."

Chapter 55: Entrance Examination and Equipment (III)

“To make sure that you have the qualifications to compete, the Alliance will be taking responsibility for supervising our group coming from Hao Yue branch hall. During this process, no matter what kind of danger you will encounter, the supervisor will not intervene directly: he will only let things run their course, even if you are about to be wiped out. That is unless you take the initiative to ask for his help. However, in that case, you’ll lose your qualifications to participate this time.”

“Our Hao Yue City is located in the southeast of the Alliance, only roughly 200 kilometers (400 Li) far from the territory of the demon race. A route has already been planned for you to infiltrate it. You have to bear in mind that, sometimes, one has to retreat instead of persevering. If you encounter a crisis you really cannot contend against, in that case, it is preferable to lose your qualifications to enter the competition by asking for the help of the supervisor. Your lives are the highest priority. We have already handed the map to the senior supervisor, so you will set off tomorrow. You are the representatives of our Hao Yue Hall, as well as Hao Yue City. Here, we will congratulate you beforehand and hope you will be able to get great result during this great competition.”

As they were speaking, Li Ao Xiao, Lin Yin Jia, and the three Hall Masters stood up, lifting up the teacups in their hands.

The group of five including Long Hao Chen saluted the five leaders and everyone drank their cups of tea together.

Lin Yin Jia said in a low voice: “Ever since six thousand year ago, when the demon race appeared and we entered the dark age, we, humanity, kept struggling to prevent ourselves from being driven to extinction. We needed more than 2,000 years for our territory to achieve its current stability. The demon race is our arch-enemy:

each enemy killed is a contribution to the safety of humanity. Although our Hao Yue City isn't really a big city, participating in the Demon Hunt Selection Competition is a major event that occurs only once every five years. This is your chance to easily obtain great achievements at the earliest possible time. And we prepared a few gifts to help you to get great result. As long as you can pass the qualification test and enter the competition, this present will not be wasted on you. Come with me."

Hao Yue City's office hall contained a total of four floors. Led by Lin Yin Jia and Li Ao Xiao, the group arrived in a room at the top floor guarded by ten warriors.

There was not a single furniture inside of this room, only a few wide wooden tables with numerous equipment arranged on them.

Looking at the equipment, the breathing of the two brothers, Chen Si and Chen Chen, became hurried. Li Xin and Lin Jia Lu were quite normal: their families were rich, so they were not short on equipment at all. Long Hao Chen appeared pleasantly surprised, but he stayed calm.

Previously, Long Xing Yu told Long Hao Chen that, to any powerhouse of the Six Great Temples, equipment was only a part of their strength. Regardless of the equipment, only through relying on one's own efforts to acquire it could one really treasure it. The Radiant Shield could be considered as the first equipment that was really treasured by Long Hao Chen, but it was clearly the first time such a set of equipment was gathered before his eyes.

On the table was a lot of equipment: there was not only a set per person, but a great deal of choice.

Lin Yin Jia said with a smile: "This equipment is not high ranked, but it is still a lot better than those the public can get on the market. Considering your current level of cultivation, the overwhelming majority of equipment we selected for you is amplification equipment, so that your fighting capability can be

increased. Pick the ones you want by yourselves. However, you may only take a single piece of equipment for each body part.”

Lin Jia Lu shook her head, saying: “I have my own equipment, no need for me to choose.” As the daughter of the consulate, in addition to the fact that her family owned a magical equipment shop, she naturally did not need more equipment.

Li Xin shook her head as well, at the same time as Lin Jia Lu, stating that she did not need it.

Lin Yin Jia and Li Ao Xiao had guessed long ago that this would happen; this equipment was originally bought for the sake of the preparations of Long Hao Chen and the two Chen brothers.

The Chen brothers were quite impatient, and with the signs of Chen Chunhua, the Hall Master of the Warrior Temple, they both hurried to step forward and choose.

Li Xin bumped Long Hao Chen, hinting that he should make haste to go choose to prevent the others from choosing all the good equipment.

To judge the quality of an equipment, there are three major aspects to look at. First, the quality of the material: the better the material, the stronger the equipment created with it will be. The second aspect is the quality of the fabrication, as blacksmiths of different skills craft items of, more or less, different quality. The third aspect is, of course, the magic aspect. The value of a piece of magical equipment is at least five times that of an ordinary one. If the infused supplementary magic is powerful enough, the difference may be even more considerable.

Equipment was divided into different tiers from bottom to top: ordinary equipment, alloy equipment, magical equipment, spiritual equipment, glorious equipment, legendary equipment, epic equipment, immortal equipment, and mystical tier equipment.

For these few youth to participate in this Demon Hunt, Hao Yue City took out this very carefully selected equipment. They were all magical equipment and, although they had the most common magical amplification properties, any one of them would amount to a hundred of gold coins on the market. A tier above magical equipment, there was the spiritual equipment that that contained at least a single skill. This tier of equipment amounted to at least 1,000 gold coins.

As a defensive warrior, Chen Si picked, without the slightest hesitation, a heavy armor that covered his whole body together with a thick tower shield. On the armor and the shield were magical patterns that strengthened it, making them, presently, the equipment with the greatest defensive power. The weapon was, however, a lot simpler: it was a long blade with an effect that increases speed.

Chen Chen's choice placed emphasis on a different aspect of the warrior's talents, he chose a fire attribute light armor together with a pair of fire attribute long blades. With them, if his spiritual energy was stimulated, his body could emit a blazing aura, enabling him to use fire attribute attacks with a power further amplified because of his offensive specialization of berserker.

Long Hao Chen also chose a light armor made of fine iron and heavy iron alloy, resulting in an extremely thin plate that mainly covered his upper body, elbows, and knees joints. It was a silver-colored armor that did not look overly flashy, but emitted a holy aura around it.

The light attribute magic equipment was harder to find compared to the magical equipment of other attributes; thus, he did not have a helmet. While he was clad lightly and conveniently, he still had a certain defensive power..

Soon after, he chose two heavy swords. Between them, one was a light attribute heavy sword while the second one he chose had a fire attribute.

The appearance of these two swords was not different from the standard appearance of the heavy swords used by knights: on the blades were carved distinct magical patterns, and a core crystal of a fourth step magical beast was inlaid in the center of the blades. These heavy swords weighed between 20 kilograms and 25 kilograms. To Long Hao Chen, who had a 200th level external spiritual energy, this weight was negligible.

Lin Yin Jia showed a curious reaction, “Long Hao Chen, aren’t you a Guardian Knight? Why did you choose to take two heavy swords?”

Long Hao Chen answered, a bit embarrassed: “I already have a shield, so I wanted to take one more sword. Is it okay?”

Li Yin Jia humbly smiled, “Of course it is okay.”

Li Ao Xiao spoke: “After going back, you will have to familiarize yourself with your new equipment. You will set off tomorrow in the early morning. If you want to accomplish your task and become qualified to enter the competition, you will have to directly leave for the Alliance. Our Hao Yue City will also have a specialist who will arrive at the Alliance in advance to arrange all matters regarding your participation in the competition.”

“Yes.”

After returning to the residence, Li Xin repeatedly warned Long Hao Chen to rest well after returning. Long Hao Chen bought 2.5 kilograms (5 jin) of dried fish on the road for his good companion, the two headed lizard Hao Yue, before impatiently trying on the new equipment he had just obtained.

Chapter 56: Entrance Examination and Equipment (IV)

As soon as he put on the light armor, he immediately noticed that the quantity of light element around his body had increased, naturally rotating around his internal spiritual energy. A layer of gold-colored brilliance rippled around his light armor, and although it wasn't a part of the spiritual energy Long Hao Chen could use to launch his skills, it strengthened his attack as well as his defense.

The crucial point was that this armor was very light and convenient, not obstructing Long Hao Chen's movements in the slightest.

He liked the large sword even more; as he infused it with his spiritual energy, the two large swords shone brightly. The Light Sword seemed to be very compatible with his natural attribute, forming a bright edge a third of a meter long. The amplification effect of the Fire Sword was only a little lower: fire did not reject light. Pouring in it his holy elemental internal spiritual energy still resulted in at least 80% of the attack power of the other sword.

Long Hao Chen calmly analyzed: the equipment on his body raised his fighting strength a level higher. Moreover, by relying on his ring, 'Forget-Me-Not', he could switch between a left handed sword and a shield at anytime, which was the equivalent of being able to switch between being a Guardian Knight and a Retribution Knight depending on the situation.

"Hao Chen." An ice-cold voice could be heard outside the door.

"Teacher." Long Hao Chen moved in haste to open the door, welcoming Ye Hua to enter.

On the side, Hao Yue was biting the dried fish. Upon seeing Ye Hua enter, he showed some ill feelings woo woo; he seemed to still

hold a grudge against him for the past events.

While Long Hao Chen brought his teacher inside, Ye Hua looked at the light armor on his body: “Hao Yue City is quite big, but they don’t even have a single spiritual tier piece of equipment? What a difference in treatment.”

Long Hao Chen smiled: “The fact I have a set of magical equipment is already plenty. Teacher, didn’t you say that a genuine powerhouse shouldn’t rely on equipment excessively?”

Ye Hua snorted, “That was at the time I was teaching you. The current circumstances are different: the Demon Hunt Selection Competition is not a simple competition, but it can be said to be a real war, with deaths.”

Long Hao Chen said: “Teacher, do you have so little confidence in me?”

Ye Hua answered: “To have confidence in you is one thing, but to prepare for a rainy day is another. You will set off tomorrow, while we will also be leaving for the Temple Alliance, waiting for you to participate to the competition. This is for you.” As he spoke, Ye Hua took out a grey-colored metallic wristguard.

Looking at its outwards appearance, this wristguard seemed pretty ordinary, but as soon as Ye Hua took it off, the wristguard seemed to emit a thin gold color from inside, forming a golden gem at least the size of a hundred grains of rice

.

Long Hao Chen was not adept at equipment creation at all, but having no idea what the value of this gem was did not influence the value this piece of equipment was to him. In fact, the light attribute emitted by this wristguard was higher than his former equipment.

“Your teacher is poor, so he doesn’t have anything good to offer you. Once spiritual energy is poured into this Divine Light

Wristguard, it will create a [Holy Light Mantle], up to three times a day, lasting a minute every time.”

[Holy Light Mantle] was a defensive skill that Grand Knight level Guardian Knights were capable of using. The defensive power was not as great as [Divine Light Mantle]’s, but [Holy Light Mantle]’s greatest benefit was the possibility to control the range of the mantle; the bigger the chosen range, the more its defensive power is reduced. More importantly, [Holy Light Mantle] had a supplementary healing effect inside of its range, which made it one of the most useful skills to Guardian Knights. The only defect would be that it consumed an enormous amount of spiritual energy; launching this ability consumed 50 units of internal spiritual energy, and each second sustained would add 5 units to this count.

It could be seen as Ye Hua conveniently throwing a very precious piece of equipment towards Long Hao Chen. Every activation was the equivalent of saving 350 units of spiritual energy! In addition, it could be used up to three times every day; having an absolute guarantee to be able to save lives in whichever circumstances was always a good thing. Even among spiritual tier equipment, this one was uncommonly valuable.

“Teacher, this is too precious. I cannot accept it.”

Ye Hua’s face sank, “Not good enough for you? If you don’t want it, just throw it away. I’m heading back.” As he spoke, he stood up and began leaving.

Long Hao Chen said with a helpless face: “Teacher, that is not what I meant. These Divine Light Wristguards are just too precious for me, I...”

Arriving at the door, Ye Hua stopped and immediately interrupted him, “I have no relative, only a disciple.” Having spoken these words, he waved his hands to Long Hao Chen, hinting that Long Hao Chen did not have to send him off, and left

by himself.

Looking at the wristguards in his hands, Long Hao Chen felt warmth in his heart, “Teacher, I will not disappoint you.”

Bright morning, Hao Yue City east gate.

This place was where they gathered last night. Li Xin rode her Rose Unicorn, which had grown to the peak fifth step within these two years, heading along with Long Hao Chen to the east entrance.

After these two years, Long Hao Chen was not a child anymore, so he naturally felt too embarrassed to ride a mount together with Li Xin. Also, Nalan Shu gave him a fine horse, so he rode it while advancing by Li Xin’s side.

“Hao Chen, what about Hao Yue, that guy? Where has he run off to?” Li Xin looked all around, but could not find the pair of heads that were usually sticking together with Long Hao Chen all day.

Long Hao Chen smiled: “Sis, he’s around. He will naturally appear once we’ll be leaving the city.”

Li Xin curiously spoke back: “I really think that Hao Yue is a lot more intelligent than my Rose Unicorn, even though he’s only at the middle rank of the fourth step.”

Quickly, sister and brother arrived at the east gate and, at that moment, they saw the pair of excited brothers from the Chen family waiting impatiently, while Lin Jia Lu had yet to arrive.

“Little brother Long, young lady Xin’er.” Chen Si took the initiative to greet them. Both of them held Li Xin in high regard. As for Long Hao Chen, they considered him as a subordinate of Li Xin at most, after Nalan Shu revealed the day before that Long Hao Chen was only 14 this year. What could the ability of a 14 year-old child be? Li Xin was, however, different. Not only was she superior to them in terms of talent, but in addition, she possessed a formidable magical beast such as the Rose Unicorn. This mount was, by itself, superior to these two brothers in terms of strength.

The status of knights was also superior to that of a warrior, so they naturally wished to stay on good terms with Li Xin.

To be selected to participate in the Demon Hunt Selection Competition already required outstanding innate talents, but before confronting the test, they needed the cooperation of everyone here.

Li Xin nodded at them, “Lin Jia Lin hasn’t arrived yet?”

Chen Si smiled, “It isn’t the time yet. Let’s wait a moment.”

Li Xin calmly nodded.

Chen Si and Chen Chen were both riding fine horses. While they were speaking, a cart slowly approached, stopping beside them.

When the cart arrived, Lin Jia Lu jumped down from it, and stood respectfully there. Immediately afterwards, an elder came out from the cart.

This elder looked 60 to 70 years old, his grizzled hair were meticulously combed, and he let out a slight fragrance of pomade. He had thick eyebrows and big eyes, his eyes looked a bit gloomy and cold, and his lips were fine and thin. His character was arrogant and noble at the same time, giving people a bad first impression.

He wore a thin blue-colored magical gown, with a material made of golden threads sketching outside, emitting a metallic luster; it seemed that the wind element was gathered around it, revolving around his body. He held in his hand, a dark green-colored magical staff with a pale gem the size of an egg above it.

Lin Jia Lu respectfully told him: “Senior supervisor, please.”

The elder nodded. Looking at her, his arrogant expression became a bit softer, “Go.” Lin Jia Lu accompanied him towards Long Hao Chen’s group.

Everyone hurried to dismount from their horse; without a doubt,

this elder was a supervisor from the Temple Alliance, a mage. Although his body did not give off the air of a mage, Lin Jia Lu obviously could not be compared to him at all.

The elder went in front of their group and simply said, in an indifferent voice: “Set off.”

Chapter 57: The Dragon Rises And Sets Sail (I)

“Set off.” The command of the elder who was acting as their supervisor was passed down. At this moment, he waved the magical staff in his hand, covering his whole body in a blue light, and left the ground just like that, floating a meter above the ground while advancing forward.

“You can act as if I didn’t exist, and I will not help you the slightest bit as well, unless you plan to withdraw from this Demon Hunt Selection.” The elder’s voice fluttered in front of them. The blue light suddenly became more intense and, to their surprise, in a split second, this supervisor and senior disappeared without notice.

Upon seeing that this supervisor had suddenly disappeared, everyone else was surprised; only Long Hao Chen’s eyes slightly moved, subconsciously shooting a glance at the rear.

“This is the map.” Lin Jia Lu took out a map made of sheepskin from her bosom, unfolding it in front of everyone. “We will have to head straight to the east before infiltrating the territory controlled by the demon race. This is for you.” As she spoke, she took out five round tiles from her bosom and, after keeping one for herself, she gave the rest to the four others.

Long Hao Chen took the tile and gave it a look. It looked very delicate, was entirely made of silver and had a purple gem inlaid in it. It emitted insipid magic undulations.

“This is the license plate for our participation in the Demon Hunt Selection Competition. On its reverse side is our identity, origins, as well as competitor number. If we cannot pass the entrance test, the tiles will be retrieved back by the elder. Because of this tile, we will not be bothered by the garrisons of the Alliance, but we will not be able to get their help either. Entering the territory of the

demon race, we will only be able to rely on ourselves. The best would be for us to meet patrol soldiers belonging to the demon race. As long as we can kill a total of 25 demons, we will have accomplished our task and will be able to retreat.”

At this point, Lin Jia Lu came to a halt, meticulously sweeping her eyes over Li Xin before continuing: “In regard to our cultivation level, completing this task should be no problem at all. But since we are acting in a group, we will have to display some cooperation. The snake cannot have a missing head. So, before attacking, the best thing to do would be to pick out a leader to stay synchronized when we run into battle.”

Li Xin coldly snorted, “Are you saying that you are intending to become our leader?”

Lin Jia Lu shot her a glance. Without compromising the slightest bit, “Why would it be impossible? I am the one with the highest cultivation level here and, in addition, as a mage who fights at the rear, I have the best position to observe the battlefield, so I am the most suitable to command the team.”

Li Xin wrinkled her brows, pondering a little before unexpectedly nodding, telling her: “Okay, we will follow your directions.”

Lin Jia Lu stared at her blankly. She did not expect to hear those words from Li Xin. She could not help but give her a doubtful look.

Li Xin snorted once more, “What are you looking at? This young lady is dissociating the public from the private; for the sake of keeping my little brother safe, I will not fight with you this time. However, if, on the battlefield, your directions appear to be mistakes, this young lady will not show any restraint in depriving you of your authority.”

Lin Jia Lu directly chose to ignore Li Xin’s threats and looked at the Chen brothers, “Do you have any objections?”

Chen Si and Chen Chen shook their head at the same time. These

two brothers were straightforward; they recognized themselves as being inferior to these two ladies, so they naturally did not have any objections.

“Okay, with it being this way, let us set off.” Lin Jia Lu issued her first command as the leader.

Long Hao Chen stood at the side of Li Xin, a bit depressed and thinking to himself, Why is it that they didn’t even ask for my opinion?!

At this moment, Lin Jia Lu faced him and approached, “Little brother Long, I am wearing a robe so I am unable to ride a horse. Please look after me, I will sit behind you.”

“Ah?” Long Hao Chen looked dumbstruck at the gentle, sweet, and smiling appearance of Lin Jia Lu before noticing that Li Xin, at the side, had become as cold as ice and frost and could not decide how he should reply.

Lin Jia Lu was still smiling and didn’t took a single glance at Li Xin, asking once more: “You are a Guardian Knight! Don’t tell me you wouldn’t ensure the safety of a mage?”

As she spoke, she directly extended her hand toward Long Hao Chen, hinting him to get her on his horse.

“I will ride together with you.” Stretching her hand and pulling Lin Jia Lu directly from the back of her horse; the one who did that was precisely Li Xin!

Lin Jia Lu was surprised and reacted angrily, “Who wants to ride together with you?! You are a Retribution Knight, can you really protect me that well?!”

Li Xin replied very fiercely: “You can choose either Chen Si or his little brother Chen Chen if that’s the case. Don’t try to use my little brother to your convenience. You’re dreaming, I’ll never give you that opportunity.” As she spoke, Li Xin knocked the belly of her horse and the Rose Unicorn flew upwards, letting Lin Jia Lu

resentfully cry out in anger, just like a sort of red-colored arrow launched forward.

Long Hao Chen and the two Chen brothers gave a glance at each other, their faces displaying a helpless feeling, before hurrying to whip their horses, chasing after them. A pitch black silhouette tightly followed after them, sticking to the ground with its two heads following around, showing a very excited expression on its faces.

A distance of about 200 kilometers, to the Rose Unicorn, was at most two hours of travel, but Long Hao Chen's group could not keep up, with their ordinary horses. After traveling from early morning to late night, they finally arrived at the vicinity of the frontier.

Relying on their Demon Hunt Selection tiles, the five people smoothly passed through the area defended by the Temple Alliance forces, leaving their horses there, and after eating simple meals, they were finally going to enter the territory of the demon race.

To decrease the probability of being discovered, Li Xin had her Rose Unicorn scout in the sky. Taking advantage of the dim light of night, they passed through a hill. They could already see from afar territory of the demon race.

"Let's stop here." Lin Jia Lu called out to everyone to come to a halt and took out her map. Even though she could be considered as having tacitly agreed in riding together with Li Xin, her current face looked displeased, as before.

Everyone squatted down, encircling Lin Jia Lu as she unfolded her map. Pointing at it, she said: "We are currently at this location. The main troops of the demon race are stationed roughly 100 kilometers in front of us. Directly raiding their army camps isn't realistic, and there will be no coming back if we choose to do so. Thus, we will complete our task by wiping out scouts from the demon race during the upcoming few days. From now on,

everyone will have to keep a good formation. Li Xin, you are in the front. Chen Si and Chen Chen, you are on both sides. Little brother Long, you are in the rear, and I will be in the middle of the formation. In the case we meet the enemy, you will have to listen to my orders, understood?”

Even though her complexion was not good, Lin Jia Lu kept a calm face, her elegant face looking quite dignified.

Including Li Xin, everyone nodded in succession.

After Lin Jia Lu put her map away, everyone stood once more. They could not help but look in the direction of the demon race's territory. Nervousness, excitement, anxiety; this was their current state of mind, but all of them stood on the alert. On the verge of facing the biggest enemy of mankind, they were filled with heroic emotions that excited, more or less, all of them.

“Hao Yue, please come out.” Long Hao Chen shouted loudly.

A shadow flashed and the two-headed lizard, Hao Yue, came quietly in front of Long Hao Chen, his appearance immediately frightening the hell out of the little group of youths.

“Everyone, don't be nervous, this is my companion.” Look Hao Chen quickly explained in a low voice.

Everyone could not help but observe Hao Yue's appearance carefully. The most astonished among them was, without a doubt, Lin Jia Lu. As a mage, her mental capacity was, naturally, much superior to those of close quarters vocations. Her perception was even more formidable, but she completely failed to notice Hao Yue's existence.

Chapter 58: The Dragon Rises and Sets Sail (II)

“Is this your companion mount?” Lin Jia Lu asked, full of doubt.

Long Hao Chen nodded.

Lin Jia Lu’s eyes were filled with a bit of pity, “Well, his figure cannot be clearly seen at all. Let’s set off for now.”

Long Hao Chen took out the Radiant Shield as well as the Light Sword, silently walking at the rear. The five people formed a rhombus battle formation, crossing the hills before finally entering into the territory of the demon race.

There was a wide plain ahead, but their sight did not even reach its boundaries. When wind blew, a faint scent of blood could be smelled in the air.

From the time that the demon race appeared and humanity’s history entered the dark age, 6,000 years had already passed.

Lin Jia Lu held the magical staff that she did not use in the duel against Long Hao Chen, lifting it slightly while chanting a magical incantation. A bird shaped transparent light soared in the sky, flying forward at a high altitude. A faint radiance could be subsequently seen in Lin Jia Lu’s pair of eyes.

[Eagle Eye Method], this magic spell was a required skill for any mage, enabling one to look down from the sky and observe far distances. The higher one’s cultivation level, the further the range of the spell increased.

Li Xin slightly frowned and said: “The terrain is too open. It is unfavorable for us to set up an ambush here. Look for a place where we can hide.”

Li Jia Lu slightly nodded and said: “2.5 kilometers ahead, there are hills at the left. The hills are ahead, shrubs are densely

clustered there, we should go in this direction first, slowly advancing. There are no enemies in a 5 kilometers radius around us, let's go."

Li Xin lowered her head. Everyone advanced forward at a slow pace under Lin Jia Lu's instructions.

Long Hao Chen discovered to his astonishment that these two pretty ladies that used to quarrel every day back in Hao Yue City did not show the slightest sign of dispute this time. The party of five was precisely led by the both of them with Li Xin at the front and Lin Jia Lu in the middle of the formation, scouting. The Chen brothers and Long Hao Chen were quite relaxed, they just had to follow after them.

Under the command of Lin Jia Lu and her [Eagle Eye Method], everyone was quite cautious. For a duration of one hour, they made use of the few bunkers on the field that were found approximately every 5 kilometers (10 li) and advanced. Every time they found a place where they could be concealed, Lin Jia Lu would leave a mark on the ground before continuing to head forward.

They entered the route through of the demon race territory that the leaders of Hao Yue City selected very carefully for them. From the demon race territory, the nearest garrison was only 100 kilometers (200 li) away. Although the terrain was not the most favorable, the garrison was quite close, making it very convenient for retreating while maintaining their guard when it is needed.

Night fell little by little, and after continuing to advance for 40 more kilometers (80 Li), Lin Jia Lu found some shrubbery and gave the order to rest here.

"We cannot continue to approach them for now: if we keep going forward, we will enter the range at which the demon mages can detect us." said Lin Jia Lu in a low voice.

Li Xin nodded, speaking at her turn: "I also heard from Father that the demon barracks contained some powerful mages that have

a range longer than 50 kilometers using the [Eagle Eye Method]. If we keep advancing, we will likely be detected, so we should wait here for our opportunity instead.”

They started eating to replenish their physical strength, and calmly waited at this place. All along, Lin Jia Lu unceasingly used her [Eagle Eye Method] to detect any movement in the surroundings.

A full night passed very calmly. The sky was gradually lighting up.

They had already waited for a night, but they did not even spot half of a demon patrol, so the five youth could not help but feel disappointed. It was especially the case for Lin Jia Lu, who was already quite tired because she kept using her [Eagle Eye Method].

“Strange, where have the demon patrols gone?” Chen Si asked in an uncomprehending tone.

The five youths looked at each other in dismay, their faces showing helplessness. They were the best of the young generation of Hao Yue City, but they had never participated in a war before; this task that seemed to be quite easy had become a little more troublesome. To gain the qualifications to enter, they also had a time limit. Altogether, they only had three days. If they exceeded this time limit, they would not have the time to leave for the Temple Alliance to take part in the Selection Competition.

Li Xin frowned and said: “That won’t do. I will ride Rose and enter further, investigating in their range. In that case, they should react to some extent.”

Lin Jia Lu immediately reacted: “Impossible. It’s too dangerous. Your Rose Unicorn is too obvious. If you try, there’s a risk that you attract some enemies that are so powerful that we’ll be completely wiped out.”

While they were talking among themselves about the

countermeasures for dealing with the situation, Long Hao Chen who was listening to the surroundings all along suddenly said in a loud voice, “Be careful, there is an enemy!” As he spoke, he held the Light Sword and suddenly lifted it. A gold-colored mantle instantly enveloped the five people inside. It was a [Divine Light Mantle]!

Almost instantly after this, a violent shock was transmitted from under their feet and, with a puh sound, the [Divine Light Mantle] was shattered. Also, at this very moment, another [Divine Light Mantle] was launched right under their feet, obstructing this attack that came from below.

A 1.5 meters tall entity attacking with an extremely thick thorn was stopped by the [Divine Light Mantle] surrounding them; if Long Hao Chen had reacted a step later, they would have endured this attack with their bodies.

It had a total of seven or eight thick and sharp stings. They were purple black colored and emitted faint purple black colored ripples in the air around it.

The second layer of [Divine Light Mantle] was actually not sent out by Long Hao Chen: the time it took him to use the skill twice in a row was not so quick. It was naturally Hao Yue who was beside him, using its gold-color eyed lizard head to spread the skill, perfectly imitating Long Hao Chen’s [Divine Light Mantle] and covering everyone in this defense.

“The Luke Clan.” These five youths were the elite of their generation in Hao Yue City, but they were so shocked that they could not react at all in this brief moment. When Li Xin shouted in a loud voice, a red-colored radiance glinted in her longsword that she used to ferociously stab at the ground.

Long Hao Chen, Chen Si, and Chen Chen reacted the same way.

Continuous Pu Pu sounds rang, violently shaking the ground.

Lin Jia Lu lowered the magical staff in her hand a little, shooting a blue ray toward the ground while simultaneously calling out: “Take out your weapons!”

As the thick, bloodied weapons were pulled up from the ground, immediately afterwards, everyone felt a chill under his feet; the ground had already been frozen with ice that was as thick as steel. Lin Jia Lu’s [Ice Wall Method] was directly launched under their feet.

A group of thick and solid sharp stingers encircled the five youths of the group and, immediately afterwards, new figures jumped out from the ground, encircling the group of five including Long Hao Chen.

They had a fierce and evil looking appearance, quite similar to monstrous abominations that were shaped like humans. Their height was roughly 1.7 meters, they were naked, and on the lower part of the body were meticulous black-colored scales. On the upper portion of their bodies, their skin was purple black-colored and the head had three eyes; but the fact they had four arms was the most peculiar. That’s right, each of these monsters had four arms and each of these arms were shaped similarly to a needle: their little arms ended in a point. Their sharp tips of these stingers emitted a cold light.

Despite the fact that everyone in Long Hao Chen’s group had sufficient knowledge in regards to demons, when confronting one for real, they could not help but feel somewhat nervous.

6,000 years earlier, the 72 Demon Gods suddenly descended on the mainland of Shengmo Dalu, leading to the mutation of a great amount of life forms which were mutated into demons of various strength. The demons that appeared before their eyes belonged to the Luke Clan, one of the 20 major clans of the demon race.

Chapter 59: The Dragon Rises and Sets Sail

(III)

Compared to humans, the most frightening aspect of demons was their innate fighting capabilities. Every one of them, without exception, could fight since birth. Their innate talent in this regard was far beyond comparison with humans'; even without undergoing any form of training, they could still become formidable warriors.

The innate peculiarity of the members of the Luke clan was that they had four stinger-shaped hands. Their frontal fighting strength was not too high, but they were experts at mounting sneak attacks. With their four arms simultaneously held high above their head, they were capable of drilling underground with a high speed comparable to sprints. Their attack arrived suddenly from underneath, causing people to be taken off guard and leaving them unable to defend effectively against it.

At this time, Long Hao Chen's group of five was surrounded by 16 or 17 Luke Clan soldiers. Some among them were, at this moment, lying on the ground. They had clearly perished from being repelled directly to the ground because of Long Hao Chen's counter.

These Luke clansmen had burst out from the ground, and immediately rushed at Long Hao Chen's group of five. The warriors looked incomparably tyrannical with their thick and sharp stingers that gave off a cold feeling.

For the reason that the enemies came from all directions, with the exception of Lin Jia Lu, each of the others turned to a different direction to face the incoming storm. Deep inside, they were a little nervous, but having reached the fourth step of their vocation, they had enough experience to know to not immediately rush into action. They kept their formation, each one brandishing his weapons, protecting Lin Jia Lu in the middle.

The first who acted was the one at Long Hao Chen's side, Hao Yue. His two heads pointed in opposite direction. Little Flame gathered a small blaze in his mouth and shot forth a fireball. Little Light showed no moment of weakness and shot a very fast bolt of light, even faster than the fireball.

Because each of Hao Yue's heads could think independently, Long Hao Chen gave them different names according to their attributes, Little Flame and Little Light.

The light arrow that Little Light fired was a third of a meter long, and extremely fast. It was directly aimed at a warrior from the Luke Clan. It did not even have the time to react when, with a Pu sound, its head was already pierced and its four stingers fell down on the ground.

Immediately afterwards, with a Boom sound, another Luke clansman tried to use its stingers to block the fireball and stopped it, but was sent flying away by the explosive force of the fireball.

There was a total of about ten enemies. Long Hao Chen was only facing four of them, and in addition, two of the enemies had already been subdued by Hao Yue, so naturally he did not feel the slightest bit of pressure. He chanted a kind of muffled chant at lightning speed, and lifted up the Light Sword in his hand with an exaggerated motion. A fantastic symbol shone at the top of his head, and as if it was contagious, this symbol immediately split apart, appearing atop the heads of the other four. Immediately following, a golden ring of light undulated under the feet of the five people in its range, causing a faint golden radiance to appear around them.

Before Long Hao Chen completed these two holy magic spells, the two Luke clansmen had already dashed in and arrived close to him.

He held up the Light Sword, but there was also the Radiant Shield in his left hand, and with two peng peng sounds, the sharp stingers of the two Luke clansmen were blocked by the Radiant

Shield.

A golden mark appeared at the top of his head. It was the Guardian Knight ability, [Guardian's Favor]; when the enemies attacked, [Guardian's Favor] would immediately increase his defensive capabilities, reducing the attack power of the enemy to a certain extent.

The golden ring turned the nervousness in Long Hao Chen's group of five into determination, this was the [Faith Halo]. Just like [Guardian Favor], it was a Guardian Knight's support skill.

While these two abilities were activated, the Light Sword in Long Hao Chen's hand had started to shine, and a third of a meter long edges of blade made of light penetrated them, easily beheading the bodies of the two Luke clan members. Little Light and Little Flame, who shot once again a fireball and a light arrow, completely getting rid of the two last Luke clansmen. The four enemies Long Hao Chen and his companions were facing were entirely wiped out just like that.

Lin Jia Lu, located at the middle of the formation, had completed a magical spell at the same time; Long Hao Chen was so young that she naturally wanted to take care of the enemies at his side first, but just as her magic was completed, Long Hao Chen had already finished the battle. Not only that, he had also used two area effective assisting skills on everyone.

"[Ice Spear]." Four blue rays were unleashed in the air, falling like meteorites and transforming into four two meter long ice spears that were aimed at four Luke Clan soldiers that immediately fell to the ground, their eyes becoming lifeless.

In the next instant, the enemies on Li Xin and Chen Chen's sides were also wiped out; as a Shield Warrior, defense was Chen Si's specialization. However, the aid of Lin Jia Lu's spears had already settled the fight.

The Luke Clan soldiers' fighting capability was weak: they were,

in fact, like second step first rank human warriors. Without the opportunity of launching a surprise attack, how could they be an opponent for these four formidable fourth step youths?

Seeing the corpses around them, everyone let out a breath at the same time. These enemies from the Luke Clan were just too unexpected. Although they did not have high fighting capabilities, they had mounted a sneak attack from underground, so if they had not reacted at time, Long Hao Chen's group would have been bound to have had great casualties.

"Little brother Long, thank you." Lin Jia Lu told Long Hao Chen with a somewhat pale face. She was a mage with a weak defense; in the case that they did not discover this sneak attack, the most likely to have died would have been her.

The way the two brothers Chen Si and Chen Chen looked at Long Hao Chen completely changed. Although Long Hao Chen had Hao Yue's help in the previous fight, it should not be forgotten that it was not only him who discovered the enemy, but he had also used three holy magic spells, one more than Lin Jia Lu did as the mage of the team.

[Divine Light Mantle], [Faith Halo], and [Guardian's Favor]; even though they were all skills used by second step Guardian Knights, he used them in an extraordinary way. In addition, he had also used two clean [Lightning Cuts] to get rid of two enemies. Seeing such a quick link speed, Chen Si and Chen Chen could not help but gasp in admiration. Without a single doubt, Long Hao Chen was already quite strong, he was a Grand Knight and not simply Li Xin's attendant.

A fourteen year-old Grand Knight! Just by thinking about it, the two little brothers of the Chen family felt a chill in their hearts.

The forte of a Grand Knight was not the continuous use of his skills externalizing his spiritual energy. Although Long Hao Chen did not have this kind of ability, he had, just now, continuously

used and combined his skills to the extent that his strength could not be doubted the slightest bit.

While everyone was looking at Long Hao Chen, flabbergasted, Long Hao Chen's complexion suddenly changed and he shouted once more, "Be careful!" A light glinted: it was another [Divine Light Mantle].

However, this time, the [Divine Light Mantle] was instantly smashed to pieces right after it appeared, and at the moment it was smashed to pieces, everyone could see a lightning fast silhouette appear at Lin Jia Lu's side. A thick ray of light went straight toward Lin Jia Lu's neck, about to pierce it.

A surprise attack!

Lin Jia Lu was located at the center of the four-man formation: as her role as a mage, she was the central point of protection of the team. However, at that moment, her partners did not expect this faintly discernible figure to break the [Divine Light Mantle] so suddenly; it had already penetrated the formation, passing through the small gap between Chen Chen and Li Xin.

The speed of this enemy was really too high, the majority of the people here could only stare blankly in reaction. Using the [Divine Light Mantle] was already the most Long Hao Chen could do in this situation: in terms of distance and speed, he had no way to come to the aid of Lin Jia Lu in time.

"JIA LU— —" Li Xin shouted out. But no matter how anxious she was, she needed time to attempt to save her. How could she make it at time?

A cold, sharp blade arrived at Lin Jia Lu's neck and finally reached her trembling skin; from the moment when Long Hao Chen shouted loudly to be careful, she could already feel this cold feeling. Omitting the fact that she was a Grand Mage, she was, before everything, a vulnerable mage; in such circumstances, there was no way to save her.

Had the time of her death come? At this instant, Lin Jia Lu could not feel anything: no joy, no sadness. Only endless denial. It seemed as if this sharp blade had already cut her throat apart, and all that she could feel was her soul leaving her body...

Chapter 60: The Dragon Rises and Sets Sail (IV)

“DONG—” A clear and loud sound echoed, and just like a rippling wave, a silhouette stood firm, three steps away from Lin Jia Lu’s figure.

What happened? Regardless of whether it was Li Xin or the Chen brothers, everyone had their eyes opened wide because they just saw a scene they could not comprehend at all.

When [Divine Light Mantle] was cast, a white light had simultaneously started to glow from Long Hao Chen’s chest; the light was not intense at all, but it caused this sharp-edged blade to stick at the skin of Lin Jia Lu’s neck as the invisible silhouette suddenly became motionless.

The strangest thing was that a white glow instantly appeared from this figure, exposing its silhouette. The sharp blade slowly receded from Lin Jia Lu’s neck and did not split her neck open at all; instead, it was suddenly aimed at Long Hao Chen. With a Dong sound, Long Hao Chen obstructed the attack with the Radiant Shield, the parry sending out a sound.

“Dong, dong, dong, dong, dong, dong...” The sounds of the parries repeatedly rang from Long Hao Chen’s Radiant Shield. A drizzling white light was propagating on the invisible figure that was launching attacks that were as powerful as howling wind and torrential rain against Long Hao Chen, which Long Hao Chen steadily blocked.

The Radiant Shield in Long Hao Chen’s hand kept parrying, receiving each of the enemy’s frenzied strikes without taking a single step back, just like an insurmountable mountain.

“AH—” Lin Jia Lu cried out at this moment. Her neck hurt slightly and a little cut had opened, making a few drops of blood

flow out of it; but above all, an intense feeling of fear was filling her entire body, making it feel limp and painful. She completely forgot to lead the others. Regardless of whether it was as the genius who showed outstanding performances during her cultivation period in Hao Yue Mage Hall, or as a mere girl who was going to the battlefield for the first time, her mind almost fell apart from experiencing her life hanging by a thread.

The fastest to react was Li Xin. Without the slightest of hesitation, she used an [Instant Blast Cross Cut] from the rear to repel the invisible figure.

This invisible enemy was indeed a terrible opponent: his body slightly twisted in the air, easily dodging Li Xin's attack. However, it was truly strange. It was as if he only saw Long Hao Chen, aiming all of his attacks at him.

"What are you doing? Attack immediately!" Li Xin shouted with her delicate voice, rousing the two brothers and bringing Lin Jia Lu back to her senses.

Hao Yue, who was under Long Hao Chen's feet, also attacked: [Fireballs] and [Light Arrows] were launched in succession, immediately exploding on the invisible enemy.

At this moment, everyone could clearly see that this invisible enemy was shaped like a human; besides the ability to make himself invisible, he was not that different compared to a human. Both of his hands grasped similar sharp transparent blades, the first was pointing at the sky and the second one at the ground. All of the attacks shot by Hao Yue's two heads were repelled by the pair of sharp blades, they were simply ineffective against him.

"[Whirlwind Strike]!" Chen Chen bursted out. Each of his hands grasped a fire attributed longsword, and a whirlwind of fire turned around him as he advanced toward the invisible figure.

Li Xin lept up, performing an [Instant Blast Cross Cut]. The two swords in her hands merged together and then separated as a cross

in the sky.

Chen Si was a Shield Warrior, an expert at defense. He moved by Long Hao Chen's side, attempting to help Long Hao Chen by taking a share of the attacks, but from beginning to end, the invisible enemy only attacked Long Hao Chen and no one else.

During this combined frontal assault, the body of this invisible enemy strangely halted, and his body suddenly erupted, emitting a bloody aura that shone with a dark-red color.

The first to be affected was Chen Chen. His [Whirlwind Strike] intersected with this red colored radiance, and with a groaning sound, his [Whirlwind Strike] was stopped and he fell down on the side.

At this time, the difference in Li Xin's level of cultivation with the rest of the group manifested. With a Bang sound, her pair of swords ruthlessly chopped at that dark red radiance, and although it clearly hit the target head on, this invisible enemy was only shaken a little.

Taking advantage of this little period, the pair of sharp blades in the enemy's hands became red-colored. His tiptoe danced on the floor, and like a tornado, he sprinted straight for Long Hao Chen with the pair of sharp pointed blades.

An ear-piercing sound bursted out aloud. If one could see the scene from a distant location, he would see that the invisible enemy had become a sort of dark red-colored bolt of lightning.

Long Hao Chen's complexion did not change the slightest bit; his handsome face was expressionless and his crystal clear golden eyes looked at the enemy very calmly. He did not look like a 14 year old child at all.

Parrying stance, shield held firmly, Long Hao Chen stood there like a stone.

[Divine Obstruction].

Dong-, with a violent noise, Long Hao Chen's entire body emitted a golden light and the invisible enemy was repelled back into the air.

Long Hao Chen then finally moved his right hand that he did not use at all until that moment. The Light Sword shone with a dazzling light and struck down, a golden radiance appearing simultaneously all around his body and instantly pouring into the Light Sword in his hand.

[Bright Vengeance] and [Light Thorn].

Because his attack had just been blocked, the invisible enemy could not make it in time to block the attack with his dark-red blade.

With a Bang sound, the invisible enemy violently smashed down onto the ground, traces of blood appearing on his face. The ground was completely deformed by his fall.

And at the next instant, a ball that shone like the sun appeared behind his back. Shining a rich golden red light, the force of light and fire fell from the sky.

[Shining Sunlight Strike].

"Aaah-" With a scream, everything stopped for a split second. The invisible enemy's body was split into two by Li Xin's [Shining Sunlight Strike], a dark green blood splashed in all directions and this formerly invisible being finally became visible.

Chen Si reacted very quickly. He went by the side of the pale Lin Jia Lu, lifting the shield in his hand and emitting a yellow-colored light to enclose and protecting himself and Lin Jia Lu inside.

"What are you doing?!" Li Xin shouted at Lin Jia Lu.

If Long Hao Chen had waited a little more a moment ago, before obstructing the enemy's attack against Lin Jia Lu, they would have dealt with this invisible enemy even easier.

Lin Jia Lu was gasping for breath, mouth wide opened. She was shaking in fear, but she finally came back to her senses under the effect of Li Xin's shouting voice.

"Sis, let it be." Long hurriedly pulled Li Xin back. The crisis was not completely finished. Who knew if another unexpected enemy could suddenly appear?

Li Xin turned around and looked at Long Hao Chen. She was still completely astonished. Without a doubt, if not for Long Hao Chen's amazing intervention, Lin Jia Lu would have died.

Although Li Xin was the one who finished off the enemy, Long Hao Chen was the one who resisted his all-out attack. If not for his defense, which was as solid and steady as the Mount Tai, and the [Divine Obstruction] he relied on to wound the enemy using his [Bright Vengeance] combined with his [Light Thorn]. Considering the ability of this invisible demon, there was no way [Shining Sunlight Strike] would have killed him like that.

Chen Si silently said: "We don't have a priest, so we have no way to use a detection eye skill. If another invisible opponent of this kind reappears, it will really become dangerous. What should we do?"

Lin Jia Lu lowered her head, she was completely ashamed. She was not remarkable at all; what had just happened was too unexpected.

"Little brother Long, my mind is already in disorder, I am not fitting to command you. Either you or Li Xin should lead everyone."

Li Xin answered without the slightest hesitation: "Hao Chen, take the command."

Age had never been a criteria in evaluating strength. These two times, it was Long Hao Chen who had discovered the opponent first and prevented everyone from being harmed. Although the

others did not know how he did, all of them were absolutely willing to obey his orders.

Long Hao Chen did not decline and silently said: “The enemies must have a special method to detect us. This attack was launched by the Luke clansmen, and right afterwards, we were immediately attacked by this invisible enemy. There were 20 demons from the Luke Clan in addition to this invisible demon coming from the Dike Clan. We have already killed 21 enemies, so we only have four left to complete the task. The distance from here to the border of the Alliance is quite far and the enemies have already discovered us. They must already know about the failure and will be bound to dispatch another attack against us. We have to leave and prudently retreat to the direction of the Alliance. If we have a chance to complete the task, we’ll take it. But if we don’t, our priority should still be to head back to the Alliance. We need to find how to keep ourselves safe, before thinking about going in battle.

Chapter 61: Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon (I)

Although Long Hao Chen was young, Long Xing Yu and Ye Hua had taught him their vast knowledge and the lessons they learned on the battlefield. To stay calm was the key, and self-preservation was more important than prevailing over the enemy.

Lin Jia Lu could not help but look once more at the corpse of the invisible enemy. The Dyke Clan was classified as a middle-ranked clan of the demon race, proficient at utilizing their invisibility skill, speed, and attack power. Their appearance did not differ much from humans except they had long and narrow faces, grey colored skin, and longer arms than humans. Their attack power was also quite deadly, especially when they approached while under the state of invisibility, preventing their opponent from noticing and blocking their attack. They were the nemesis of mages.

Most importantly, while they are invisible, the only way to reveal them is to hit them with abilities with holy attribute or the [Eyes of Truth] of a priest. In every war, making use of their invisibility, a great amount of Dyke clansmen would target the parties' mages.

The most common invisible enemies from the Dyke Clan had the power equivalent to that of a fourth step human warrior, and that was only the weakest of them. As a middle ranked member of the demon race, they could also enhance their strength through cultivation, which the Luke Clan could not do.

“Let's depart.” Long Hao Chen said in a low voice, “And keep our original formation, however I will be at the rear. Sis, don't summon Rose. Our stealth is our advantage right now. If the enemies are to dispatch troops to pursue and attack us, we will have a lot of options.”

“All right.” Li Xin gripped her pair of swords and after quickly

sweeping her eyes over Lin Jia Lu, she started advancing with quick steps.

Lin Jia Lu took a deep breath and felt the ice cold atmosphere. Steadying her mind, she used the [Floating Method] on herself to catch up with Li Xin's pace. The Chen brothers and Long Hao Chen also started to move, keeping their original formation and advancing towards the Temple Alliance at a high speed.

While walking, Long Hao Chen thought to himself about the previous attack.

He had discovered that the first two enemies that attacked them because of the simple reason that his perception was sharper due to his unusual mental strength. When he came back from the Knights' Sacred Mountain after blending his blood with Hao Yue's blood, he discovered that on top of the fact his external spiritual energy kept showing signs of growth, his perception had also become even sharper than in the past.

The invisible Dyke clansmen also had the ability to conceal their smell and their breath. The Dyke clansman was only discovered by Long Hao Chen when it was very close,

which was proof that his perception was formidable. During the previous fight, Long Hao Chen could also determine that the invisible Dyke clansman's strength was already at the fifth step.

More importantly, during that previous fight, Long Hao Chen had used the ability of his Spiritual Stove for the first time.

A split second after he discovered the Dyke clansman, he had casted the [Divine Light Mantle]. At that time, he did not even know what kind of enemy it was, but he was sure that the defensive power of the [Divine Light Mantle] would not be able to fend off the enemy. Thus, at the same time he launched the [Divine Light Mantle], he stimulated his Saint Spiritual Stove for the first time, emitting a white light from his chest.

In the instant the Spiritual Stove targeted the opponent, Long Hao Chen could clearly feel that the other side's spirit was locked onto him. The spiritual stove had neither offensive nor defensive capabilities, but the Dyke clansman did not have any other option but to target him, his all-out attack shifting to aim for Long Hao Chen instead. This pulling ability of his Saint Spiritual Stove was what enabled him to save Lin Jia Lu's life. Otherwise, considering Long Hao Chen's current level of cultivation, he basically had no way to save her.

Under Ye Hua's guidance during this half-year, Long Hao Chen learned how to use the Saint Spiritual Stove. Ye Hua explained to him the mysteries and the various kinds of ways to use it. The range at which Long Hao Chen could currently use the Saint Spiritual Stove was roughly 200 meters. If the distance from the enemies exceeded this distance, the Saint Spiritual Stove would have no effect.

Lin Jia Lu launched another [Eagle's Eyes] into the air. Although it could not detect enemies like the Luke clansmen or the Dyke clansmen, the threat of the Luke Clan was not very high and the Dyke Clan was considered as an uncommon existence in this part of the demon race territory; a second one was unlikely to appear. Apart from these two clans, the majority of the demon clans would be spotted by the [Eagle's Eyes].

"Enemy." Lin Jia Lu said in a low voice.

Everyone stopped moving and Li Xin asked: "How many?"

"One."

Lin Xin turned her eyes, "What are we squawking for if there's a single one..."

Lin Jia Lu did not quarrel with her this time and said in a low voice: "It's a dark green Zelin clansman, a Dual Bladed Demon. He's fast, and it seems that he's pursuing us. He's headed in our direction."

Hearing her words, including Long Hao Chen, everyone's complexion changed and they gasped with surprise.

The Zelin Clan was a large clan within the demon race; they were the most numerous in terms of quantity, and according to the investigations conducted by the Temple Alliance, the Zelin Clan's total population was at least 3 millions. About 100,000 Dual Bladed Demons from the Zelin Clan would perish on the battlefield every year.

The Zelin Clan's Dual Bladed Demons were the most commonly seen demons. They were not a mutation of humans, but a mutation of a kind of magical beast among the ones that became mutated at the moment the 72 Demon Gods descended. Originally, their fighting strength was only equivalent to that of a second step warrior and were among the less numerous kinds of demons. However, with their astonishing reproductive capability, their population kept increasing, gradually becoming the most populated demon clan several thousand years later.

If it was merely a normal Dual Bladed Demon, Long Hao Chen's group could cope with dozens of enemies of their level without any problem. However, the problem lied in the fact Lin Jia Lu said it was a dark green-colored one.

Normal Dual Bladed Demons from the Zelin Clan were black-colored, their whole body covered by a carapace, and describing them from the human standards, it could be said that they had only external spiritual energy and no internal spiritual energy, a demon specie that relied on their physical strength for close ranged combat.

However, when a black-colored Dual Bladed Demon from the Zelin Clan turned dark-green, it meant that they went through an evolution. In that case, they became equivalent to Kings within the Zelin Clan. Among 10,000 Dual Bladed Demons, there would only be a single Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon. The power of the Zelin Clan King was that of genuine fifth step powerhouses. They were

extremely tough opponents: other fifth step fighters were generally not a match against them.

The powerful Dyke clansman who attacked them previously was close to the fifth step, but he was actually not a real fifth step demon. For humans as well as demons, the fifth step was a borderline. The difference for demons of the fourth step and the fifth step was equivalent to the difference between a Grand Knight and an Earth Knight. Between a Grand Knight of the ninth rank and an Earth Knight of the first rank, there was an insurmountable gap. Without a doubt, this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon that suddenly appeared was powerful enough to completely annihilate them.

“What should we do?” Lin Jia Lu’s eyes were locked on Long Hao Chen.

Long Hao Chen hesitated for a little moment before asking back: “Did you discover any other demon?”

Lin Jia Lu shook her head and answered: “I didn’t discover others of them, this one is alone. Even if the demons know our location, they will not dispatch their main army to cope with us: after all, dispatching a single Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon, with its status of being a Demon God’s bodyguard, an invisible Dyke clansman and twenty slinking soldiers from the Luke Clan is already thinking highly of us. From my estimations, at least for now, no other demon will come to help this one.”

Long Hao Chen took a deep breath, his eyes were filled with a firm look, “To hide is just a temporary measure. The speed of this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon isn’t something we can compare with, it will catch up with us sooner or later. Everyone should calmly recover their spiritual energy, and Big Sis, summon Rose. We will fight it to death. If we pass this obstacle, we will have the opportunity to retreat to the Alliance.”

“Good.” Li Xin was definitely a newborn calf that did not fear

tigers. Immediately summoning Rose, she turned around and climbed onto the Rose Unicorn's back, showing a mighty appearance.

Chapter 62: Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon (II)

Rose was already a fifth step magical beast, only a bit away from the sixth step. Strictly speaking, at this stage, magical beasts were as strong as humans one step below them. So in her original form, Rose was equivalent to a peak level Grand Knight in terms of cultivation level and was a lot more powerful than the others present. As long as they had her help, their odds in dealing with this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon were indeed a bit better.

Lin Jia Lu had already become calmer, and she kept using [Eagle's Eye Method] to observe. "In at most three minutes, it will be in sight."

Long Hao Chen made prompt decisions, "We will be facing the opponent very soon. I do not want to keep this fact hidden, but what I previously used to 'attract' the Dyke clan's invisible demon was an ability from my spiritual stove, the Saint Spiritual Stove. After I block this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon, but before I get killed by it, use your most powerful attacks and go all out against it. I don't know how long I'll be able to last either, so you will have to unleash your most powerful attack as soon as possible to get rid of this enemy."

Their group of five included only three vocations: a knight, a warrior, and a mage. In addition, this was the first time they have worked together. That's why, when facing the invisible demon, they were so uncoordinated. As a result, Long Hao Chen had to make them function cohesively.

Hearing the three words 'Saint Spiritual Stove', the others could not help but show awed eyes, especially Lin Jia Lu. Being the daughter of the leader of governmental affairs in Hao Yue City, she was a lot more knowledgeable in regards to spiritual stoves than the two Chen brothers. She immediately understood that the Saint

Spiritual Stove was what saved her life.

Li Xin, completely shocked, looked straight at Long Hao Chen, “Hao Chen, you stinky brat, why is it that you concealed this from your Big Sis?”

Long Hao Chen showed an apologizing look, “Sorry, Big Sis, teacher didn’t permit me to reveal it, so I...”

Li Xin smiled: “It’s okay, now is not the time to speak about it. Let’s get rid of this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon, and then I’ll settle the bill with you.”

Chen Si and Chen Chen exchanged glances, their expressions somewhat wooden; a 14 year-old Grand Knight who also had a Spiritual Stove, something they did not even dare to dream about getting.

Chen Si said: “Hao Chen, I’ll provide assistance to help you defend against it. If you do this alone, I am afraid that...”

Long Hao Chen nodded and told him: “Big Brother Chen, later on, I will need you to come from the side to block and gain some time for me. I will use [Divine Obstruction] to conduct the defense, but everytime I block, I will need some time to concentrate my spiritual energy before I can use [Divine Obstruction] once more, so I want you to defend and resist during these short moments. If we are well coordinated, this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon will have no chance to get through my defense before my spiritual energy is entirely used up.”

Chen Si gulped, “Earlier, was it the [Divine Obstruction] that enabled you to block the all-out attack of the invisible enemy from the Dyke Clan? At that moment, I didn’t dare be sure of it, but was it indeed that?”

Long Hao Chen gently laughed, winking before him: “Please keep it a secret for me, elder bro Chen!”

Chen Si gave an understanding look. From his point of view,

Long Hao Chen had become 2 meters tall.

Even if they have not cooperated together in the past, everyone here was a well-known figure among the youths of Hao Yue City. With Long Hao Chen as their core, it would become a lot easier to coordinate themselves.

With Lin Jia Lu retreating back to the rear and Li Xin and Chen Chen on both sides, the five people calmly waited together.

It could be said that they had the possibility to challenge the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon precisely because Long Hao Chen possessed a [Saint Spiritual Stove]. Otherwise, only Long Hao Chen with his [Divine Obstruction] would be able to resist when this powerful fifth step opponent had the opportunity to attack.

Despite the fact it was the first time he had relied on the Saint Spiritual Stove in combat, Long Hao Chen already had a profound knowledge on this impressive tool; the defensive power of the Spiritual Stove had an immense utility in collaborative battles.

Looking at the Light Blade in his hand, deep inside, Long Hao Chen became gloomy. His father was right, it was during real battles that one could improve himself the fastest.

In terms of robustness, Long Hao Chen's body had no way to compare to that of Chen Si and Chen Chen. However, even though he was only 14 years old, he was currently the cornerstone of this five-man team. Facing a powerhouse at the fifth step, he was not afraid in the least. Even if there was only him present among the five youths, he would still try to face and overcome this fifth step powerhouse at all costs.

At this moment, the sun was already rising from the east, shining brightly onto the earth and on the horizon, with the shining sunshine illuminating everything, the silhouette of a Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon gradually appeared in the field of vision of these five.

At this moment, Long Hao Chen slowly shut his eyes, adjusting the internal spiritual energy revolving in his chest.

[Saint Spiritual Stove]. It does not only draw the enemy in, but also my internal spiritual energy! In the last fight, when I used the spiritual stove, the recovery of my internal spiritual energy was at least 20% slower than normal. Long Hao Chen was gradually becoming more and more interested in these mysterious treasures.

The dark-green-colored demon was constantly advancing towards the group. Li Xin, Lin Jia Lu, Chen Si, and Chen Chen all took the same action without prior discussion: they gripped their weapons firmly in their hands.

This was not a friendly practice, they were facing a powerful enemy with a fifth step cultivation level for real. Defeat would not be acceptable, because it would mean their death.

At last, they could finally see the appearance of the dark-green-colored figure clearly.

The Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon looked two meters tall, but was actually approximately three meters tall. Its thick limbs were stepping on the ground, and it rushed, covering 15 meters in a split second. At its back, a narrow winged shell could be seen. This winged shell was not for the purpose of flying but enabled his majestic body to keep its balance while running. Its fierce and evil face resembled that of a lizard's, but was much wider, revealing its thick teeth, and the most impressive thing was that a couple of forelimbs were growing on its shoulder.

These forelimbs were 1.5 meters long and extremely thick, but unlike its other four limbs, they did not support the creature's body. They were raised up in front of its face, each one was a stinger with three long, sharp blades: the first, the sharpest of the three, a blade that was half a meter long; the second, a third of a meter; the third, a little shorter still. Together, these forelimbs had six blades glittering with a jade green light, essentially forming a

group of magical blades. But ordinary magical blades would not be so long, nor so sharp; they would be much smaller than the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon's forelimbs.

When this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon was a hundred meters away from the group of five, Long Hao Chen opened his eyes wide. His long eyelashes jumped up slightly, showing his crystal clear golden eyes. It was to the extent that the silhouette of the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon could be seen reflected in them. An intense fighting spirit exploded throughout his whole body.

“Prepare to fight!”

To this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon, a distance of a hundred meters was something it could cover with a few steps.

“Lowly humans, you had the impertinence to kill my demon soldiers. Go to hell!” The Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon spat out these words, its voice extremely loud, and even before it finished speaking, its enormous body had already charged forward.

With a white glitter, the Saint Spiritual Stove was activated. The Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon, locked in on Long Hao Chen, instantly rushed and covered twenty meters.

The Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon was slightly delayed, but directly charged toward Long Hao Chen without the slightest hesitation. The dark green shell shone as the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon charged at a high speed like a dark ray of light, arriving at Long Hao Chen and chopping towards him using its enormous forelimb.

“Hong–” The first thing that it collided with was not actually Long Hao Chen's body, but the magical spell launched by Lin Jia Lu.

Four long ice spears were barreling towards the body of this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon.

Chapter 63: Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon (III)

Surprisingly, the five people could simultaneously see that these four ice spears were immediately broken into pieces upon colliding with its shell. As a result, countless ice crystals were scattered in the air, fluttering like little petals. Only a few white traces were left on its body.

What a solid defense! As expected of a big shot from one of the largest demon clans.

The Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon could not use any abilities, but with it being of the fifth step, how could it not be powerful?

Clang, Cling the Radiant Shield on Long Hao Chen's hand violently emitted a golden light and [Divine Obstruction] forcefully blocked the blow of the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon with a metallic sound. A rich gold color was simultaneously sent out from Long Hao Chen's body, and at the same instant, Long Hao Chen's pupils suddenly shrank.

The body of the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon had an offensive power that he could not even imagine. Even though Long Hao Chen's internal spiritual energy had already reached the 1600th level, making him an eighth ranked Grand Knight, this opponent was completely overwhelming. With his current level of cultivation, even a peak ranked Earth Knight could not break his [Divine Obstruction] without using skills, because even if the opponent was a ninth ranked Earth Knight, he would have a spiritual energy below 4000; if it was above 4000, he would be a Radiant Knight. [Divine Obstruction] could stop anything up to an offensive power with a spiritual level three times superior. If not for this fact, it would not be called the most mysterious knight skill.

Just like this, the heavy blow of the Dark Green Dual Bladed

Demon was stopped with this magnificent display of Long Hao Chen's [Divine Obstruction]. He stood as firm as before, only drawing two steps back, and at the same time, he discovered that in front of his Radiant Shield, this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon only had used a single "heavy blade".

In this instant, the difference between the fourth step and the fifth step could clearly be seen. Previously, when the invisible opponent from the Dyke Clan was stopped by Long Hao Chen's [Divine Obstruction], its body showed a time of delay, but this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon was not stopped the slightest bit, its other "heavy blade" instantly sweeping in. Facing this attack, Long Hao Chen was a bit dazed.

Due to his mistake in not anticipating this attack of the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon, Chen Si instantly moved, but was too slow. After blocking the blow, Long Hao Chen's body was still shaking a bit. He had no choice but to lift up the Light Sword in his hand, drawing support from the condensed light released by [Divine Obstruction] to form a [Bright Vengeance], to resist the power of the sharp blade near his neck.

Ping—

In the next instant, Long Hao Chen's body was sent flying away like an artillery shell. He was sent flying 10 meters away, crashing onto the ground. With this tyrannical impact, he felt as if the webbing between the thumb and forefinger of his right hand was split open, his Light Sword sent flying out.

Long Hao Chen spat out a mouthful of blood; he was already wounded.

[Divine Obstruction] was not absolute; Long Hao Chen could not display the real might of [Divine Obstruction] at the level of a Radiant Knight. Because he had never encountered a demon as formidable as this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon before, he did not imagine that this opponent's attack power was so fearful.

Nonetheless, the fact that Long Hao Chen received the blow was not without benefit at all.

The instant after Long Hao Chen was sent flying by this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon, Chen Si's heavy shield resolutely struck its body.

The Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon was pushed away a little bit by this shield bash. In contrast, Chen Si was pushed back 7, 8 steps away and had difficulty standing firm.

Li Xin and Chen Chen's attacks arrived at this instant.

Chen Chen had leapt into the sky; two dazzling flaming heavy swords, filled with a scorching hot spiritual energy, flashed and ferociously chopped at the body of the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon. A [Jumping Chop] plus a [Blazing Chop] of a Warrior. This was a combo that did not fear any defense. As a Berserker, his power was erupting wildly.

With a Boom sound, the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon was hit and its body almost immediately fell down, the blazing pair of swords leaving two black marks on its body.

In this moment, the Rose Unicorn descended like a red cloud, a fiery light appearing around its body. She was concentrating her spiritual energy around her. [Multiple Images Attack], an innate talent of Rose Unicorns.

The Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon that almost lost its balance was forcibly sent flying by this attack. Its pair of powerful forelimbs were thrust into the ground, restoring its balance and its whole body slightly curled up before it rose once again to aim at its target, Long Hao Chen.

Due to the pull of the Saint Spiritual Stove, even if the others had a superior offense power, the opponent had to get rid of Long Hao Chen first before shifting his attack. This was the effect of the spiritual stove. And at this moment, Long Hao Chen had just stood

up from the ground.

A gentle white glint appeared around Long Hao Chen's body. A warm influx of spiritual energy surged into his hand, rapidly healing his wounds. Under the effect of this warm energy that was pouring into him, even his injured internal organs felt better.

[Curing Light] was cast by one of Hao Yue's heads, Little Light. Meanwhile, five [Fireballs] were launched in succession towards the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon. Although the rapid succession of [Fireballs] didn't have enough power to kill or wound the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon, it could push its body that was still flying in the air.

Hao Yue was already back by Long Hao Chen's side, standing on his vigorous limbs and raising his pair of heads as he stared at this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon without the slightest of fear.

A charge.

Long Hao Chen did not simply stand at the same place for long, waiting for the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon. He instantly dashed to the side: he had to meet up with his comrades if he wanted to deal with this enemy. While dashing, he easily picked up his Light Sword on the way.

The Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon's body was really durable. Even continuously attacking him did not seem to have an effect in the least. With its four limbs on the ground, its body instantly threw itself into the sky, pouncing toward Long Hao Chen.

"OUUU—" It was at this time that Hao Yue's pair of heads simultaneously bellowed at this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon.

It was truly strange. When attacked from all sides, this enemy was not stopped the slightest bit, but with a single roar from Little Light and Little Flame, the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon fazed, its cold face suddenly becoming somewhat bewildered.

Taking advantage of this lapse, Long Hao Chen reunited once

more with his comrades and gave a glance to Chen Si before they stood once again, shoulder by shoulder.

After Lin Jia Lu launched her ice spears, she stood there, and at lightning speed started chanting another spell incantation. This incantation seemed extremely long, and she lifted her magical staff high into the sky, quickly generating mysterious blue symbols. The water element around her body was being transformed, becoming more and more pure.

Li Xin was riding the Rose Unicorn, with a sincere face. Both of her hands were hung at both sides, holding her swords as it assimilated the dense golden light that was gathered from the scarlet-colored blazing aura emitted by the Rose Unicorn at high speeds.

Hao Yue and the two pretty women agreed by chance on the fact that there was no need to conserve power. If they could not inflict a fatal injury to the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon, even if Long Hao Chen's Saint Spiritual Stove and his [Divine Obstruction] were quite mysterious, they had no way of escaping from their fate of being exterminated. All of them had already taken out their trump cards, their best abilities.

Compared to the two of them, the two brothers Chen Si and Chen Chen were clearly lacking. They did not have a background such as Lin Jia Lu and Li Xin and were extremely nervous.

"Big Bro Chen, let's do the same as before. You do not need to prepare too much in advance." Long Hao Chen said in a calm voice, relaxing the both of them. A [Faith Halo] was released by Long Hao Chen's body, enveloping all five youths into it without exception.

The Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon that was interrupted for a moment leaped at them once more, its two imposing "blades" chopping straight towards Long Hao Chen.

This time, Long Hao Chen did not stand there simply using [Divine Obstruction]. Instead, facing this Dark Green Dual Bladed

Demon's two magical blades, he took a step forward.

In a similar fashion to previously, the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon jumped, chopping with the first blade. Long Hao Chen's pace suddenly accelerated, dodging on the side. Immediately following, the Radiant Shield on his left hand leaned, a white colored light instantly appearing on the Radiant Shield. Taking the shape of thick white patterns appearing on the surface, it instantly collided with the first blade of the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon.

Chapter 64: Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon (IV)

[Holy Filter Shield], a Guardian Knight shield skill that filled the shield with a divine light made of spiritual energy.

“Pu—” Just like that, the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon’s first blade was unexpectedly parried, hitting the ground. Long Hao Chen’s body flashed, instantly becoming steady and once again activating the rock-firm and unyielding [Divine Obstruction].

With a crashing sound, the second blade hit the Radiant Shield, golden light scattering all around; Long Hao Chen finally managed to stop the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon.

Normally, a mere [Holy Filter Shield] would not be able to block the strike of the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon’s first blade. However, by further adding the shield technique [Leaned Shield Unloading Power] that Ye Hua had passed onto him, he could block the opponent albeit with difficulty.

The Light Sword was lifted up. It sparkled with the light of the halo that expanded from Long Hao Chen’s body.

[Imposing Ring], a Guardian Knight skill with the effect of increasing the overall spiritual energy power by 10%.

Drawing support from [Divine Obstruction] and [Bright Vengeance], and by fully utilizing his abilities, he could save his internal spiritual energy while increasing the effect of his skills. The other four were surrounded once more by a holy ring.

This time, Chen Si did not repeat the same mistake. He resolutely struck on the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon’s side with his shield and, with the amplification effect of the Holy Ring, he launched an all out attack, repelling the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon back by a meter. Chen Si let out a grunt while falling back and tumbling on his butt.

A glint appeared on the red colored longsword that came from the side like a bolt of lightning. A blazing red aura made the blade of the sword turn red. With a Pu sound, the sword entered the small crack a sixth of a meter wide in the the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon's shell, aiming for its neck. As a response, the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon cried out in pain, the "two blades" frantically sweeping about.

Chen Chen entrusted everything to one throw. Launching a [Skyfire Thrust], his most powerful attack at the fourth step cultivation level, he finally split open the small crack in the defense of the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon.

With Chen Si's aid, Long Hao Chen could take a little breather before firmly gripping his Radiant Shield and using [Holy Filter Shield] once more.

Pu-, the first blade was parried by the [Holy Filter Shield]; Long Hao Chen had steadily taken the hit. He wanted to give his partners an opportunity to attack. After withstanding this blow, he dropped the Radiant Shield and once again spat a mouthful of blood.

The Light Sword replaced the shield and [Divine Obstruction] was used once again. With a Bang sound, golden light was scattered as he managed to resist. From Long Hao Chen's mouth and nose, more blood flowed.

A Flame Sword that glowed a golden red light seemed to cut the entire world apart as it ruthlessly struck the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon's vulnerable body, producing an intense sound.

"HOUU-" The Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon was bellowing even though the Flame Sword had not penetrated into its body. The one who launched this attack was precisely Li Xin. This attack was one that combined light and fire, the Rose Unicorn's skill with hers, [Heavenly Dance of Light and Flame].

A dark blue light silently appeared at this precise moment,

aiming right in between the gap of the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon's "two blades".

"Pu chi."

The blue light penetrated its head and exited out from the back.

Lin Jia Lu kept ahold of her magical staff; her face had become pale. This [Dark Ice Needle] seemed to have exhausted all of her spiritual energy.

Long Hao Chen then heroically used the Light Sword in his hand, a golden colored aura erupted around his body. This was a Retribution Knight skill, [Heavenly Battle Array].

The golden light attack aimed at the gap between the two "blades" of the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon. Having retrieved the Radiant Shield, he also used it to strike above its chest, and pushed it back.

A white-colored healing light was once again shining onto Long Hao Chen's body; Hao Yue had already appeared beside Long Hao Chen and the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon. A red-colored ring of light appeared on Little Flame's forehead, [Resisting Ring of Fire], simultaneously affecting the bodies of the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon and Long Hao Chen.

The Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon had only been pushed back one meter, but Long Hao Chen, whose wounds were not light, had been pushed back five meters.

Chen Si was getting up from the ground, standing beside Long Hao Chen with his heavy shield.

The Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon's body became stiff, standing there, but unceasingly shaking. As a powerful mutated magical beast of the fifth step, it had an incredible endurance which made it extremely hard to defeat. Even if the two Flame Swords had completely pierced him, they would not have taken its life. However, the [Dark Ice Needle] of Lin Jia Lu dealt the final

blow.

When Long Hao Chen obstructed the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon's second attack, Lin Jia Lu's [Dark Ice Needle] was already prepared. She used the [Delayed Cast] skill, waiting for the opportunity. She had a single chance to strike, so if she could not hit the target at the crucial time, she would have wasted her attack.

After Li Xin inflicted serious damage to the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon, the opportunity had finally arrived and the [Dark Ice Needle] pierced its brain. Even if the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon's body was incredibly robust, it could not possibly survive this.

Thud—

Just like a mountain of gold, the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon fell on the ground, its body repeatedly twitching with a dark-green-colored blood unceasingly flowing out of its wound.

Breathing heavily, Long Hao Chen used the Light Sword to support his own body. Despite the fact that Little Light had healed him twice using [Curing Light], he had taken all of the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon's attacks. An intense pain was filling all his body, and he had even internal injuries.

After he murmured a long spell incantation, gold-colored ripples of light appeared on his body and a golden cross appeared at the top of his head. It was [Holy Mantle], a fourth step Guardian Knight skill.

In the previous battle, Long Hao Chen had not used this ability because the attack power of the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon was just too violent.

A rich divine aura entered his unsteadily shaking body, arousing LHC's internal spiritual energy as a scorching hot feeling filled it completely.

Lin Jia Lu looked at Long Hao Chen as if she was looking at a monster and asked: “You still have the internal spiritual energy left to use [Holy Mantle]? Really, how much spiritual energy do you have?” From her point of view, after he used so many skills, there should be practically no spiritual energy left in him even if his spiritual energy was 2000, the amount Earth Knights had. However, seeing Long Hao Chen’s strength, it was obvious that he had not reached the step of Earth Knight yet.

Long Hao Chen smiled reluctantly and told her: “I have a method to consume less spiritual energy when using skills.” Of course, he did not reveal his secret that related to his physique of Scion of Light.

With Li Xin and Chen Chen approaching, the five of them were gathered. Looking at each other in dismay, they showed expressions of fear.

To them, this was the calm after the storm. Anyone could see that, among the five of the group, the only one who sustained injuries was Long Hao Chen. But what if he did not have his Saint Spiritual Stove? Except for Long Hao Chen who could use [Divine Obstruction], who among them could resist the attacks of this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon? Even Li Xin’s Rose Unicorn could not resist these attacks!

Chen Chen was usually less social, therefore his elder brother, Chen Si, was the one who generally took the initiative. However, this time, he was the one who extended his hand to Long Hao Chen, “Take it.”

Long Hao Chen showed a faint smile. With the warm feeling caused by [Holy Mantle], he felt a lot better, but he would need at least three days to recover his full strength.

“Let’s leave first before talking. Sis, take big sis Lin, we should hurry.” Thinking of the possible dangers, they could not stay here any longer.

“Hao Yue, what are you doing?” Long Hao Chen just remembered Hao Yue and called for him, but discovered that he was lying near the body of the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon, his two heads pushing against the head of the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon and tearing its shell apart. From time to time, he would use some fire or light control magic.

“Pa.” Hao Yue’s right claw violently slapped the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon’s head from the side, and simultaneously, a crystal clear green thing suddenly fell out.

Little Light grasped it in his mouth and, without any hesitation, swallowed it.

Chapter 65: Demon Hunt's Secrets (I)

“Was that a magic crystal?” Lin Jia Lu asked with a shocked expression.

Li Xin suddenly said: “That’s right! Demonized magical beasts have magic crystals, and furthermore, it’s a fifth step magic crystal. Hao Yue, you’re a bad boy for having suddenly eaten it. That could have been sold for at least a thousand gold coins. What a waste!”

Lin Jia Lu groaned and spoke back: “If I were to have a companion like him, I would be willing to let him be as wasteful as he wants.” Hearing her words, Chen Si and Chen Chen both nodded and expressed their agreement.

During the previous battle, Long Hao Chen was, without a doubt, the cornerstone of their little group and had the biggest contribution. Still, his companion didn’t slow him down: Hao Yue’s performance was stunning as well, especially his coordination with Long Hao Chen. Regardless of whether it was in regard to his healing, assistance, or attacks, he was worthy of praise and did not make the slightest mistake.

The most enviable thing to Lin Jia Lu was that both of Hao Yue’s heads could use at least five or six kinds of magic! Even though it was only low level magic, generally speaking, for a magical beast that can innately use magic, two or three spells was already great. However, the middle ranked fourth step Hao Yue could already use so many kinds of magic, or control spell; even ordinary magical beasts of the fifth step had no way to compete with him on this side.

Hao Yue ate the magic crystal and eagerly ran to Long Hao Chen’s side, advancing while letting out wuu wuu sounds. Little Light, who had just swallowed the magic crystal, lowered his head, showing a very human-like behaviour, as if he felt a bit

embarrassed about what he did.

Long Hao Chen gently laughed. Crouching his body and ignoring the blood on both heads, he gently pat them, “It’s nothing, if it’s eaten, it’s eaten. You are still the most wonderful companions I could dream of. Let’s leave quickly.”

Li Xin told him: “Lil’ Bro, recover the corpse of this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon. It is said that a Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon’s shell can be used to make medicine; it should be profitable.” She knew that Long Hao Chen had a spatial ring.

Long Hao Chen nodded, “Okay, I will store it, and we can split the profits amongst ourselves.”

“I don’t need it.” Lin Jia Lu said without the slightest hesitation.

Chen Si and Chen Chen nodded in succession. Chen Chen retorted: “Hao Chen, we cannot accept this, there’s no way we would have survived if not for your presence. You are the one who protected us on top of being wounded the most. No matter what you say, these spoils of war should belong to you.”

Long Hao Chen advanced and stored the corpse of the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon into the spatial ring before turning around and declaring to everyone: “How could I have killed it by myself? It is impossible. No matter who exerted themselves the most, we are currently a team. Let’s head back before continuing this discussion, it’s time we set off.”

Li Xin carried Lin Jia Lu and the five people advanced at high speed towards the Temple Alliance.

Even after 10 kilometers of walking, they did not encounter a single soldier chasing after them. Li Xin rode her Rose Unicorn at full speed with Lin Jia Lu sitting at her back, they took brought back two other horses, and Li Xin carried the wounded Long Hao Chen while Chen Si and his brother rode the horses. Like that, they were finally back under the shining sun at the Temple

Alliance's garrison.

A group of people received them at the garrison. Because they were related to the Demon Hunt Selection Competition, the captain was extremely polite to them and they were given a huge tent to rest inside.

“Currently, we have slayed 22 demons, three less than the requirement. And, in my case, I am afraid that I will need three more days of rest to heal and recover completely.” Long Hao Chen calmly said.

After the calamity, they could finally relax. Everyone felt as if they lost the control of their body, including Li Xin's and Lin Jia Lu's who were resting inside the tent, leaning against its sides.

Hao Yue was curled up under Long Hao Chen's feet, his pair of heads using his tail as a pillow. Only Long Hao Chen, who was in a blood contract with him, could vaguely feel that Hao Yue's body had undulating energy inside, as if he was digesting the magic crystal he got from this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon.

Chen Si reacted: “Although we didn't sustain any injuries, we should at least rest until tomorrow to be in our optimal condition. Tomorrow will be the final day. It seems that demons are tougher opponents than we had expected.”

Lin Jia Lu declared without the slightest hesitation: “I wouldn't suggest that we attempt to hunt for demons again, especially at this time, because we still do not know of what method they're using to track us; making an attempt would be acting blindly. In case they find us once more, there's no saying what kind of monster those demons would send against us.”

Li Xin knit her brows, “But our task has not been accomplished yet.”

Lin Jia Lu took a deep breath and got to the point: “Let me drop out. This time, if not for Long Hao Chen, I would not have made it

back alive. After the last fight, I clearly understood that I am lacking. Even if I obtain the qualifications to participate in this huge competition, there is no way that I can obtain good results.”

Li Xin stared blankly at her, seeing her gentle expression.

“None of you have to withdraw, you have already passed the examination.” An aged voice rang out. Holding his magical staff, an elder opened the door and entered. However, wasn’t this elder their senior supervisor?

Lin Jia Lu shot a meaningful glance to everyone else, and hurried to stand, body straight and politely saying: “Senior supervisor.”

The elder waved his hands and pursued: “Sit down, all of you. My name is Feng Yangmu, you may call me Teacher Feng. From now onwards, you are participants of the Demon Hunt Selection Competition and I will plan everything related to your participation.” Compared to the first time they had met him, he was now a lot more gentle. His look was especially focused on Long Hao Chen’s body.

Lin Jia Lu respectfully asked: “Teacher Feng, you just said that we passed the qualifiers, right?”

Feng Yangmu nodded, “That’s right, you have already passed the qualifiers.”

The five youths looked at each other in astonishment before simultaneously becoming exuberant. Not having to enter the territory of the demon race again was clearly the best option. After they faced real demons for the first time, a fear of demons was instilled deep within them.

Long Hao Chen hesitated, “But we killed only 22 demons.”

Feng Yangmu looked at Long Hao Chen, smiled, and said: “The numerical count doesn’t represent everything. You killed a Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon. That was, in itself, enough to let you qualify for the Demon Hunt Selection Competition this year. The

requirements were for you to kill five demons per person, but that was for demons below the fourth step. A fourth step demon is equivalent to five of them. In other words, when you killed the invisible demon from the Dyke Clan, the task was already completed. When the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon appeared, I was really afraid for you, but in order to test your strength, I never intervened. However, I didn't expect that you would really manage to kill it."

Chen Si energetically brandished his fists, "Very good. This time, we can leave together for the Temple Alliance to participate in the Selection."

Feng Yangmu nodded, "Right. You passed the examination, so you have the qualifications to know some details concerning the Demon Hunt Selection. I'll tell you, so you have to listen carefully because this will be all the aid I will give you in regard to your participation in the Demon Hunt."

All of them shivered simultaneously. Sitting straight up, they concentrated all of their attention onto Feng Yangmu's explanation.

"The demon hunt selection is a competition that takes place every five years. Each middle sized town will dispatch a supervisor. When carrying out the entrance examination, he will be the one who will decide whether or not you are qualified to participate in the Selection Competition.

Upon reaching the Temple Alliance, you will be divided into various temples before advancing to the preliminary contests. There are, altogether, a total of 127 seats that can be filled by the towns in our Temple Alliance. Each seat will be filled by the most outstanding youths dispatched to the competition. As a result, each of the temples will hold a preliminary contest that is an extremely ruthless competition in itself. Particularly for the Knight Temple, the Warrior Temple, and the Mage Temple because these three Temples will have the most competitors. Now

that I mention it, the other three temples have a lot less competitors, especially the Spiritual Temple. The competitors from that temple only need to undergo one or two rounds before entering the main stage.”

Chapter 66: Demon Hunt's Secrets (II)

“The preliminary contest will select the top ten from each Temple to participate in the finals. Also, everyone who passes through the preliminaries will have the right to become a new participant of the Demon Hunts. During the final stage, your ranking will help determine both your groupings for upcoming Demon Hunts as well as your rewards.

60 people will participate in the final stage and lots will be drawn to decide the matchups. Thus, luck will be an important factor for the finals. For example, assassins drawing a mage opponent or knights drawing an assassin can be considered strokes of luck. The sixty people will be ranked at the end: the higher the ranking, the richer the rewards. The top three competitors can each select a teammate to be grouped with to precede the others during the next Demon Hunt roulette.”

Hearing that, Li Xin could not refrain herself from asking: “Teacher Feng, what is the Demon Hunt roulette?”

Feng Yangmu faintly smiled and gave his reply: “The Demon Hunt Selection, as its name implies, selects the youths that are the most suitable to join a Demon Hunt Squad. Each Demon Hunt Squad includes a powerhouse from each of the Six Great Temples, which is why 60 people are participating in the finals. How will they be divided? That is what the roulette selection of the Demon Hunt is here for; we let the Heavens decide how the teams will be formed. After all of the Demon Hunt Squads have been created, there will be another grand competition to ultimately determine and reward the best Demon Hunt Squad of the year.”

Long Hao Chen asked: “Teacher Feng, what is a Demon Hunt Squad’s task? The Demon Hunt Selection Competition organized by the Alliance is so grand, it must be extremely important, right?”

Feng Yangmu answered without the slightest hesitation: “Of

course. The Demon Hunt Squads can be said to be our most important force against the demon race. The Temple Alliance will give them various missions, almost all of them related to demons. A powerful Demon Hunt Squad is a larger threat to the demon race than a magnificent army of thousands of men and horses; it can even kill a Demon God. At the present time, there are over a hundred active Demon Hunt Squads acting as the main force of the Alliance against the demons.

I won't say anything concerning the kinds of tasks that are carried out by the Demon Squads, but if, by chance, you manage to become one of the chosen ones, you will naturally come to know everything. You can consider what I am going to reveal to you next as a kind of reward. Outside of the various abilities typically taught by the Six Great Temples, there are other 'exclusive secret skills'. For example, the [Divine Obstruction] of the Knight Alliance." At this point, he deliberately shot a glance at Long Hao Chen.

"These secret skills cannot be learned by ordinary members of the Temples. Even if they reach an incredible cultivation level, they will remain hidden to them. To learn these secret skills, one has two options. The first way is to receive an inheritance ring. Powerhouses that make incredible contributions to the Alliance can obtain the right to pass them on and teach these secret skills to their personal disciples. The second way is by exchanging contributions. When a Demon Hunt Squad completes missions, they can exchange their contributions for goods stored up by the Alliance. These goods include various formidable pieces of equipment, secret skills, and so forth."

Long Hao Chen had a sudden thought, he looked at the black-colored ring that his father had left him. This must be an inheritance ring. No wonder father wasn't worried about others questioning my ability to use skills like [Divine Obstruction]. It looks like all inheritance rings have the same appearance. The ring on his hand contained most of his secrets. More precisely, all of the

Retribution Knight skills, including the various secret skills, and even skills created by Long Xing Yu himself, were sealed in this ring.

Long Hao Chen never slacked on his Retribution Knight training. In his capacity as a Guardian Knight, he functioned as the core of the team and had a big role in the fight against the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon. Even if he did not have to conceal his ability as a Retribution Knight, and faced it directly with his two swords, he wouldn't have much confidence in winning, even if he was fighting it alone. But thanks to the fact he had his companions by his side, it was possible for him to face this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon, matching the opponent and giving it a hard time.

Looking at the five slack-jawed youths before him, Feng Yangmu calmly smiled and said: "Isn't it a bit too early to think about the rewards for your future achievements? Now then, I am going to tell you another secret related to the Demon Hunt Selection. This secret should be enough to attract your attention. One of the larger rewards for the final stage of the competition will be three Spiritual Stoves."

"AH!" Including Long Hao Chen, the five youths cried out in shock at the same time.

What did the words 'Spiritual Stoves' signify? Their power was clear just from looking at the way Long Hao Chen relied on his Saint Spiritual Stove to lead everyone safely. Even more astounding was that his Saint Spiritual Stove was only ranked 34th among the 36 kinds of Spiritual Stoves that knights could use. To any vocation, possessing a single spiritual stove is the equivalent of potentially becoming a major powerhouse. They were the most valuable treasures in nature, and one was enough to change the whole life of a single person!

Feng Yangmu felt all five children starting to breathe more heavily and smiled: "Every participant has equal chances, but you will have to do your best!"

His words of encouragement clearly had an effect, as the five youths before him seemed to have already cheered up; their expressions were full of spirit.

Feng Yangmu sighed to himself; ending up in the top 3 of the Selection Competition is easier said than done. Even though Long Hao Chen possessed, despite his rank, a Spiritual Stove and could use [Divine Obstruction], he still was not very likely to succeed. However, he should be able to at least enter the final stage of the competition. As for the others, I am afraid that...

“Teacher Feng, I have a question for you.” Long Hao Chen respectfully asked Feng Yangmu.

Feng Yangmu answered: “Please ask.”

Long Hao Chen said, “When we previously entered the territory of the demon race at night, we were extremely careful. Why could the demons still discover us? Even the mighty [Eagle’s Eyes] cannot not see more than 50 kilometers.”

Feng Yangmu smiled, “That is because you have never experienced a fight against the demons before. Among them is a kind of demon called Demonic Shadow. Their stealth capabilities are even higher than that of the Dyke clansmen. They can literally turn into a dark shadow. They are the demon’s scouts and only priests above the fourth step can detect them. I’m pretty sure that you were discovered by a Demonic Shadow, and that’s why you were raided by so many demons. It’s fortunate that you managed to adapt yourselves quickly enough to the changes.”

At this point, Feng Yangmu stood up and said, “Alright, please rest well. Tomorrow morning, we will start our journey and leave for the Temple Alliance to participate in the grand competition.”

After sending off Feng Yangmu, the five youths fell on the ground, completely exhausted; both Chen Si and Chen Chen were about to lie down and head off to dreamland but were pulled by Long Hao Chen.

“You cannot fall asleep, we have to meditate after the battle. We have to reflect on the new combat experience we just acquired while strengthening our body and cultivating our internal and external spiritual energy; this is the perfect occasion. To spend this time asleep is a waste of your life.”

Li Xin nodded, “Hao Chen is right. If he insists on training despite the fact he’s wounded, don’t tell me we cannot do the same?”

As a result, despite being quite tired, the five of them started resting in a meditative posture.

A silent night passed.

On the morning of the second day, Long Hao Chen gradually awoke from his meditative state, his internal organs still aching as before. The Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon from the previous day was really too powerful. His all-out attack had a power that definitely surpassed the 3,500th spiritual energy level. Despite the healing effect he received from the [Holy Mantle], his internal organs’ injuries were recovering very slowly. To rely purely on the healing effect of the light element magic was not enough, and this injury would affect his physical capability. It really was a significant loss.

Chapter 67: Demon Hunt's Secrets (III)

Though his injury had not yet healed, Long Hao Chen was pleasantly surprised due to discovering that both his internal and external spiritual energy had increased by a noticeable amount.

He was currently a Grand Knight of the eighth rank; the sum of his internal and external spiritual energy was above 1600. His external spiritual energy was at least at the 240th level. After the previous day's struggles, his external spiritual energy had increased by approximately ten levels, while his internal spiritual energy had gained twenty levels. At the present time, he was almost a Grand Knight of the ninth rank.

Facing a situation of life or death had awakened his potential. Omitting the intense fight he had against the invisible enemy from the Dyke Clan, the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon coming from the Zelin Clan had directed almost all of its attacks at Long Hao Chen, so his spiritual energy's growth naturally increased at a substantial rate. Of course, this progress was only a rough estimation from Long Hao Chen's point of view. Only after finally breaking through to the next step could he be sure of the actual progress made. Until then, he would have to go by his impression, with no way of distinguishing a concrete change in spiritual energy's nature.

The other four awakened in succession, and right after, they looked pleasantly surprised. Each of them felt an increase in their level of cultivation.

After brushing their teeth and washing their faces, they had breakfast. When the five people were ready to leave, Feng Yangmu appeared once more before them.

"Set off. Like when you were completing the previous trial, I will be by your side." After he finished speaking, a blue light shone and Feng Yangmu could not be seen anywhere anymore.

Li Xin stuck out her tongue, softly whispering: “Does this Teacher Feng have the cultivation level of a Chief Mage of the sixth step?”

After the yesterday’s bitter struggles, Lin Jia Lu and Li Xin’s relationship had obviously improved. Lin Jia Lu calmly nodded, and answered: “Teacher Feng is indeed a fourth ranked Chief Mage of the sixth step, an attendant of our Mage Temple.”

After the five thanked the people in the garrison, they immediately set off, Lin Jia Lu naturally riding Li Xin’s Rose Unicorn together with her, and as fast as lightning, they advanced towards the temple alliance in the northeast.

.....

In a circular room inside of an imposing dark-gold-colored hall, 16.5 meters tall.

There was not a single window, and yet, an unusual gloomy light shone onto someone’s hair.

It was a dim blue color, or more precisely, a dark blue brilliance.

Golden lines were drawn on the ground, intertwining and forming a hexagram. Countless inscriptions extended from this hexagram throughout the hall. Whether it was the ground, the wall or the roof, everything was covered with these mysterious inscriptions.

If Long Hao Chen could enter, he would definitely have recognized that these inscriptions were exactly the same as those drawn in the Knights’ Sacred Mountain, a mystical language used in ancient times.

The difference was that the mystical language used here was dark-colored, unlike back at the Sacred Mountain where it was filled with an austere, bright atmosphere. These were entirely different from the ancient patterns written in a mystical language in the Knights’ Sacred Mountain’s great array.

These dark blue-colored inscriptions created a restrictive atmosphere, as if forbidding something.

In the middle of the main hall, by the side of these hexagrams, a dagger quietly floated in mid-air. It had a pitch black color without emitting any luster. If not for the surrounding dark-blue radiance, this dagger could basically not be perceived.

There were no signs of spiritual energy, but this profound dark-colored item seemed to completely dominate the entire area, as if the blue-colored signs were only here to pay their respects toward it.

Under this pitch black colored dagger in the middle of the hexagrams, a person squatted. A young lady. She was seated cross-legged. Her long purple-colored hair was spread out onto her shoulders, as if emitting a layer of dark-blue-colored light. She had pure white skin, but this white color seemed a little unhealthy. Her nose, eyes, lips, tongue and ears didn't look like those of a living person, but were closer to those of a statue.

Her eyes slowly opened, and her pupils could be seen. They were entirely ash gray-colored, and her face looked empty of thoughts, just like a closed window. She was stunning enough to make any other woman sigh with envy.

"We should set off now." An ice cold voice sounded within the hall from all directions.

"En." A soft puff of air blew from that beautiful, statuesque young girl's jade-like nose. She slowly stood up and turned in the direction of the black dagger suspended in midair, raising her head to look up.

A dim light flashed, and the floating black dagger suddenly dropped down, directly passing through the space between the young girl's eyebrows, disappearing without a trace.

In the next moment, all of the mystical inscriptions in the hall

grew dim, quickly losing their dark blue radiance.

.....

Ten days later.

Aimei City. The most flourishing of the big cities belonging to the Temple Alliance. Because it was located within the Temple Alliance, this large city almost never suffered from the baptisms of war. The extent to which this city flourished was second only to the Temple Alliance's Holy City. The distance from Aimei City to Holy City was only about 400 kilometers or so, and two days worth of fast-paced travel on horseback was enough to reach it.

Long Hao Chen and his four companions had arrived at this bustling city early in the morning. In comparison with Aimei City, Hao Yue City was equivalent to the significance of a simple city block.

However, ten days of rushed travel had exhausted Long Hao Chen and his companions, and they were in no mood to appreciate this disparity. They first located a hotel to stay in, ate a good meal, and then returned to their respective rooms to take a warm bath. To loosen up and relax, nothing felt better than this.

According to the reported deadline, there were still four days left before the Demon Hunt Selection. Thus, the five decided to rest in Aimei city for a day, before setting out early in the morning the following day to continue their rushed travel.

After a day's rest, everyone became a lot more comfortable. Long Hao Chen was currently in his room meditating, when a knock could be heard from the door.

"Hao Chen, come with Big Sis, let's go for a walk." Li Xin's voice sounded through the door.

Dispersing the internal spiritual energy revolving within him, Long Hao Chen slowly stood up. "Coming."

Following the growth brought through training, his body's

internal spiritual energy had already become considerably pure. Training while combining the effects of the Spiritual Stove located at his chest and the mild golden radiance within him, his spiritual energy gradually compressed and showed signs of congealing. His internal spiritual energy condensing into liquid form would signify that he had crossed the boundary to become an Earth Knight. It would seem that he only lacked around three hundred units of spiritual energy. However, in truth, it was definitely not so easy to break through the gap between the fourth and fifth step.

“Sis, what are we going to do?” Long Hao Chen opened the door to a casually dressed Li Xin leaning against the doorframe outside, sweetly laughing as she looked at him.

Li Xin wrapped her arm around him, saying: “Don’t ask, just come with me. Hao Yue, you stay and watch the house. In a while, this big sis will buy dried fish for you to eat~.” As she said this, she pulled Long Hao Chen out of the room. Little Light and Little Flame both swallowed their saliva and promptly leapt onto the bed, proceeding to sleep. Ever since Hao Yue had eaten that magic crystal, his daily sleeping duration had increased significantly. It was only these past few days that he had gotten a bit better.

Reaching the hotel’s entrance, Long Hao Chen was surprised to find that Lin Jia Lu was already there waiting. Seeing him, she laughed faintly, and said: “Let’s go.”

“You two, what exactly are we going to do?” Long Hao Chen asked suspiciously. He could tell that both Li Xin and Lin Jia Lu had a goal in mind.

Lin Jia Lu covered her mouth and giggled, saying: “Haven’t you been wanting to sell the corpse of that dark green dual bladed demon? Aimei City hosts a very large auction house, and that dark green dual bladed demon can also be auctioned off with very little difficulty. We’ll go auction it off and then split the profit; your big sis also has some stuff she wants to buy.”

“Eh.” Long Hao Chen replied with disapproval. In his mind, training was clearly much more important.

Chapter 68: Demon Hunt's Secrets (IV)

Lin Jia Lu said with a smile: “Little boy, don’t be dissatisfied. The auction house is a place you will frequently visit in the future. Inside, we can find almost everything we may need. Of course, the first issue is whether or not you can come up with the money. If you can become the member of a Demon Hunt Squad in the future, you will come into contact with auction houses several times. Let’s go and explore this place, to avoid getting lost in the future.”

Li Xin nodded and simultaneously answered: “She’s not wrong, a lot of good things can be found in the market district. In addition, the biggest auction houses within our Temple Alliance and belonging to the Holy Union have the backing of the Six Great Temples, and only the ten major cities have one. This Aimei City is among the first few built. The experience you acquire here will be good for you; in the future, whether to sell or buy goods, the Holy Union’s Auction Houses will be the most suitable places.”

Long Hao Chen asked: “Then why is it that we didn’t call the two Chen brothers?”

Lin Jia Lu answered: “They don’t have any goods to buy or sell, so there was no need for them to come. Now let’s hurry up, I was informed that an auction is going to be held tonight.”

The biggest city Long Hao Chen had ever been to was Hao Yue City. In fact, since he had met his father, the absolute majority of his time had been spent training, and he had rarely interacted with the outside world. Now that he was 14 years old, he was naturally very curious in regard to all kinds of new things. In addition, both Long Xing Yu and Ye Hua told him that the strength of a person would increase by relying on external factors to boost it. For example, there were weapons, equipment and pills. At the very least, it was a very good thing to increase one’s knowledge.

Aimei City’s Auction House was located in the most bustling

section of the city, in its center. An enormous white oval building could be seen in the distance.

This enormous oval building was 6.5 kilometers away. It was a dome that seemed to be made of a special material; the twilight shone from the building and distributed its radiance upon itself.

“So huge.” Long Hao Chen gave a somewhat dull look to this enormous building. The walls surrounding the auction house made people feel as if they were the walls of the city, that were extending endlessly.

Li Jia Lu gave a smile: “Aimei City’s Auction House is not the largest in the Holy Union: the Holy City’s Auction House, which is at least twice its size, can hold 20,000 people at the same time during auctions. This auction house, from my estimations, can hold roughly 10,000 people.”

Long Hao Chen was amazed and asked: “With so many people at the same time during auctions, wouldn’t the prices reach heavenly levels?”

Lin Jia Lu shook her head and gave him her answer: “This is impossible. The prices during the auction are already considerable, so unless people really have an urgent need for some item, no one wastes their money during the auctions. The highest priority of the Holy Union’s Auction Houses is not to collect commissions. Because they are big enough, all they rely on to make their profit is the entrance fee. Ordinary tickets cost a single coin, and the ticket price for seats that are nearer to the front are more expensive. The seats closer to the center of the auction site are said to cost a thousand gold coins each.”

Li Xin went to buy the tickets, and came back with three cards, giving one to both Long Hao Chen and Lin Jia Lu, and telling them: “Let’s go in. Hao Chen, we should have the corpse of the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon appraised so that we can sell it today.”

As they entered the auction house, the first thing they saw was a large hall with a classic layout. Going through, on both sides of the group there were high sales counters, each one containing at least ten guards. There were not only warriors among these guards but also several ones clad in mage attire.

Through Lin Jia Lu's presentation, Long Hao Chen already knew that the counters on both sides were respectively for the appraisal of the goods and the retrieval of the gold gained through auction. To cope with the scattering streams of people, there were a total of eight counters of these kinds in this auction house. The auction house organized auctions daily, and as a result, the place was constantly bustling with noise and excitement. The relatively wealthy went so far as to participate in the auction as a form of entertainment. After all, all kinds of items could be found here! Also, being informed had a lot of benefits.

Li Xin brought Long Hao Chen to the left side to take a look at the articles on the sales counter. There weren't a lot of people lined up here, so they quickly advanced in succession.

"Hello, I want to auction the corpse of a magical beast belonging to the demon race." Long Hao Chen said directly to the middle-aged man behind the sales counter.

The middle-aged man activated an unknown device as he raised his head to take a look: the walls in the sales counter were slowly changing shape, taking the form of a three meters wide platform.

"Please approach." The middle-aged man said indifferently.

"Thank you." Long Hao Chen poured his spiritual energy into his 'Forget-me-not' ring, and a faint blue light glittered all around the ring. The Forget-me-not ring seemed to become alive, as it directly emitted a dark green-colored luster, while something rapidly appeared on the platform.

"Yi!" The middle aged man behind the counter was bewildered, "Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon. What a rare sight."

As he spoke, he stood up, approaching the corpse of the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon while carefully looking at it. After a short period of time, the middle aged man wrinkled his brows and said: “Too bad, there’s no magic crystal. Otherwise, it would have been twice the regular price. In this situation, the price will start at 800 gold coins. A Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon is uncommon, so it should not be directly bought.”

The middle-aged man handed a black-colored tile to Long Hao Chen, with a magic crystal embedded in the center. Behind the crystal, there was a number, ‘26’.

“When the auction is finished, please show us this as proof to receive your gold coins. Be careful not to lose this tile, we only identify by tile, not by person.”

800 gold coins was the initial price, everyone could then only raise the bid by 100 gold coins. In Long Hao Chen’s eyes, this was a lot of money. It would be at least enough to feed Hao Yue dried fish. This little guy ate gradually more and more, which ended up consuming the majority of Long Hao Chen’s money.

“Wait a moment!” Just as the middle aged man was about to put away the demon’s corpse, a rushed voice could suddenly be heard from Long Hao Chen’s back. Immediately, a person approached with quick steps.

“Please do not proceed yet. I want to directly purchase this item.”

Long Hao Chen looked at him, shocked by his appearance. This person was a youth that could not be much older than himself. At most 20 years old, he stood roughly half a head taller than Long Hao Chen. His deep green-colored hair reached his back, and even hung down as far as his waist. His skin was sparkling and translucent, milky white-colored. He looked almost as handsome as Long Hao Chen. Only, because of his long hair reaching his waist, he looked even more like a girl than Long Hao Chen. Fortunately, his Adam’s apple could still clearly be seen.

The white-colored long gown of a mage covered his slender figure, and his build looked like a mage's as well. Only, he was not carrying a magical staff in his hands.

The most peculiar thing was this person's eyes. Faintly green-colored, they expressed a kind of playful and mischievous intent but they could easily make others feel like he was full of affection towards them.

Simultaneously, he lowered his head, looking at the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon. Seeing its fierce appearance, the facial expression of this young mage immediately changed. He looked absolutely bewitched, to the extent that he started to gently caress the shell of this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon.

"A good item, what a good item! I want it, little brother, please tell me your price." As he spoke, he straightened his waist, looking at Long Hao Chen, face to face.

Clearly seeing Long Hao Chen's appearance, this youth with a deep green-colored hair couldn't help but stare blankly at him, his eyes were shining, and he appeared absolutely amazed as he rumbled: "How can there actually be someone even more handsome than me in this world? It's impossible."

"Puhu." Li Xin stood at the side, and couldn't help but fall in laughter. This youth was handsome. Only, his character was as different to Long Hao Chen as black and white. He was narcissistic, and was far beyond comparison with Long Hao Chen.

Long Hao Chen's face became rigid, as he said: "I have already entrusted it to the Holy Union's auction house, so I am afraid that I cannot sell it to you directly."

The youth continued to give a few glances to Long Hao Chen, his eyes filled with envy, "Impossible, this is impossible! How can someone more handsome than me exist?" As he spoke, his hands adjusted his deep green-colored long hair.

Chapter 69: The Mysterious Stone Orb(I)

Long Hao Chen furrowed his brows and, without paying any attention to the youth with long hair in front of him, turned around and told both Li Xin and Lin Jia Lu: “Big sisters, we should go.”

“No, no, don’t go. I really want to buy it, I will pay 2000 gold coins, how about it?” The youth, seemingly full of remorse, hurried to speak.

Hearing this number, Long Hao Chen couldn’t help but halt his steps: saying that he did not care would be a lie. 2000 gold coins, this was more than twice as much as the starting price. It may even not be sold for the starting price during the auction.

The middle-aged man with the auction house looked unconcerned, and said in a low voice to the long haired youth: “Do not cause a scene and disturb the peace here, now hurry up and leave.”

The long haired youth’s mouth twitched, and he took out a black card from his waist, handing it to the man: “Brother, it seems like you are new here. You don’t even recognize this master.”

The middle-aged man instantly reacted upon seeing this black card, his face instantly becoming stiff; he inspected the card in his hand very carefully, looking at it from different angles, before respectfully handing it back to the long haired youth.

“Respectable distinguished guest, you have the right to purchase this merchandise immediately, all you need is the seller’s consent.”

The long haired youth looked extremely proud of himself as he took the card back, before turning once more to look at Long Hao Chen, saying: “How about it, young junior? You see, I didn’t violate any rules of this auction house. Sell it to me. It will be no lower than 2000 gold coins. I need the body of this Dark Green

Dual Bladed Demon to use a part of it to make some medicine.”

Lin Jia Lu blurted out, amazed, “You’re an alchemist?”

The long haired youth’s face grew dark, “Who said that I was an alchemist? I am a mage, a very, very powerful mage. Making medicine is a mere hobby of mine. I will tell you that this great master is going to participate the Demon Hunt Selection Competition. Have you heard about demon hunts before? It is the sword of our Six Great Temples.”

As if he didn’t hear his words, Long Hao Chen pointed at this green-colored Dual Bladed Demon, and said: “2000 gold coins? Sold to you.” He was ice cold to him; his first impression of this babbling narcissistic was not good at all.

“Alright, alright. Take out your magic crystal card, I’ll transfer the gold.” Saying so, he waved his left hand, and a red light flashed as the dark green Dual Bladed Demon disappeared in the blink of an eye.

Long Hao Chen looked at him with astonished eyes. Clearly, this youth before him also possessed a storage type magical tool.

“I don’t have a magic crystal card,” Long Hao Chen shook his head and said.

“Just set up an account then. You can do it here, at the front. Let’s go, I’m taking you there.” The youth pointed at a counter on the other side. As he said this, he stretched out his hand and grasped Long Hao Chen’s shoulder amiably.

Long Hao Chen’s shoulder instantly moved, shaking off the youth’s hand.

The long-haired youth didn’t mind, and laughed: “Hehe, don’t be so cold. Look, we’ve both grown so handsomely and we are such a beautiful sight to behold. We should get to know each other more instead. I’m called Lin Xin, what’s your name?”

“Long Hao Chen.”

“A good name, a good name.” Lin Xin laughed openly and brought Long Hao Chen over to the other side to go set up a magic crystal card.

Lin Jia Lu looked at Li Xin and warily said: “Can it be that this fellow is a swindler?”

Li Xin answered in a low voice: “Just watch him closely. As a mage, do you think he can just run off?”

The middle aged man behind the counter rolled his eyes, saying: “You two misses, no need to worry like that. The black card that that young master just took out is actually our Holy Union Auction House’s highest ranking VIP black card. This kind of VIP card cannot be purchased under any circumstances, and can only be received as a gift. The people that possess this card, whenever they wish to purchase anything in our auction house, will receive a ten percent discount as preferential treatment. The ten percent difference will be covered by our auction house. Furthermore, at any auction house headed by the Holy Union, they can receive help covering expenses that exceed their budget within 100,000 gold coins.”

The two girls sucked in a breath of cold air, their expression immediately changing. Even with their background, they had actually never even heard of the existence of such an honored VIP status within the Holy Union’s auction houses.

Setting up a magic crystal card was more trouble than Long Hao Chen had thought. Furthermore, he needed to pay 100 gold coins up front. Where would Long Hao Chen have such a large amount of money? However, Lin Xin flashed his card yet again, and the setup cost was annulled.

The size of a magic crystal card was only about half a palm, and it was inlaid with four gems cut from the same gemstone. In the process of setting up the magic crystal card, one needed to funnel in their internal spiritual energy for it to be fully functional. As

such, only people in the third step of their vocation could set one up. Every single person's spiritual energy had their own unique qualities, and when using a magic crystal card, it was necessary to input your own spiritual energy within it. Thus, no one would worry about losing a card or someone else taking it for their own use.

Transferring money over was an even simpler matter. In the center of the magic crystal card, there was a specific area where one would simply stick a needle shaped rod with the sum of money written on it. Both parties would then input spiritual energy into the cards, and the two cards would dock together, resulting in a successful transfer.

Over a time period of about halfway through a lighted incense stick, Long Hao Chen's magic crystal card had attained two thousand gold coins.

"It's been settled." Putting away his magic crystal card, Lin Xin patted Long Hao Chen's shoulder, saying: "This brother should be attending the auction. As I don't plan on treating this as just an accidental encounter, let's go attend it together. Come with big brother, and you can get a discount on the stuff you buy."

After receiving two thousand gold coins, Long Hao Chen's mood had gotten a lot better. Nodding, he answered: "Then let's go together."

Calling Li Xin and Lin Jia Lu over, the four people entered the auction house together.

Entering the auction house, Long Hao Chen was immediately astonished by the scene before him. In the auction house, there were rows and rows of seats placed in a circle. Every five rows, the seats would be a different color. According to Lin Jia Lu's explanation, different colors signified different ticket prices. Seats closer to the inner area of the circle would be substantially more expensive. In the area closest to the center was a circle of

soundproof booths. At the center of the auction house was a circular platform, which was obviously for the auctioneers to use as a means to sell goods.

Once they had entered the auction house, Long Hao Chen immediately felt a dense accumulation of magical elements assaulting his senses. Clearly, this place implemented a good amount of magical installations.

“Our tickets are for the back row.” Looking at the number plate Li Xin had given him, Long Hao Chen turned and informed Lin Xin who was currently working his way towards the front of the auction hall.

Lin Xin paused his steps, saying: “Never mind. I have a booth in the front, and I’m by myself anyway. The interior of the booth is very spacious, so how about you just come with me.”

Long Hao Chen hesitated a bit, only to have Lin Jia Lu gently nudge him and tell him to accept Lin Xin’s offer. In regard to this long-haired youth, Li Xin and Lin Jia Lu were both quite curious. One must know that alchemists were extremely rare, and their status was far beyond that of mages. Although this fellow didn’t admit that he was an alchemist, he still stated that he had this kind of hobby. Furthermore, he possessed a black card. To make friend with this kind of person was not a bad idea at all.

“Alright,” Long Hao Chen obligingly answered him.

Under Lin Xin’s guidance, they followed the stairs, heading down lower and lower. After reaching the booth area at the front, there were female professional attendants there to help serve them. These attendants all wore silver dresses and had slim figures with beautiful, elegant appearances.

“Master Lin, you’ve come.” Seeing them come, a female attendant hastily approached Lin Xin and greeted him with a smile and a curtsy.

Lin Xin spoke in a straightforward manner: “Xiao Nuo, these few people are my friends. Take us over to the booth please.”

“Yes.” The young lady’s gaze flitted over Long Hao Chen’s face and expressed slight astonishment. Lin Xin’s appearance could already be considered to be one of the most outstanding among males, but in comparison with Long Hao Chen, he fell a bit short. With both of them standing side by side, Lin Xin would immediately be compared to Long Hao Chen.

However, the female attendants were quite classy here, and her vision only lingered for but a moment before she brought the four people across the red carpet to the interior of booth.

Chapter 70: The Mysterious Stone Orb (II)

Lin Xin had the 6th booth, and its location was nearly perfect, directly facing the auction platform. The female attendant, whom he called 'Xiao Nuo', pushed open the door, allowing them to enter the booth.

The booth had a surface of 100 square meters with a brown carpet lying on the floor; stepping on it gave a comfortable feeling. It was elegantly decorated; green plants were placed on both sides, and a semi-circular white sofa dominated the center of the room. Even if ten or more people sat down, it still would not feel crowded. On the right side were transparent windows of crystal through which the auction platform could be clearly seen.

On the small table in front of the sofa were various kinds of fruits and desserts.

Lin Xin started to speak: "Brother Long, you two beautiful women, please sit, please sit. Xiao Nuo, bring two bottles of Sweet Nectar Red Devil."

"Right away." Xiao Nuo revealed a sweet smile, and left while closing the door.

Lin Xin sat beside Long Hao Chen, and told him: "Brother Long, do you still have other magical beasts to sell? It doesn't matter whether they are dead or alive. It's too hard nowadays to find magical beasts like your Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon. Truthfully, I needed it very urgently this time."

Long Hao Chen shook his head, giving his reply: "I only had this mutated-magical beast from the demon race to sell. What do you need the body of this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon for?" In regard to alchemy, he was very curious.

Lin Xin faintly laughed, and said: "Take a look." With a red glint, a crystal vial appeared, and three scarlet red pills could be seen

through the crystal.

“These are energy pills I made. One of the main materials is the powder milled from the shell of a Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon. It is an excellent item!”

Long Hao Chen was surprised, “Energy pill? What is it used for? Can it increase external spiritual energy?”

Lin Xin mysteriously shook his head, and answered: “You will know in just a few minutes. The auction is about to start, let’s watch.”

Xiao Nuo entered the booth once more, with two bottles of fruit wine. She placed them down, before calmly pouring a cup for each person. Clearly, it was the Sweet Nectar Red Devil that Lin Xin had spoken of a little earlier.

“Taste it, this thing is not bad, it’s a specialty in the south.” After he lifted and drank a cup, his eyes turned towards the auction platform.

Long Hao Chen lifted a cup as well, but as soon as he drank a gulp, bitterness hit his tongue, and a heavily scented fruit taste completely filled his mouth, spreading its flavor all around. An overly warm feeling entered his stomach, before quickly spreading throughout the rest of his body.

Li Xin and Lin Jia Lu sat on the side, looking at Lin Xin and Long Hao Chen conversing. After drinking a single gulp of this Sweet Nectar Red Devil, their looks changed completely. It had been the first time Long Hao Chen had seen this sort of fruit wine, however this wasn’t the case for the two girls. Lin Jia Lu’s father had a bottle in his collection, and kept it as a treasure that he was unwilling to drink. This Sweet Nectar Red Devil was said to be made using the sweet nectar of a type of rose flower, after it had been passed through 99 processes; only 20 bottles were produced every year. Lin Xin had actually gone as far as to take out such a treasure to entertain them.

In fact, the cup of Sweet Nectar Red Devil in their hand had cost even more than the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon Long Hao Chen just sold. This fellow was really too wealthy.

On the auction platform, a beautiful woman led the auction. At this moment, the number of people seated outside had increased by at least fifty percent.

The auctioneer was gorgeous. Dressed in a long pure-red-colored skirt, tall and well developed with her long black hair fluttering behind. She gave the feeling of someone capable and experienced. Walking to the center of the platform, she lifted up both her arms, and slightly bowed. Her gentle and beautiful voice was extremely pleasant to listen to, “To all guests coming from Aimei City, Welcome to this auction house of the Holy Union. My name is Xing Xuan and I am pleased to serve each of our honoured guests present today.”

Cheering voices resounded, and whistling sounds could be heard everywhere. Clearly, this auctioneer was very welcoming.

“Now, let’s see our first article.” The auctioneer didn’t excessively stir up the crowd with her speech, but rather directly acclaimed and saluted the participants before directly entering the main event.

Seated beside Long Hao Chen was Lin Xin, his eyes completely flowery, “Sister Xing Xuan is still so beautiful, she’s truly classy! If not for the fact that I am only 18 years-old, I would definitely try to woo her. Little brother Long, what do you think of her? Beautiful, isn’t she?”

“Mh.” Long Hao Chen lowered his head, flustered.

Another attendant, dressed similarly to Xiao Nuo, appeared, approaching the platform while pushing a cart containing something covered by a red cloth.

Xing Xuan smiled and said: “We think everyone here has guessed

which article we will be auctioning first; it is in fact the goods of our mysterious ‘master Lin’. A lot of people have been asking me how they can buy master Lin’s pills. Now, I will give you all the answer. Master Lin is working together with our auction house and selling all of his pills through us. It means you won’t be able find these anywhere else.”

Long Hao Chen almost immediately looked at Lin Xin next to him, “Is she speaking about you?”

Lin Xin answered quite proudly: “I am precisely this master Lin! Being young is truly great! Outside, even if I say that I am the one who made this pill, no one will believe me. But this is for the best, it would be too troublesome if my identity were to be known after all.”

Long Hao Chen was quite surprised, “Are you saying that you aren’t worried that I might tell others? We’ve just met after all.”

Lin Xin, full of mysteries, smiled: “Of course I’m not worried. Let’s take a look at the auction.”

The red cloth was uncovered, and a beautiful bottle made of crystal appeared on the golden cart. The view from the booth was quite good, and Long Hao Chen could see with a glance that this crystal bottle contained a red pill, exactly the same energy pill as the ones Lin Xin had shown him earlier. However, this bottle only contained one of them.

“This is an item produced by master Lin, the Jade Body Protection Pill: a pill at the peak of the third step’s level. After using it, for a quarter of an hour, the external spiritual energy dedicated to the body’s defense will be increased by 500 units. The skin of the user will become as hard as steel, and it will improve physical attacks as well as magical ones. This is not the first time the Jade Body Protection Pill has been up for sale, so I won’t say much to introduce it. In the battlefield, possessing a pill of this kind is almost equivalent to having another life. The starting price

will be a thousand gold coins. Each bid must be at least 50 gold coins higher than the previous.”

The external spiritual energy dedicated to the body’s defense could be increased by 500 units? Even if this amplified spiritual energy couldn’t be used to attack, what did 500 extra units of external spiritual energy imply? It implied that almost any attack of the fourth step or lower could be rendered ineffective. To top it off, this effect lasted for a quarter of an hour.

Long Hao Chen was somewhat affected but Li Xin and Lin Jia Lu were completely astonished. The value of such a little pill, was a thousand gold coins! No wonder magical alchemy was known as the most lucrative vocation. This master Lin was truly extraordinary.

Quickly, bids were called one after another, and after a moment, the price of this Jade Body Protection Pill reached 1500 gold coins.

Long Hao Chen’s heartbeat quickened; this auctioneer Xing Xuan was right. By having such a pill, as long as he wasn’t facing powerful enemies above the fourth step, it was equivalent to having another life. Essentially, if he had had one of these pills when he faced the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon, he wouldn’t have ended up so wounded.

Ultimately, the pill was auctioned for the price of 1800 gold coins.

Lin Xin seemed unsatisfied of this price, “Only 1800? It was sold for 2000 last time. It looks like I should sell less of this product to increase the value. This master shouldn’t spread them like beans, making them easier to get. Brother Long, would you like to make a deal with me?”

Long Hao Chen’s heart skipped a bit, “What kind of deal?”

Lin Xin revealed a smile and took out a crystal bottle with three Jade Body Protection Pills, progressively reaching it out towards Long Hao Chen, explaining: “You only need to answer a question,

and these Jade Body Protection Pills are for you.”

Chapter 71: The Mysterious Stone Orb (III)

Long Hao Chen looked at him, completely astonished. Each pill had a value of at least 1800 gold coins. Three pills were worth more than 5000 gold coins. What kind of answer could be so expensive?

Li Xin said with a playful tone, “No need to act so surprised. This thing is quite expensive to purchase, but for me, the cost of production only amounts to a few dozen gold coins. Do you know how many of them I could make with a single Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon? So many that I wouldn’t dare announce it. Even making 180 of these pills is doable for me.”

In fear that Long Hao Chen might be getting swindled, Li Xin immediately said “Tell us first what your question is and even if we can answer it, we reserve the option to withhold our answer.”

Lin Xin gently laughed, “It’s a simple question. You will definitely be able to answer it. All I want to know is whether or not you were the ones to kill this Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon.”

Li Xin was speechless, “Such a simple question?”

Lin Xin unfolded his both arms and answered, “What if it is so simple?”

“What’s up with that, we are the ones who killed it.”

Lin Xin raised his hand and threw the crystal bottle into Long Hao Chen’s hand, as he said, “Alright, as promised.”

Long Hao Chen didn’t dare believe his own ears, “Lin Xin, this is too valuable, I cannot accept it.” It was worth 5000 gold coins! Up till now, he had never even seen so much money.

Lin Xin rubbed his own forehead with a look of helplessness, “Little brother Long, this is a mere deal. I didn’t give it to you and gain nothing in the exchange. In addition, I have another request for you.”

Long Hao Chen was a pure and kind-hearted boy, so when taking such precious items, although he was happy deep inside, he still couldn't bring himself to accept it, "What?"

Lin Xin showed a humble smile and hardened his chest as he said: "If I am not guessing wrong, you must be heading to the Holy City to participate the Demon Hunt Selection Competition, right?"

Li Xin said, astonished, "How did you guess?"

Lin Xin explained, "It's not too hard to guess. From the south, those heading to the Holy City must pass through Aimei City. Your youth combined with the reply to my previous question are both proof that you're qualified to participate in the Selection. How could it be more clear? The main reason why I said I wasn't afraid of you revealing that I am master Lin was simply that no one would believe that someone of my age can make pills of the third step. The other reason was that there was no way you would stay in Aimei City for long, since you will immediately be leaving for the Holy City to participate to the Selection. Am I right?"

Li Xin's brows were raising, "What? Do you want us to fight in regard to the competition earlier than scheduled?"

Lin Xin hurried to shake his head and replied, "How can it be! I just want us to cooperate. Little brother Long, my request to you won't harm you in any way. I only wish that if during the Demon Hunt Selection, the two of us enter the final stage and you ultimately enter the top-three, you choose me as a member of your squad."

Hearing him say that, Lin Jia Lu could no longer control herself, "Why should he choose you? I am a mage as well!"

According to the rules of the demon squads, each team of six had to include six people from different great temples. In other words, a demon squad could only have a single mage.

Lin Xing said, "Older sister, I will only say the truth; from my

point of view, considering your cultivation level, I am afraid that entering the final stage of the competition will be a little hard to you!”

Lin Jia Lu was startled, “Can you see my cultivation level?”

Lin Xin smiled faintly, and said, “This is my little secret. Little brother Long, how about it, will you make this promise? If you only accept my request, we will become a pair of good brothers in the future, and without hesitation, I will supply pills for you, free of charge. Honestly, I don’t have much for myself, beyond pills and money.”

He was quite handsome, but his current face looked more like that of a big bad wolf, eyeing a small, white rabbit with evil intent.

Long Hao Chen looked full of doubt, as he replied: “But how can you be so sure that I will enter the top 3?”

Lin Xin said, “I am betting on you. Even if you don’t, I won’t be harmed. Making this promise will be no trouble for you either, and in addition, you can receive my three energy pills with no qualms about them.”

Suddenly, Long Hao Chen’s body violently shook, and all of a sudden, a purple golden colored symbol appeared and shone on his forehead. The symbol was quite unusual, as it initially appeared with purple golden-color but quickly spread out, forming nine purple-colored shining symbols. Each was a third of a meter long, and faint traces of spiritual energy fluctuation could be seen above.

The purple-colored faint light scattered, and with a flash, a figure appeared in front of Long Hao Chen. It was Hao Yue.

At this moment, Hao Yue was in a clearly abnormal state, as he continuously stuck to Long Hao Chen’s body while letting out some Wuu Wuu sounds, as though he was trying to convey something.

Besides Long Hao Chen who could communicate with him via

telepathy, other people couldn't understand Hao Yue's words, "Hao Yue, calm down, I will try my best for you." As he spoke, he raised his head and looked at the auction platform.

At this moment, another cart replaced the previous one on the auction platform. An enormous stone orb lay atop the golden cart. He could vaguely see that this stone orb was covered with several dark green-colored 'veins'. The host, Xing Xuan, still standing on the platform, was introducing the item.

"The following auctioned article is somewhat... special: even our best appraiser was unable to identify it. But the seller wanted us to sell it at the starting price of 10,000 gold coins. Our auction house's doctrine is to be impartial and not let our guests be extorted the single gold coins, so our chief appraiser is going evaluate this article."

"Looking at it, it seems that this article has nothing special, it just looks like an ordinary stone orb. No traces of magic can be discerned inside. In addition, the interior of this orb is completely isolated. No one, not even a powerhouse at the ninth step could know what is hidden inside unless he splits open the surface of this orb. The only thing we can be sure about is that there are some fluctuations of spiritual energy inside. The patterns appearing on the surface are due to this fluctuating spiritual energy. However, this chief appraiser can predict that an unusual metal is very likely to be present inside. That said, it may be something completely different. Everyone, let the auction start, you may rise the price from ten thousand gold coins, but each of you, think carefully, because after the product is sold, we won't take it back. "

Without a doubt, because this item didn't really stand out, and because the starting price was so high, this auctioneer Xing Xuan was trying to make it seem better than it actually was. In reality, it was obvious that they did not look favorably on this item.

Ten thousand gold coins. It was really ten thousand gold coins! At this moment, Long Hao Chen was internally struggling.

When Hao Yue appeared, it was not because Long Hao Chen summoned him, but rather Hao Yue who launched the summon. This kind of instance already far exceeded the limits of their contract of equals, and was evidently the effect of the blood contract. Hao Yue appeared right when the stone orb was being pushed onto the auctioneering platform and sent signals of urgency towards Hao Chen. It seemed that this stone orb was quite important to him.

Because their bloodstreams were interlinked, what Long Hao Chen saw, Hao Yue could sense it as well, even if he was not beside him. Thus, as soon as he came to the booth, he immediately started jumping up and down, obviously desiring that stone orb.

Exorbitant! Too exorbitant. Looking at Little Light and Little Flame's eyes and their unyielding, dogged expression, Long Hao Chen couldn't help but feel a sense of helplessness. He had just received 2000 gold coins but he had to split them up evenly with the others. Where would he have 10,000 gold coins to buy this item!

Long Hao Chen stared at the stone orb on the platform, but Lin Xin was instead focused on Hao Yue. When Hao Yue had appeared, Lin Xin's face had expressed astonishment. He had seen so many species of magical beasts, even rare ones, but he had never before seen one like Hao Yue.

Previously, Lin Xin had paid a high price to purchase the magic skill, [Identification Method]. Relying on this magic, he could detect the circumstances of any one, regardless of his vocation, and even if it was a magical beast. The only prerequisite was that the level of the target investigated could not exceed his own.

Chapter 72: The Mysterious Stone Orb (IV)

Clearly, Hao Yue was at most a fourth ranked magical beast, and not even at the peak of the fourth rank, which was equivalent to a human fighter of the third step. And yet his [Identification Method] had failed. Furthermore, it was not the first time the skill had failed today. Why was he trying so hard to get close to Long Hao Chen? He had specifically used the [Identification Method] to investigate Long Hao Chen, but beyond his current strength and age, there wasn't anything else he could find. It was the reason why he was so interested in Long Hao Chen.

How strange. What kind of magical beast could Hao Yue be? Lin Xin's heart was full of doubts.

At this moment, outside the booth, the whole audience became silent. Ten thousand gold coins was not a small amount by any means. One must know that a single gold coin was enough to feed a family of three for a month, and ten gold coins was enough to buy ordinary armor. Ten thousand gold coins was sufficient to arm a regiment of a hundred knights down to the teeth.

Certainly, this stone orb had the possibility of containing a rare metal, but how many rare metals could have such a high value? Furthermore, heaven knows how big the piece of metal was. If it was only fist-sized, even if it was a magical metal like mithril, it still wouldn't be worth much.

Xing Xuan had already asked for the third time: "Are there any distinguished customers who are interested in this item?"

As before, there were no responses. The people who normally attended the auction were rarely impetuous. If the price was one hundred gold coins, there might have been someone who would take the gamble and just buy it. However, for ten thousand gold coins, few would risk the purchase.

"Brother Lin." Long Hao Chen suddenly called out. Seeing Hao

Yue's exceedingly hopeful look, he finally made a decision.

"Ah?" Lin Xin was still in the midst of pondering over Hao Yue's origins, and he only reacted after being called.

"Brother Lin, if you are willing to lend me money to buy the item before our eyes, I will fulfill your request," Long Hao Chen said in a voice like iron.

"You don't need to borrow money from him, Big Sister will buy it for you." Lin Jia Lu, who had been silent for quite some time suddenly spoke up. Furthermore, she hastily stepped forward and swiftly pressed the number, ten thousand, on the auction's apparatus.

On the auctioneering platform.

Xing Xuan said a bit apologetically: "It seems that article number two will have to be put away. Ah! Wait a second, the VIP of booth number 6 has offered a price of ten thousand gold coins. Ten thousand gold coins going once." Seeing that someone had put forth a price, she immediately became pleased. However, once she saw that it was booth number 6 that had given a price, she couldn't help but knit her eyebrows together and shoot Lin Xin's booth a reproachful glance.

The booth's water crystal glass was a special kind of manufactured material. From the outside, one could not see inside. Only from the interior could one see outside.

Outside, there was a huge commotion in the auction area and no small amount of jeering could be heard. But what they didn't know was that within booth number 6, there was a person presently shrieking. The person shrieking was exactly Lin Xin.

"This sister, you can't do this! Brother Long already proposed to borrow money from me, how can you just snatch away this opportunity?" Lin Xin's face was all gloomy.

Lin Jia Lu giggled sweetly and said: "Hao Chen is my little

brother. Isn't it normal for a big sister to buy things for his little brother?"

Long Hao Chen was scared out of his wits, "Big Sister Lin, how is this acceptable. The price is ten thousand gold coins!"

Lin Jia Lu stood up and walked towards Long Hao Chen's side. Her expression was gentle as she said: "Hao Chen, if you were at least twenty years old, this big sister would have no qualms and would definitely snatch you up. Even if I would wrong Xin'er, it still wouldn't be a bad choice. It's a pity that the gap between our ages is far too wide, and I can only be your big sister. I will never forget the events of that day when twice, a whole two times, you saved my life. The second time especially; as I had already caught the scent of the Grim Reaper, it was you who pulled me from the brink of death. If you don't give big sister a chance to repay you, then big sister's heart will never be at peace."

"Big Sister Lin, I....." Long Hao Chen still wanted to decline her offer, but Lin Jia Lu had already raised her hand to press over his mouth, "Don't say anything more. Do you really think that Big Sister's life is not even worth ten thousand gold coins? I've already consulted with your Big Sister Xin'er, and she also agreed. If you are unwilling to accept, then in the future, don't even think about calling me big sister."

Ever since the day when they finished their training mission, nearly every night, Lin Jia Lu had been awoken by nightmares. She could never forget the moment when the member of the Dyke Clan had pressed an icy, sharp blade against her throat. Her saving grace was Long Hao Chen! If Long Hao Chen hadn't been there, she would have died without a doubt. She was a person who knew gratitude. These past few days, her relationship with Li Xin had also gotten a lot better. Originally, there hadn't been the slightest hint of anything keeping them from singing the same tune. After opening up about their past incident, they had gone back to being old friends. She had the idea of going to Aimei City's auction house

to buy something for Long Hao Chen several days ago. It was a big auction house, and the amount of goods weren't lacking. She believed that buying something useful for Long Hao Chen right before the Demon Hunt Selection would be the best way to pay him back.

Long Hao Chen took a deep breath, and finally nodded his head, saying: "Big Sister, thank you."

Extremely pleased, Lin Jia Lu rubbed his head, saying: "This, is big sister's good little brother."

Li Xin said a bit jealously: "Hmph, I'm going to earn a lot of money in the future as well."

"Third time, sold. This mysterious stone orb goes to the distinguished customer in booth number 6." From outside, Xing Xuan's voice floated through. With nobody making a sudden bid, it was finally sold for ten thousand gold coins.

Lin Xin said gloomily: "Brother Long, keep looking. If there is anything that catches your eyes, let me know. I'll gift it to you as long as you agree to my request."

Long Hao Chen laughed faintly and shook his head, saying, "I don't have anything else I want. However, I will still consider your proposal. But remember, we have to enter the final rounds of the Demon Hunt Selection to make that possible, no?"

At this point in time, Hao Yue had finally calmed down. The thirst in his eyes, however, did not decrease, rather, it actually increased. Leaning on Long Hao Chen's foot, Little Light and Little Flame rubbed unceasingly against his leg.

Lin Xin sat there as if pondering something. Right at that moment, there was a knock on the door. The door opened, and the young lady Xiao Nuo entered, pushing the golden cart that was previously on the auctioning platform. On top of it lay the mysterious stone orb.

Seeing the stone orb, Hao Yue almost directly threw himself at it. Only when Long Hao Chen gave him a look did he show some restraint, but his body was still slightly trembling.

Ever since they had left the Knight's Sacred Mountain, it was the first time Long Hao Chen had seen him so excited. To Long Hao Chen, ten thousand gold coins was an astronomical sum. The money Lin Jia Lu had taken out was a favor he would firmly keep in mind, and one that he would definitely pay back to her in the future.

If it was someone else, they would definitely not be so willing to buy the stone orb. One's money wasn't something that ought to be wasted just because of a magical beast companion's sudden costly urges.

But Long Hao Chen was different; Hao Yue was very dear to him. They shared a blood contract, and the blood of the other flowed in each of their own bodies. Long Hao Chen almost considered him as his own little brother. Seeing Hao Yue so eager, he decided to trust the intuition of this "little brother", and had resolved to buy the stone orb. He was also firmly convinced that he would definitely be able to earn this amount of ten thousand gold coins in the future.

Lin Jia Lu advanced and took out her own magical card to wholly pay. After Xiao Nuo pushed the cart in, she had originally wanted to make some conversation with Lin Xin. However, upon seeing him seated and pondering deeply, she left completely baffled. Xiao Nuo had never seen Master Lin without a smile on his face.

Long Hao Chen didn't directly hand the stone orb to Hao Yue. Instead, he stored it in his ring 'forget-me-not'. Lin Xin was an outsider, after all. Regardless of whether or not this stone orb was a special item, this auction house clearly wasn't a suitable place to display it.

Chapter 73: Violent Priest (I)

Pa. Lin Xin abruptly slapped his thigh, “I’ve taken a gamble.”

He seemed resolute as he raised his head and looked at Long Hao Chen, telling him: “Little brother Long, although it is the first time we meet, I believe in my foresight, and I will bet on you.”

Long Hao Chen shook his head and replied: “Lin Xin, I don’t gamble.”

Lin Xin shook his head, and said: “I don’t want you to bet with me, I want to bet with myself. Here are three bottles of pills, take them. There are instructions in each bottle.” As he spoke, his hand twinkled with a red light, and three bottles of pills appeared in his hands. They were all bottles made of crystal and in each bottle, there were 10 pills about the size of a soybean. In terms of color, however, they had nothing in common.

Long Hao Chen didn’t directly retrieve these three bottles, he looked at Lin Xin with an inquiring look.

Lin Xin let out a small sigh, and said: “Little brother, these pills are not for free. I will say it once more, I want you to agree to the request I made earlier. Give me your promise.”

Long Hao Chen was shocked and looked at him, “Your pills are so valuable, but for a mere promise, you...”

Lin Xin faintly laughed: “That’s why it’s a bet. I believe in my intuition, furthermore, if I really win this bet, I will be the one to profit.”

“Of the things I produce, these are the ones I am most proud of. It’s even better than the energy pill to some extent. Furthermore, they’ve never been available for sale. In regards to manufacturing pills, I have confidence in my abilities. Truthfully speaking, I don’t really want to become an alchemist. My life’s biggest goal is to walk and explore the whole continent, to discover mysterious

relics and ancient remains. In order to fulfill this goal, my greatest chance would be to become a member of a demon hunt squad.”

“I have a natural talent towards manufacturing alchemic medicine but in regards to magic, I’m quite lacking. I’m strong with auxiliary type spells, but with offensive spells, I am inadequate. Thus, even if I possess an abundant amount of magic power, I cannot put forth sufficient power when battling. This time I’ve registered for the Demon Hunt Selection, and within the Mage Temple, I am confident in my ability to pass the qualifiers. However, concerning the final rounds between the six great temples, I’m afraid I can’t guarantee anything.”

“Especially because my fighting power is insufficient, I need a strong squad. If you can become one of the top three in the finals, then you’ll have the opportunity to choose me as one of the members of your squad. You only need to promise to give me that chance and these three bottles of pills will be yours. In the case that you cannot enter the top three, then just consider it as if I’ve wagered wrong.”

“I can kind of glimpse at your level of strength. Relying on your level of training, I’m afraid rushing to the top three will be a difficult task. But, when you factor in the pills I give you, the chances are no longer the same. It might really be that you’d have a chance. Brother Long, how about both of us give each other a chance?”

Right at this moment, Hao Yue ambled over. After Long Hao Chen stored the stone ball into his ‘forget-me-not’ ring, his mood had calmed quite a bit. In a very human like manner, he rose up on his hind legs and pushed his nose towards the three bottles in Lin Xin’s hand to take a whiff. After doing so, he turned to Long Hao Chen and nodded.

At this instant, a thought sent from Hao Yue appeared within Long Hao Chen’s heart, “This person has no malicious intent. You can trust him.”

What Hao Yue transmitted to Long Hao Chen was a type of feeling. Long Hao Chen didn't know where it had come from. However, when he was on the battlefield, out of the two times Long Hao Chen had noticed the enemies' intent of ambush, when they had detected the Dyke Clan member during the second battle, it was actually due to Hao Yue. Long Hao Chen was actually slower than him at discovering the enemy's presence.

"Alright, I accept your proposal." Long Hao Chen took the three bottles in Lin Xin's hands as he answered solemnly.

In reality, this decision was painful to make for Lin Xin. He was well aware of the value of these three bottles of pills: they were nearly equivalent to a third of his savings. The reason he made this decision was due to that intuition of his. What convinced him was foremost the mystery surrounding Long Hao Chen and Hao Yue. The second, was Long Hao Chen's personality. Only after using once more his [Identification Method] did he make this decision to gamble.

There might be an existence stronger than Long Hao Chen who would also attend the Demon Hunt Selection. However, after utilizing the [Identification Method] so many times, Lin Xin finally realized that there was a mysterious Spiritual Stove within Long Hao Chen's body. To a mage of the same squad, a guardian knight who possessed a Spiritual Stove could be considered to be his lifeline! Furthermore, in such a short period of time, Lin Xin could not possibly find another elite from one of the great temples to cooperate with.

Of course, Lin Xin also had his crafty aspects. He had latched onto an important point, Long Hao Chen's age. Participants of the Demon Hunt Selection had to be 25 years of age or younger. Even if Lin Xin couldn't make it this time, how about five years later? Long Hao Chen was already at the fourth step. What level could he reach in five years? At that point in time, to take a risk as for whether he would become one of the top three would most likely

no longer be a problem. Furthermore, Lin Xin himself was only eighteen years old. Five years later, he would still be within the age range to be eligible for the Demon Hunt Selection.

However, at present, he did not know what his decision entailed. In his lifetime, Lin Xin had produced countless pills. However, the ones that were worth the most on the market were in these three bottles. When he had made his final decision, Lady Luck was already on his side.

The auction outside continued without ado. None of the latter items were lacking in quality, but nobody was still interested in watching. As such, they excused themselves in advance and left the Holy Union's auction house.

"Brother Long, I guess we'll meet at the Holy Union then. Let's both do our best." Lin Xin didn't linger much longer, and using his two hands to slightly brush his long, green hair behind his back, he showed Long Hao Chen a handsome smile and turned to leave.

Looking at his receding figure, Li Xin said in an accusing manner: "Little Bro, you were a bit too rash. We don't even know what kind of person he is!"

Long Hao Chen laughed lightly, saying: "He shouldn't be a bad person. Hao Yue told me by intuition that I could trust him."

Little Light and Little Flame nodded then bit and pulled on the hem of Long Hao Chen's pants. Clearly, they were still thinking about this mysterious stone orb.

Li Xin and Lin Jia Lu shared a look and didn't say anything further. After all, this Lin Xin was still an alchemist; it was not bad for Long Hao Chen to befriend this kind of person.

Returning to the hotel, Long Hao Chen had barely closed the door when Hao Yue could not refrain himself from hopping up and down.

Long Hao Chen sighed helplessly: "You are so impatient.". As he

spoke, a soft and thin golden radiance was being emitted from his body, his [Divine Light Mantle]. Immediately, this [Divine Light Mantle] enveloped the room's interior.

In regards to defense, [Divine Light Mantle] wasn't that great. But its soundproof characteristic as well as the powerful aura emitted were extremely practical.

After completing the [Divine Light Mantle], Long Hao Chen took out the stone orb from his 'forget-me-not' ring, handing it to Hao Yue.

Little Light and Little Fire exchanged a look, and suddenly, Little Light opened his mouth wide and swallowed the stone orb with a single gulp.

One must know that this stone orb was the size of a human head. Although Hao Yue was two meters tall, his heads weren't so big. Upon swallowing such a big stone orb so abruptly, Little Light's neck protruded out, and, with difficulty, the stone orb gradually entered his belly.

"You ate it just like that?" Long Hao Chen gave a startled look to Little Light and Little Flame.

"Wuuwuu, wuuwuuwuuwuu..." Little Fire let out whimpering noises at Long Hao Chen. Although they weren't able to speak, they could still transmit their thoughts to Long Hao Chen through their blood contract.

Long Hao Chen's heart was abruptly startled, "What? You want to go back to your original world?"

Chapter 74: Violent Priest (II)

Little Fire transmitted this message to Long Hao Chen, saying that he wouldn't be back for a long time, nor could he be summoned. As for how long it would last, they did not even know.

Ever since Hao Yue had arrived at Long Hao Chen's side, he had never once thought about going back to his original world. But at this moment, clearly, the stone orb had caused some changes to appear within him, creating this necessity.

Looking at them, Long Hao Chen nodded, but seemed quite reluctant to part, and replied: "It seems that this stone orb was really quite important to you. Since things are this way, you should head back. Don't worry about me, I won't encounter any kind of danger during the Demon Hunt Selection's qualifiers."

In reality, since he was preparing himself to participate in the great competition, it was precisely now that Long Hao Chen needed Hao Yue the most; even though their cultivation level wasn't very high, Little Light and Little Fire could use a variety of magical spells and had perfect coordination with Long Hao Chen in fights. Their impact was no small matter.

But Long Hao Chen didn't want to drag Little Light and Little Fire down; back then, he clearly felt Little Light and Little Fire's thirst for the stone orb.

Little Light and Little Fire revealed disappointment in their eyes: they clearly knew that this was not at all the right time to leave Long Hao Chen. Two heads rubbed against Long Hao Chen's leg as whimpering sounds could be heard. However, their firm look didn't change in the slightest. They were obviously full of determination.

On Hao Yue's back, some purple colored veins slowly began to shine, forming a thin purple-colored light that covered the inside of his whole body. As he looked deeply at Long Hao Chen, this

purple light vanished, and in a split second, Hao Yue's body immediately shrank before disappearing, thus heading back to his original world.

Looking at the place where Hao Yue had disappeared, Long Hao Chen tried to suppress his feelings of unwillingness as he took out the three bottles given to him by Lin Xin from his 'forget-me-not' ring. Opening them, he took out the slips of paper that were inside.

They looked unimportant, but upon discovering its contents, Long Hao Chen instantly opened his eyes wide. His first reaction was, Is this for real?

The three slips of paper were quite simple. On the first one was written, Below the fifth step, take one pill per day and begin training; each will increase the user's spiritual energy by 10.

On the second one was written, You may use these pills in any circumstances, they will replenish 200 units of internal spiritual energy within ten seconds.

On the third one was written, These will instantly release your hidden potential and increase your combat capabilities by 20 percent and will persist for 30 seconds. After the effect wears off, the user will be weakened for 12 hours.

Even though Long Hao Chen had no idea that these pills were the best pills of the fourth step, he could see how valuable these items were.

For this reason, he felt greatly indebted towards Lin Xin. Regardless of whether it was for his promise to Lin Xin or to reach the cultivation level required to seek his parents even one day earlier, it was necessary for him to exert as much effort as possible.

Immersed in his thoughts, Long Hao Chen took out one of the pills in the first bottle and swallowed it before sitting cross-legged to cultivate.

The next morning, Long Hao Chen's group of five continued

their journey, heading straight for Holy City. After a day's rest, everyone was in high spirits. The Demon Hunt Selection was about to start, and deep inside, they were all determined and full of anticipation. Without a doubt, they were all extremely motivated.

After two days of travel, they were quite close to Holy City, so Long Hao Chen's group slowed down and took their time advancing. The competition would only start in a day and a half, so there was no need for them to rush.

Walking forward, they suddenly heard some people arguing ahead, attracting their attention.

"Since the beginning, this baldie has been an eyesore . It's convenient that we haven't reached Holy City yet; it seems that you don't even need to attend. Hand over your number plate, then piss off and return to Xiu City. A priest who can't even heal actually wants to lead us?"

"You guys want to rebel?" A deep voice sounded.

This sudden clamor had attracted Long Hao Chen's attention because the first voice sounded extremely familiar.

After passing through a small grove, Long Hao Chen, Li Xin, and the rest of them could see the two parties quarrelling before them.

There was a total of six people behind the grove. Long Hao Chen's judgment wasn't mistaken: one of those people was unexpectedly that familiar person. That person whom he had met by chance at the Knight's Sacred Mountain: Gui Wu.

At this moment, Gui Wu was mounted atop his fiery, red-bodied Scarlet Shelled Earthworm. His right hand gripped a lance as he sat tall, seemingly well above the rest.

These six people were split into two sides: Gui Wu's side, which unexpectedly amounted to five people, and surprisingly on the other, one lone figure.

That lone figure was a hulking bald man. He was extremely tall,

at least two meters or more, had a broad back, and his bulging muscles stretched his clothes taut. With a slightly unrefined appearance, his bald head gleamed like a lightbulb. His sword-like eyebrows covered ferocious, tiger-like eyes, and his face showed a straight, tall nose with a squarish jaw, seeming very imposing.

But what made Long Hao Chen and the others curious was that this heavysset baldie was surprisingly dressed in a white robe. This white robe was something that only a priest would wear! Taking into consideration what they had just heard, the expressions of Long Hao Chen and the others exuded astonishment. Was this robust person whose physique even surpassed average warriors and knights really a priest?

Correct, the guy was a priest. Did he not hold a magic staff in his hands? If one could call that a magic staff...

This heavysset baldie's right hand gripped a pitch black staff fully 3 and a half meters long and as thick as a person's arm. The material of the staff was indiscernible, and at the very tip of the staff was inlaid a glittering, dim yellow gem. Without this gem, one would truly think that this staff was simply an iron rod.

Because the area through which Long Hao Chen and the others passed was on the mountain's incline, they could clearly see these six people, but the other party could not see them.

The group of five currently confronting this bald priest was clearly led by Gui Wu. He pointed his lance towards that bald priest and said: "Sima Xian, give me your number plate, then piss off so we can abandon you here. At Holy City, a fellow like you would only serve as a disgrace to our Xiu City."

That bald priest's eyes gleamed coldly, "I, your father, will not hand it over. How about you bastards try and take it from me?"

Gui Wu laughed sinisterly, "Then we'll beat you until your own mother can't even recognize you. Attack."

Saying so, he urged on the Scarlet Shelled Earthworm as it roared and hurtled forward, charging rampantly towards that bald priest. Among the group of four on Gui Wu's side was a warrior charging alongside him, two mages who began to chant incantations, as well as a spindly figure wearing a black veil that seemed to be an assassin. His body flickering, he ran out and circled around from the side. It seemed that there was a deep understanding within the teamwork of these five.

Watching this occur, Long Hao Chen's face immediately expressed indignance. Regardless of which side was wrong, five people were actually executing an attack from all sides against a priest. Already, Long Hao Chen couldn't tolerate this despicable conduct. But, just as he rushed out to help that priest, he was held back by Li Xin who stood beside him.

"Lil'bro, look before acting. Don't you see that the priest doesn't even show a hint of fear? He should be capable of defending himself."

Facing the all-round attack of those five people, this bald priest Sima Xian let out an angry shout. Not only did he move back, his steps were extremely quick, and he swiftly retreated backwards. At this moment, that gigantic staff in his hands began to light up.

Both priests and knights were considered to be companions of light because all their skills utilized holy magic. The only difference was that the holy magic of priests focused more on healing and auxiliary affects.

Raising his staff, a brilliant golden light suddenly burst forth, becoming a golden pillar that enveloped that bald priest, Sima Xian. This was both an offensive and defensive skill of priests, [Sacred Light]. It effectively protected oneself while simultaneously releasing a killing force against all enemies close by.

Chapter 75: Violent Priest (III)

Although Sima Xian's retreating speed was quite fast, and his body in no way weak, it couldn't possibly compare with a Scarlet Shelled Earthworm. Gui Wu's lance was thrust forward, a golden light surrounding the edge of this long lance. This was the skill [Light Thrust]. A golden light shot straight towards Sima Xian.

Gui Wu was a Guardian Knight, but he didn't use a shield at all: both his hands were instead holding his lance. At the same time [Light Thrust] was launched, the Scarlet Shelled Earthworm rushed forward towards the bald priest. Stamping on the ground to its front right side, it used a trampling energy commonly used during fights by magical beasts. An intense shaking spread all through the ground, attacking and sinking the surroundings.

Exactly as Li Xin said, Sima Xian's face didn't show the slightest change; on the contrary, the face of this robust priest held a ferocious expression.

With a Buzz, [Light Thrust] was immediately blocked and dispelled by [Sacred Light]. The Scarlet Shelled Earthworm stamped layer after layer of ground, spreading a pure white light all around as the charging beast aimed [Breaking Charge] under its foot, .

“Haa—” Sima Xian shouted loudly, whirling the large magical staff in his hand, directly welcoming Gui Wu's lance.

As a loud metallic sound echoed, completely stunning Long Hao Chen's group, on the hillside; Gui Wu's lance was unexpectedly blocked by Sima Xian's attack, and the upper part of Gui Wu's body was immediately knocked away. Right after the colliding sound could be heard, it was evident: the magical staff of this bald priest was indeed made of metallic material.

One must know that Gui Wu was a Guardian Knight! In combination with this fact, his use of the charging power of the

Scarlet Shelled Earthworm created an attack that was obviously quite powerful. Still... this collision concluded with his loss.

At the same time that Sima Xian resisted Gui Wu's attack, the Scarlet Shelled Earthworm was immediately slapped to the side, a thick palm colliding with its sharp, shining claws.

Sima Xian was not the slightest bit disturbed, and while partially turning around, he swung the magical rod. With a Peng sound, the Scarlet Shelled Earthworm was hit. Gui Wu's Scarlet Shelled Earthworm unexpectedly stumbled from the attack, losing its balance.

Instantly, Sima Xian's body changed direction, the magical staff in his hand sweeping around, directly smashing the Scarlet Shelled Earthworm on its side.

Gui Wu instantly corrected his posture and hurriedly used the lance in his hand to parry.

Peng—

The next scene astounded everyone! Gui Wu's lance was smashed back towards the Scarlet Shelled Earthworm's face: with a painful cry, the Scarlet Shelled Earthworm was pushed two meters back, almost falling to the ground.

A priest, facing the forte of the Scarlet Shelled Earthworm, its full force charge, accompanied in addition by a Guardian Knight's support, was actually winning in this situation... No matter who watched this scene, he would be completely astounded.

However, Sima Xian's adaptability wasn't lacking at all. Gui Wu's two warriors immediately rushed forward, simultaneously arriving before him. At the same time two enormous fireballs appeared.

The fireballs formed unexpectedly, directly blocking Sima Xian's way out. The two warriors, one on the left and one on the right, were both armed with huge swords in each hand, and

simultaneously initiated jumping attacks on him.

But then, there was an astonishing scene. As he was being attacked from both sides, Sima Xian's decision betrayed all expectations. He took two steps back, and atop his magical staff, a white glow appeared, turning it into a very large hammer which he instantly smashed behind him.

Taking two steps back enabled him to evade the attack of the two warriors, but unfortunately thrust him into the path of the two fireballs.

Ping–

An imposing blood-curdling sound was made as he ferociously wielded the milky white-colored hammer, smashing it onto a black figure nearby. This was precisely the assassin who had come from to attack him sneakily at his back.

[Sacred Hammer]! He used the most powerful offensive skill priests could use below the fifth step. Frankly speaking, a priests' offensive skills were extremely limited; they had only three options below the fifth step, [Sacred Light], [Sacred Hammer], and the white halo, [Sacred Knock], which Sima Xian used previously.

The assassin was sent flying by [Sacred Hammer] at the same time as Sima Xian was hit by a fierce fireball passing through his [Sacred Light], and knocking him six or seven steps back while scorching his priest's gown.

“Arg–” Sima Xian roared. His two arms shook, as his body was revealed, revealing an extremely heroic appearance. Instantly, he raised his magnificent body, and with a Puff sound, his priest robe immediately shattered, revealing his bronze-like muscles.

His muscles towered like mountains; they had the thickness of a python and the shape of a dragon. A reddish glint could be seen; they were the burn marks on his body that had come from the previous attack.

From the hillside, Chen Chen, who usually didn't speak much, exclaimed, "[Madness], a priest that can use [Madness]!"

[Madness] was a skill that was not even necessarily possessed by berserkers. It required a very robust body, and was a secret skill of the Warrior Temple that couldn't be learnt normally, only rewarded for great merit. Even Chen Chen who was a berserker couldn't use it. And yet, this bald priest before his eyes apparently could.

With the two sounds Bang, Bang, the two warriors who had been abruptly repelled by Sima Xian's magical staff began to rush, but Gui Wu was already charging, his Guardian Knight's [Faith Halo] skill spreading around himself. The lance in his hand emitted a golden glint, as it turned into dozens of spears aimed at Sima Xian.

In [Madness] mode, Sima Xian's body was even sturdier, and his magical staff 'whipped' up and down before directly attacking the Scarlet Shelled Earthworm without even taking half a step back. A solid attack with a solid defense.

At this moment, Gui Wu's face had already become quite ugly. He knew that Sima Xian was quite a tough opponent, but he didn't expect him to have such a level. Even if he grouped with the two warriors, he could only barely be a match for Sima Xian.

"Attack persistently, his [Madness] won't last for too long." Gui Wu shouted, as the golden light covering his body intensified, while the Scarlet Shelled Earthworm helped block a good portion of Sima Xian's attack.

At this very moment, behind Gui Wu, a three meter long enormous red light appeared in the air, emitting fiery-red-colored clouds all around.

The two people behind Gui Wu, who looked like mages, lifted up their magical staves, and produced an enormous red-colored radiance.

Joint magic, [Glorious Scattering Fire Dance]. A powerful offensive spell of the fifth step.

These two mages were like brothers; subtly relying on joint magic, they used a spell with an incredible offensive power.

The bald priest Sima Xian's complexion changed completely. He was extremely valiant, but in the end, he was no more than a single man, with a fourth step cultivation level. Facing Gui Wu's group composed of youths that were also at the fourth step in their vocations, 5 versus 1, even this valiant priest wanted to surrender in such a situation.

Suddenly, as the [Glorious Scattering Fire Dance] rose in the sky, locking onto Sima Xian, two specks of light filled the sky, forcing themselves into the middle of the battlefield.

In a flash, a reddish speck of light arrived at Sima Xian's body, and instantly, Sima Xian's whole body was covered by a layer of reddish gold inscriptions, increasing his strength, attack power, and defense. Still in [Madness] mode, he lifted up his magical staff, and violently shook the two warriors.

The second speck of light, that was white-colored, was flying in the direction of the mages when a strange scene took place: the [Glorious Scattering Fire Dance] that was originally locked onto Sima Xian suddenly changed direction and aimed instead at his side.

“Hong—” With a flash of red light, there was nothing left but scorched earth in a ten meter radius. Astoundingly, a youth sparkling with a gold-colored radiance remained, standing proudly at the center of the zone hit by the [Glorious Scattering Fire Dance]. He didn't even seem the slightest bit affected by it.

Chapter 76: Violent Priest (IV)

The youth with a shield in his left hand and a sword in his right hand was no other than Long Hao Chen. With the Light Sword in his hand oriented towards Sima Xian, he had used a [Bright Vengeance] with [Divine Obstruction], turning it into a healing light aimed at his body. This warm energy soothed Sima Xian, calming the pain coming from [Madness] while raising his spirit.

“Stop.” Riding the Scarlet Shelled Earthworm, Gui Wu fiercely lifted his lance, as his Scarlet Shelled Earthworm took a few steps back together with his two fellow warriors, stopping their attack.

“It’s you.” Gui Wu stared at Long Hao Chen with gloomy eyes.

Long Hao Chen indifferently answered: “It’s me. So you still remember this bet between Teacher Ye Hua and your esteemed father, right?”

Gui Wu’s expression changed faintly, he had personally seen how Long Hao Chen had actually managed to repel the offensive spell of the fifth step, [Glorious Scattering Fire Dance]. His original self-confidence had been weakened by a wide margin, “Naturally, I remember. We will meet during the selection. We’ll be leaving.” Seeing Long Hao Chen’s companions group with the violent priest Sima Xian, they could only calmly leave.

The two Warriors and the Assassin, who had sustained a good amount of injuries, gloomily left, advancing together with Gui Wu towards Holy City. Long Hao Chen didn’t stop Gui Wu. There was no use attacking him now: he would still have to fight him during the upcoming competition.

Half a year before, Gui Wu was an eighth ranked Knight. By this point, he was already a first ranked Grand Knight. Further adding the fact that he possessed his Scarlet Shelled Earthworm, Long Hao Chen was not necessarily a match for him.

“What an act, peuh–” Looking at Gui Wu’s group that was leaving, Sima Xian spit out these words, full of disdain.

Long Hao Chen turned towards him and said, “Hi! Nice to meet you, I am Long Hao Chen.”

Sima Xian stroked his bald head, and with a light laugh, he said in return, “Thanks younger brother, I am Sima Xian. Are you coming to Holy City to participate to the selection as well?”

Long Hao Chen nodded and answered, “Yes, we come from Hao Yue City in the south. What happened just now? Could it be that all of you come from Xiu City?”

Sima Xian’s face became depressed, “Don’t bring it up, these guys don’t have anything good. Especially that Gui Wu, he’s full of evil tricks. At that time, I refused to complete my task together with them, so they thought about preventing me from participating in this selection, saying that I would humiliate Xiu City and so on. How can it be that just because the great I cannot heal, I would make Xiu City lose face? From my point of view, it just looks like they are worried that I might bring back good results from this selection, and because of that, this Gui Wu’s father, the consulate of Xiu City, wouldn’t be able to win against my teacher. This is the right explanation. ”

A priest that cannot heal! Long Hao Chen’s heart twitched. This guy was really a strange one!

Sima Xian was quite straightforward, as he said, “Younger brother Long, you have helped me today. I will keep this favor I owe you in mind, and in the future, I will return it for sure. I am leaving first, I have to hurry up to meet my teacher in Xiu City, so as to tell him how they tried to prevent me from competing. I am leaving, good bye!” As he finished, this bald violent priest left towards Xiu City, taking large steps and carrying his magical staff.

Li Xin arrived at Long Hao Chen’s side, and couldn’t help but fall in laughter, “Puhu, this baldie is quite interesting. It is the first

time I meet a priest that cannot heal.”

Long Hao Chen laughed as well, “Right, what a strange person! We should go as well. ”

Holy City, in the Temple Alliance’s headquarters.

The city had been progressively constructed after humanity entered the dark age; it was basically the Temple Alliance’s center of command. The Temple Alliance was not exactly like a nation, this was place with the highest authority in its territory, while the power was being wielded by the Six Great Temples. Each of these temples had a powerhouse of the ninth step keeping watch over its headquarters, supervising all operations related to the demon race and the internal affairs of the Temple Alliance.

Holy City was not an ordinary city with a shape of square, it was shaped like a hexagon, symbolizing the Six Great Temples. And this Holy City was the most bustling city of the Alliance, where no branch halls were set; only the Alliance held the power.

In Holy City, there were three famous buildings: the Alliance’s Office Palace, the Alliance’s Head Auction House, and the Alliance’s Great Stadium.

These three places were located in the center of Holy City, standing like three competing rivals. Among them, the Alliance’s Great Stadium was the place used for the Demon Hunt Selection, as well as the place where Demon Hunt Squads took their missions. It was so important that its influence was equivalent to that of the Six Great Temples. It could be said that all of the Six Great Temples’ powerhouses had, together, the same influence as the Demon Hunt Squads.

Among the three extremely famous buildings, the Alliance’s Examination Stadium was also the building that covered the widest area in the city. It was a circular building with a diameter of 300 meters that covered the six areas of the city. Furthermore, it included the Demon Hunt Exclusive Missions Tower, the Demon

Hunt Transactions Center, and the Temples' Treasure Vault.

When Long Hao Chen's group arrived at the door of Holy City, the supervisor Feng Yangmu appeared in front of them once more, and made them enter Holy City, before directly heading to the Alliance's Great Stadium to report their arrival.

Arriving at the place where the Six Temples were in charge of receiving visitors, the five people in Long Hao Chen's group had to split up. They had to head to their respective temples to participate the event.

"Big Sister Lin, eldest brother Chen, second brother Chen, do your best. We have to strive in order to meet in the finals of the competition." Long Hao Chen said with a smiling face.

Chen Si lightly sighed, "Let's try our utmost!" Looking at his younger brother's face, he felt clearly unconfident. The Warrior Temple's competition was the most intense, and as juniors of the fourth step, at the second rank in terms of cultivation level, it would be extremely hard for them to enter the top ten.

Lin Jia Lu humbly smiled, and spoke back, "Hao Chen, both Li Xin and I will try our best as well."

The five people felt reluctant to part, as they went to each of their respective temples to report their arrival.

When Long Hao Chen and Li Xin arrived in the Knight Temple to make their report, they could immediately see Ye Hua who was standing there.

Seeing Long Hao Chen and Li Xin, Ye Hua didn't show a pleased expression; he had faith in his personal disciple, and considering that Li Xin possessed her Rose Unicorn and had a high cultivation level, it would be abnormal for them not to be able to pass the test.

"Teacher." Looking at Ye Hua, Long Hao Chen immediately became excited as he went up to his side.

Ye Hua replied, "Go, you have to register first, we'll talk after

that. You will have a day of rest, and the day after tomorrow, in early morning, the preliminary contest will start.” His face looked a little grim.

Registration was very simple. You would hand in your official tile and receive another number plate marking you as a participant of the Knight’s Temple, then the registration would conclude. For the participants that did not succeed in the trial missions before, the official tile would be taken away by the supervisors. As such, one would only need to investigate the authenticity of the official tile to proceed.

After the report, Ye Hua took Long Hao Chen and Li Xin to the Knight Temple to make the arrangements in a hotel near to the Alliance’s Great Stadium to check them in, before directly taking them to their rooms.

“This competition will be pretty intense, please prepare yourselves mentally.” Ye Hua said, with a gloomy face.

Li Xin and Long Hao Chen gave a glance to each other, internally shivering at the same time.

Ye Hua coldly said, “I did my research. At least a hundred people will participate in this competition’s preliminary contest, and the concrete number will depend on the results of tomorrow’s last report. Among those who have already been reported, three Earth Knights have also appeared.”

“What?” Li Xin cried out in surprise; Earth Knight, Earth Knight of the fifth step? There wasn’t a huge discrepancy between Ye Hua and them. In addition, upon entering the fifth step, the spiritual energy would start to liquefy, improving the power of each of their abilities, without exception, by a huge margin. There was a single word of difference between the title of an Earth Knight and a Grand Knight, but they were as different as earth and sky.

In contrast to Li Xin who was completely shocked, Long Hao Chen was a lot more steady, and although he barely managed to

control his emotions, the look in his eyes was as unyielding as in the past.

Chapter 77: Battle start (1)

“Calm down.” Ye Hua stared at Li Xin, “All the talents from the entire Temple Alliance will gather here to participate in the Demon Hunt Selection. Why are you surprised that there are a few Earth Knights appearing here and there? There may be at least one person for each Earth Knight rank. Do not forget, the Knight Temple is the strongest out of the Six Grand Temples. Furthermore, it’s not only our Knight Temple that sent knights at the fifth step, the five other temples also sent their own fifth step powerhouses. In the previous Demon Hunt Selection, the final rounds of the top tens were full of contestants with fifth step vocations. You should not be arrogant about being strong here even if you were strong within Hao Yue City. With your current status, your task is to finish in the top 10 of the qualification, before trying your best during the final stage, aiming to join a Demon Hunt Squad.”

Even though a lot of formidable youths were participating in the current Demon Hunt Squad’s Tournament, Ye Hua wasn’t anxious. Long Hao Chen is only fourteen years old, he can participate in two more Demon Hunt Selections. This time, our main goal is to let him experience it once. As for his ranking, we will see that in the next tournament. In five more years, Long Hao Chen should be able to reach the step of Earth Knight, right? Hmpf, he will probably be at least a peaked Earth Knight.

Of course, Ye Hua would not say those words to Long Hao Chen now, as he did not wish to make his apprentice lose his fighting spirit.

“Apparently, the fights in the preliminary round are even more brutal than those in the final rounds. It will be a knockout tournament. However, competitors at the fifth step or above will not have to fight for the first two rounds. Furthermore, the Temple will arrange for them to have the opportunity to be in top

10. This is to ensure that our Knight Temple will have better rankings in the final round. So, you two will have to prepare yourselves, do not make any mistakes. Otherwise, it is very likely that you will be eliminated in the first round.”

“Yes.” Long Hao Chen and Li Xin respectfully replied.

Ye Hua said: “Good, now you should return to your rooms to rest. Before the tournament starts, do not go out; if you can increase your spiritual power by even a little bit, you will have better odds of winning against your opponents.”

Long Hao Chen returned to his room; when he was about to start his practice, Ye Hua arrived.

“Teacher.” Long Hao Chen respectfully saluted Ye Hua.

Ye Hua waved, meaning to tell him to sit down: “Tell me what you have been going through since the trials started.”

Naturally, Long Hao Chen did not hide anything. He reported everything in detail., including the fact that their team had successfully hunted down members of the Luke Clan, the Dyke Clan, and finally a Dark-Green Dual-Bladed Demon. He also did not hide either the fact he ran into Lin Xin and Sima Xian the violent priest, after these events.

When he heard Long Hao Chen say that they had successfully killed a Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon, Ye Hua could not help but crack a smile. But this smile quickly turned into anger.

“You fool, why did you agree to make this promise? You’ve been tricked!”

Long Hao Chen was surprised for a moment, then said: “Teacher, Lin Xin looked quite sincere, and in addition, he gave me some pretty good pills!”

Ye Hua patted on his own forehead, sighed loudly and said: “You little kid, you are still too naive. You thought that your chance of entering the top three was not high, so this promise was no big

deal, didn't you?"

Long Hao Chen did not say anything but at that time he had indeed that thought.

"You, ah, you, let me tell you what happened. He had definitely used the [Identification Method], so he could see through your age and spiritual level. You're only fourteen, so even if you don't succeed this time, will it still be that difficult for you to get in the top three next time? I'm pretty sure that this kid is not be at most twenty years old, so he will be able to participate in the next tournament. Moreover, his magic skills should not be that simple."

Long Hao Chen bowed his head: "I am sorry, Teacher. I was wrong."

Ye Hua sighed heavily: "Well, you can't take back your promise, since you already gave it. A real man keeps his promises after all. Let me take a look at the medicine he gave you."

Long Hao Chen quickly took out the three types of special pills and the energy pills from 'forget-me-not', and handed them to Ye Hua.

"Hmph, that little bastard still had some conscience. All of them are fourth tier pills. If you are to sell these bottles, ten thousand gold coins may not even be enough to buy all of them. If he was really the one who cooked these medicines, even if he is a bit lacking at magic, he should still be qualified to become your teammate. Keep these well, you'll need to try your best during these days. I'll give you a simple goal: to enter the final round."

There was no audience during the Demon Hunt Selections because in the future, members of the Demon Hunt Squads had to fight against the demon race. Their informations had to be kept confidential. Thus, to ordinary people, even though they were aware that the event happened, they had no knowledge of its process or result.

Long Hao Chen's plate number was 97, the same as his innate spiritual power, Li Xin's plate number was 98.

The day of the competition arrived. Early in the morning, Ye Hua took the two to the Alliance's Great Stadium.

The whole Great Stadium was built while taking the Six Temples into account. Therefore, inside the stadium, there were six smaller trial grounds belonging to each of the Six Temples. Long Hao Chen and Li Xin, using their number plates, directly reported to their arrival to the Knight Stadium. Ye Hua, as their teacher, presented an introduction letter written by Hao Yue City's consulate, allowing him to accompany them. Of course, there could only be a single representative teacher for each vocations of a city.

Since they had completed the bone age test the day before, they only needed to check in using their number plates starting from today.

"Brother Ye Hua, we meet again." Gui Ying and Gui Wu, father and son, happened to arrive as Long Hao Chen was checking in.

Ye Hua lightly said, with cold eyes, "You better pray that your son does not run into Long Hao Chen." Finishing the sentence, he then went inside with Long Hao Chen and Li Xin.

Gui Ying coldly said: "The one who should be worried is you."

Ye Hua came to a halt, and without looking back, he said: "Also, go wash your face so as not to dirty my hands when the moment comes."

"You....." Gui Ying's face contorted with anger, almost starting to attack. But Ye Hua had already gone in alongside Long Hao Chen and Li Xin.

The Alliance's Great Stadium was not in the open, each of the 66 square meters long sub-stadiums were under a huge dome, measured at 300 meters in diameter, and covering the whole stadium. If one was to look at the stadium from above, he could see

that on its ground, there were six huge semi-circular projections.

Entering the Knight's Arena, there was blast coming from the fluctuations of powerful elemental magic. Here, the elemental magic almost seemed to materialize. Although it didn't have offensive purposes, it still produced some kind of invisible pressure.

Above the dome, huge magic symbols could be vaguely seen. There were different complex magic spells everywhere; they clearly had their own unique functions.

In the middle of the stadium stood an enormous plaza with a diameter of 200 meters. The ground was covered by a layer of sandy soil. Reportedly, a powerful magic was cast below the ground, so that no matter how badly this sandy soil was destroyed, it could be restored in a short time.

There were audience stands around the plaza; in the middle of those, a location stood out prominently: it was the stadium's podium.

“What strong fluctuations of elemental magic!” Li Xin exclaimed.

Chapter 78: Battle start (2)

Ye Hua said: “This Great Stadium is full of magic formations, and they are powerful enough to withstand the attacks of people at the ninth step of their vocation. How can the elemental fluctuations not be strong?”

Under the guidance of the stadium’s workers, they came to the contestants’ seating area. At this time, a lot of people had already come, and the participants were all fully dressed in martial attire, every one of them exuding a valiant air.

Not long after, the dome of the stadium started to light up, and a circle of golden light began to swell and spread out. Because there were no spectators, the area around the stadium was full of empty space. Ten-some people had already arrived on the arena’s podium, but because the podium was much too high, events up there couldn’t be followed from below.

A forceful voice sounded from the podium, “Report concluded. This Demon Hunt Selection’s preliminary rounds begin now. We hope that participants of each city will put forth their best effort. The competition’s regulations prohibit deliberate disabling of an opponent. If the opposing party receives a mortal wound, then the other party is automatically disqualified, and the responsibility of subsequent investigation will fall on the respective cities to whom the participants belong to.”

“All the preliminary matches are knockout competitions. Today we will proceed with the first round of preliminary matches. There is a reported number of 138 contestants, including four participants of the fifth step. Those four will not participate in the first two rounds. The drawing will now begin, all contestants get ready.”

It wasn’t known how things in the stadium were manipulated. In the air at the center of the dome, a huge golden ball of light slowly

appeared. Immediately, the ball of light began to flash as digits flickered.

Li Xin muttered: “For such a famous event as the Demon Hunt Selection, it’s actually this simple! There’s not even an opening ceremony.”

Ye Hua indifferently replied: “This is an elite selection competition, not a show. What would it do with a ceremony? There are one hundred thirty-something participants, and on the first day, there are already more than sixty matches. If you waste time, when would the competition end?”

Right as they were speaking, that golden ball of light that was suspended in midair and flashing with digits all of sudden stopped. Two large numbers appeared and were projected into the air.

“First battle, #29 versus #97. Both parties enter the arena. Those that do not enter the arena within a period of ten breaths will be disqualified.”

#97? Long Hao Chen abruptly started, Isn’t that me?

Ye Hua and Li Xin also received a big scare. Who would have thought that Long Hao Chen would actually be drawn for the first match.

The rest of the participants in the surroundings simultaneously turned their gazes towards the excessively handsome youngster, Long Hao Chen.

Ye Hua had already recovered from shock and hastily said: “Face the opponent calmly, go steadily and strike firmly.”

“En.” Long Hao Chen answered and didn’t dare to linger, already striding forward with big steps. Following the stairs, he entered the arena.

Long Hao Chen’s opponent was a youth, seemingly around twenty years old, fully clothed in silver armor. Just like Long Hao Chen, he was a Guardian knight: his left hand carried a shield,

while his right held a sword.

Following the two contestants into the arena was a middle aged man dressed in white clothes that were easy to move around in. He was obviously this match's referee.

Without any superfluous words, once the two contestants were in the center of the arena and roughly fifty meters away from each other, the referee announced in a loud voice: "Match begin. You are prohibited from disabling the opponent. Once one side concedes or loses their ability to battle, they have lost."

Following the referee's declaration, a layer of golden light surged upwards from the arena, barring it from the spectators.

Right as Long Hao Chen was about to begin his very first match in the Demon Hunt Selection, something was occurring in another dimension.

Pitch black. This was a pitch black world. Wild gales blew ferociously, and the moon in the sky gleamed with an eerie luster. There was rushing lava and highly toxic gas as far as the eye could see.

In a deep and distant cave, Hao Yue quietly crept around. Little Light and Little Flame's eyes flickered with a dazzling sheen. Before them, the stone orb, which had been bought for ten thousand gold coins, had already split and cracked. Threads of bright, emerald light were currently spreading out with no sign of stopping.

Little Light and Little Flame continually took deep breaths, ingesting these emerald strands of light into their stomach. The three gleaming purple veins on their back flashed unceasingly, and their body exuded a fierce, bloody air. The sharp claws of their four limbs dug fiercely into the ground.

Looking through the cracks in the stone orb, one could see that there seemed to be an emerald sphere inside. The surface of the

sphere was actually all scaly. Following the shimmering of emerald light, one could faintly see that there seemed to be a lizard-like shape, and it was this emerald sphere that radiated an incorporeal majesty. This was a dragon's might.

If Lin Xin could see the emerald sphere inside this stone orb, he'd likely regret it until his innards turned green. This was, quite impressively, a dragon pill! This dragon pill was a seventh tier medicine

The dragon population was extremely small, but every genuine, giant dragon was at least a powerhouse of the eighth step or higher. The most powerful would be a Dragon King, who was actually at the tenth step, which was equivalent to a human expert at the ninth step.

The greatest issue of the dragon clan was the matter of giving birth. Only once in a great while, after a thousand something years, would there be a chance to breed a new generation, and this was the cause of the rarity of dragon pills. The reason was because dragon pills were dragon eggs that couldn't hatch. Only after incubating for a millennium and absorbing the spiritual energy of the heavens and the earth would one be formed.

Seeing how difficult it was for the dragon clan to bear succeeding generations, one could imagine how much the dragons treasured their eggs. Therefore, acquiring a dragon egg that had become a dragon pill was really too hard. On rare occasions, a dragon pill might even surpass eighth tier medicine.

Dragon pills were of use to both the human race and magical beasts. If a human ingested it, then they would possess the blood of dragons, and their inner and external spiritual energy would shoot up by at least three hundred units. Furthermore, their limit of external spiritual energy would be promoted to five thousand units. Using a dragon pill basically guaranteed that one would have the capacity to reach the seventh step.

If a magical beast wanted to use a dragon pill, the prerequisites were much higher. First and foremost, it had to be of dragon lineage in order to digest the pill. Next, their level had to be lower than the sixth rank. This way, taking it would enable them to evolve, and in terms of efficacy, it would increase its level by a step.

Hao Yue was taking and absorbing the spiritual aura contained in a Dragon Pill, and looking at him, it looked as if he didn't fear any negative effect the Dragon Pill could have.

“Houu–” Little Light let out a low pitched howl, and looking at him, Little Fire calmly nodded.

A faint purple light was emitted from the summit of their heads, slowly giving birth to a violet-colored horn, and immediately, as Hao Yue charged with the horn, a pa sound could be heard as the Dragon Pill was being embedded in the hard part of his horn.

His pair of heads, below the hard part under their purple-colored horn, seemed as frail as tofu, as instantly, dragon scales came out from the location of the dark-green-colored dragon pill.

At this moment, Little Light and Little Fire's eyes changed completely from their gold and red color, taking a deep purple color. Lifting up his heads, they looked far ahead, longing for his other world, the world of his companion.

Big Bro, wait for our return!

Little Light ferociously lowered his head, opening wide his mouth, and swallowing the dark-green Dragon Pill at once. Instantly, an intense green color surged out from his body, as the bulge in the neck in the side of Little Light violently squirmed, an intense and desolate power surging out from its body...

Chapter 79: Cai'er, the blind girl (I)

In the first round of the Demon Hunt Selection, Long Hao Chen, as the competitor #97, faced a young knight bearing the number #29. With a word of the referee, this match officially started.

As soon as the #29 knight that wore a silver armor heard the referee's start signal, he stood at the same place without the slightest hesitation, his hand emitting a golden light as he summoned his mount.

To participate in the Demon Hunt Competition, the requirement was to be a youth below 25 years old who reached the third step of his vocation. For that reason, all participating knights had the experience of having visited the Knights' Sacred Mountain.

But Long Hao Chen's action completely exceeded the expectations of all spectators. He stood still, as if he were a nail, but didn't summon his mount. With his left hand's shield in front of his chest and his right hand's heavy sword pointing at the ground, he looked at his surroundings, as a fog of golden light was created around him; it was a fantastic sight from outside to see this elegant fog rise up in the sky.

Guardian Knight and Retribution Knight shared skill, [Power Storing].

Seeing him use this skill, the people in the crowd couldn't help but cry out in surprise. It was because [Power Storing] didn't belong to the fourth step's category, and could normally be only learned by fifth step Earth Knights or Airborne Knights.

Accompanying the fog surrounding his body, the Radiant Shield in Long Hao Chen's hand brightened, together with his Light Sword, creating strong fluctuations of spiritual energy in the air. Under this golden fog, he looked the same as a brick of gold.

From the competitors' resting area, Ye Hua looked completely

amazed; after all, he never taught this skill to Long Hao Chen. Frankly speaking, even him, who was at the level of an Earth Knight, couldn't use this skill.

[Power Storing] wasn't an average ability that any knight could learn to use; it was one of the secrets of the Knight Temple.

Simultaneously, Long Hao Chen's opponent's mount was summoned. It was an entirely white steed with four snow-white-colored legs, a Spiritual Snow Horse, magical beast of the fourth step.

In itself, a Spiritual Snow Horse's greatest feature was its speed; it could run at a flying speed and in addition, possessed two innate skills of the ice attribute. Among magical beasts of the fourth step, it was one of quite a high level.

Looked at the fog surrounding Long Hao Chen, competitor #29 was startled, What is this skill? He didn't know the skill Long Hao Chen was using at all.

Among the secrets of the Knight Temple, [Power Storing] was classified as one with relatively little interest, and as a result, among knights who accumulated some accomplishments, few chose to learn this skill.

Facing this skill he didn't know the slightest bit, competitor #29 became cautious. Rising like a bullet, the Spiritual Snow Horse charged at Long Hao Chen, but it didn't charge straight at him. It rushed at flying speed, aiming for the flank.

Long Hao Chen seemed as if he didn't pay the slightest bit of attention to it, standing at the same place as before; without even turning his body around, he kept accumulating golden light in his body, as before.

After the time of a few breaths, competitor #29 had already arrived by Long Hao Chen's side, and seeing that his opponent didn't move the slightest bit, he felt worried from the bottom of

his heart. At last, he chose to charge. A white fog was scattered under the Spiritual Snow Horse's feet, as it suddenly accelerated, just like white ray of light, directly charging at Long Hao Chen from the side.

Competitor #29 raised the heavy sword in his hand, and launched [Faith Halo] and [Guardian Favor] to strengthen his own body, and simultaneously, the heavy sword in his hand brightened. [Bright Radiance], a skill that concentrated spiritual energy in the tip of a sword, taking it in and out. It was the proof of a cultivation level at the fourth step.

A short moment later, the distance separating him from Long Hao Chen was still more than 10 meters. The Spiritual Snow Horse suddenly deviated from its path, and as the distance to Long Hao Chen reached five meters, it changed directions once again. At this moment, the heavy sword in his hand was lifted high up in the sky. Chopping out, an edge made of light was created. It was precisely the skill [Light Thrust], aiming straight for Long Hao Chen from the side.

This knight #29 was really cautious since he didn't know what kind of ability Long Hao Chen was using; he initiated a probing attack

In addition, directly after he launched this attack with restraint, the Spiritual Snow Horse's feet let out a mist, as it rushed towards Long Hao Chen. This was an innate skill possessed by Spiritual Snow Horses, [Ice Mist]. It reduced the speed of the opponent and impacted his offensive capabilities. Used against someone with a cultivation level much inferior, it could go as far as to freeze him.

At this very moment, the still calm and motionless Long Hao Chen finally started moving. With a little turning motion, he placed his shield.

With a Dang sound, the [Light Thrust] ferociously hit Long Hao Chen's shield, while a glitter of golden light scattered over Long

Hao Chen's entire body.

[Divine Obstruction].

Almost at the next second, Long Hao Chen also created a golden edge made of light, launching it. It was a [Light Thrust] as well.

Similar skills, when used by different people, would have different effects.

The [Light Thrust] issued out by knight #29 was of an insipid golden color, it was the regular color for ordinary [Light Thrust]. However, the Long Hao Chen's cut was extremely brilliant. This brilliant-gold-colored edge made of light was in addition at least twice as large.

The ice fog in front of him seemed as if it had been split open by Long Hao Chen's attack; the brilliant golden light edge had a perfect angle, aiming straight at the Spiritual Ice Horse.

Competitor #29 turned pale with fright, and lowered his body, as a huge gold-colored edge made of light was launched at him. To knights, companion mounts were like a second life. Seeing Long Hao Chen's [Light Thrust] that was bigger than any other he had seen before, how could he not feel the danger?

Ping—

The shield in the hands of competitor #29 was inclined to the side of the Spiritual Snow Horse, the horse letting out sad calls, taking an angle completely different than before while leaning in the right side.

#29 was about to make an all-out effort. He was really worthy of belonging to the elite of those who participated the Demon Hunt Selection: at the crucial moment, he was able to launch a [Holy Filter Shield].

But this blow from Long Hao Chen was really too powerful, as it could already not be categorized as a [Light Thrust] anymore, and [Holy Light Filter Shield] was instantly broken through, a crack

appearing on the shield of competitor #29. He also spat out some blood in response.

A charge.

Long Hao Chen seemed as pure as a maiden as he moved in maximal speed, going all out in his charge, just like a golden bolt of lightning charging into his opponent.

The Spiritual Snow Horse was indeed an amazing spiritual horse: in this circumstance, it still forced its body to stay steady, only stumbling a few steps forward. Its body was shaking intensely, but it didn't collapse until the end.

Unfortunately, at this moment, Long Hao Chen arrived.

[Shield Charge].

Competitor #29 struck with his heavy sword, trying to hold Long Hao Chen back, but he was already wounded because of the previous attack, and with his left hand holding his shield completely numb, he was completely outstripped by this attack power.

Clang, the heavy sword was parried by the Radiant Shield raised up, and instantly, the Radiant Shield ruthlessly struck the Spiritual Snow Horse from the side.

Bang

The Spiritual Snow Horse of competitor #29 loudly fell to the ground because of the power of this blow, and was even knocked several meters back.

Putting to use the power from the charge, Long Hao Chen halted suddenly, and changed his direction, his twinkling figure arriving in a split second before his opponent. His heavy sword was directed forward, before the chest of his opponent.

Competitor #29 seemed completely dull. As the Spiritual Snow Horse fell to the ground because of the previous bump, its master

was further injured as well. More importantly, he already didn't try to resist the slightest bit.

Chapter 80: Cai'er, the blind girl (II)

The reason why competitor #29 was so shocked was that he never thought that he would lose the battle so quickly. Furthermore, the opponent seemed to be a lot younger than him. It was even harder to accept that before his opponent even summoned his mount, the match had ended.

“First match, #97’s victory. #29, out.” The referee suddenly appeared in front of the two, announcing in a low voice.

Long Hao Chen withdrew his sword, stood there and performed a Knight salute to competitor #29 and the referee, and headed back to the lounge.

From the beginning to the end, this match only lasted for a total of less than a minute. Before many of the spectators watching the battle could even see what happened, the match had already ended. The young and handsome Long Hao Chen won.

When Long Hao Chen got back to the lounge, the attitudes of the other knights towards him had changed significantly.

There were more than a dozen people sitting at the podium. An old man sitting in the center nodded: “This kid is pretty good. I just wonder what his mount is.”

At his side, another old man said: “He seems to have a Heritage Ring on his hand. It seems that this time’s selections are worth watching after all. Those little guys at the fifth step of the vocation didn’t appear yet, but we already got to see [Storing Power] and [Divine Obstruction]. That’s quite interesting.”

The elder in the middle faintly smiled, and said: “The key point isn’t the skills one can use, but his ability to remain cool-headed. From the instant the competition began, this kid with the number 97 had already planned on how to deal with his opponent. This #27 didn’t even know the skill his opponent was using: otherwise,

there's no way he wouldn't have attacked from the beginning. The more the skill [Storing Power] lasts, the more the spiritual energy will be amplified, and the might of the skill as well. But it will only last for an attack, and the effects of [Storing Power] will only last for three seconds. After that, the spiritual energy stored up will go to waste."

The elder by his side showed a large smile, "That's right! This kid went so far as to complement [Bright Vengeance] with [Divine Obstruction]. And [Storing Power] combined with [Light Thorn] is his second mighty move. This blow had already the firepower of an Earth Knight of the fourth or the fifth rank. Looking at him, he's definitely under 20 years old. It looks like the results of our Knight Temple's selections that will take place five years later are already set in stone. Investigate and find out from which town this kid comes."

"Yes." Seated in his back was a man, a middle-aged man respectfully responded before quietly leaving.

"Hao Chen, you're awesome!" Li Xin saw Long Hao Chen single handedly win this match and she was even more happy for him than he was himself. She was so exuberant that she made Long Hao Chen blush.

Ye Hua emotionlessly said, "You revealed your assets too early. Even if you didn't use [Divine Obstruction], this competitor number 29 would probably not have been your match, his cultivation level didn't even reach the fourth step of Grand Knight."

Long Hao Chen bitterly smiled, "Teacher, I forgot to tell you that Hao Yue had some matters, he had to go back to his world first."

"Eh?" Ye Hua's heart skipped a bit, "Hao Yue is not here? In such a crucial moment, what the hell is he doing? Isn't he usually always sticking to you?"

Long Hao Chen replied: "It was for this stone orb I told you about

earlier, it seems that he regarded the thing inside as important, and that's why he brought it back to his space."

Ye Hua furrowed his brows, "No wonder you made this choice; you puzzled your opponent, not to letting him know what your real cultivation level is, and making him be cautious about the fact you 'can summon your mount at any moment'. This is also a good thing, as not having your mount will train your personal abilities even better. However, I'm afraid that the later stages of the competition will prove to be difficult. And the preliminaries are supposedly even more ruthless than the main contest, considering that during each round, you will be facing an even fiercer opponent than in the previous one. It is even possible that you face an opponent at the fifth step, so you should prepare yourself mentally."

Long Hao Chen unyieldingly nodded, "Teacher, I will definitely enter the top ten!"

Ye Hua said: "Okay, go back and cultivate."

Long Hao Chen originally wanted to watch Li Xin's match before leaving, so he immediately seemed in a daze upon hearing these words.

Ye Hua said indifferently: "There's no need to keep watching. Combat experience has to be gained personally. If it's only watching, there's no need. In addition, today is merely the first day. There's no need for you to worry about Xin'er, she has her Rose Unicorn. If she cannot even win her first match, that fatty Nalan should just resign."

During the time he was speaking, the second round had already begun. Just like Ye Hua said, because there were a lot of fights on the first day, they were all incredibly close to each other. A match would start right after another ended.

Long Hao Chen gave an apologetic glance to Li Xin before leaving her, about to return to the hotel.

Leaving the Great Stadium, Long Hao Chen took a deep breath. Although the last fight looked quite easy, in reality, he was quite nervous. This fight enabled him to pass the first round, and gave him some self-confidence at the same time.

Today was an extremely cloudy day; it seemed as if rain could fall anytime. Long Hao Chen looked at the sky before heading straight to the hotel.

The medicine Lin Xin gave him was excellent. He had already eaten four pills that increased his internal spiritual energy by ten units; the paper presenting the pill stated that he should take one of them everyday, during his cultivation practice, to give them the maximal effect.

But to Long Hao Chen, the pills didn't increase the internal spiritual energy by ten units at all; the effect was even greater! He didn't know the exact value, but when taking this pill after starting his cultivation, the effect of the cultivation practice on his internal spiritual energy was at least doubled.

And during these few days, further adding to the stimulation of his potential that occurred as he got rid of the Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon, Long Hao Chen's internal spiritual energy had already broken through the threshold of the 1750th level; he was sure that he was currently a ninth ranked Grand Knight.

The last rank of every step was actually the one for which the most spiritual energy was required before reaching the next step. To Grand Knights of the fourth step, only 150 spiritual energy levels were required to break through the ninth rank, but to break through the next step of Earth Knight from the ninth rank of Grand Knight, they needed a whole 250 spiritual energy levels of growth.

Ye Hua gave Long Hao Chen goals to reach, but he gave himself other goals to reach as well. His current goal was to try his best to enter the top ten of the competition, as well as the top ten of the

preliminary contest.

Only, Long Hao Chen felt unfortunate: if he had Hao Yue, he would be confident enough about his ability to reach the finals. But at the current time, he could only rely on himself.

As he advanced towards the hotel, Long Hao Chen was pondering over the tactics he would use during the rest of the competition. At this very moment, he heard a strange noise.

Du, du, du, du, du...

Unconsciously looking upwards, Long Hao Chen saw someone. It was more precisely a young girl.

The young girl had purple-colored hair, tied back behind her head, and her face was covered by a black cloth, hiding her appearance. Her eyes weren't covered, and were ash-grey-colored, not revealing the slightest emotion. This strange noise was in fact coming from her blue-colored bamboo cane that was hitting the ground.

This young girl was a little smaller than Long Hao Chen, and she was especially thinner than him. While using her bamboo cane and producing this sound, she took a step forward very cautiously. Looking at her, this action seemed to be very laborious.

“Little sister, where are you going? I'll help you.” Long Hao Chen took quick steps, coming by the side of this young girl as he asked her, feeling quite concerned about her. As he saw the glassy eyes of this young girl, Long Hao Chen's heart started to ache. If someone lost his sight, as it seemed to be the case for her, the entire world would be monochromic. What a sad thing! Looking at this young girl's appearance, Long Hao Chen felt full of compassion.

Chapter 81: Cai'er, the blind girl (III)

As Long Hao Chen spoke, his left hand was holding his sword, and his right hand was about to take the bamboo cane in this young girl's hand. The young girl was motionless, when suddenly, she felt a chill, coming from the bottom of her heart as Long Hao Chen was standing by her side, and she almost subconsciously let go of her bamboo cane.

"There's no need." The young girl's voice was somewhat cold, but it was not the same coldness as the one exuded by Ye Hua. Ye Hua was only cold on the outside, while being warm inside, but Long Hao Chen felt that this girl was almost as cold as death itself. It seemed as if she wasn't the slightest bit alive.

"Let me help you please, I will escort you home." Long Hao Chen tried to make his voice as gentle as possible.

"I told you there's no need." The young girl coldly said, continuing to walk forward.

Long Hao Chen stood in place, looking at the figure of this young girl that became gradually more and more distant. He suddenly felt depressed from the bottom of his heart, without knowing whether it was because he didn't give some help to this young girl, or for some other reason.

Slowly shaking his head, Long Hao Chen sighed from the bottom of his heart, as the 'forget me not' ring on his finger emitted a bluish glitter, storing his Radiant Shield and his Light Sword. He headed back to his hotel with large strides.

But at the moment he stored his weapon, the difficult girl in front of him suddenly stopped, and turned back.

"Hey." The young girl called out with a calm voice, the previous coldness that used to fill her voice seemed to have weakened.

Long Hao Chen took the same direction as her; he was about to

pass through her position, as he heard her call him out and instantly stopped his steps.

The young girl lifted up her right hand, pointing it at Long Hao Chen, “Can you escort me for a little while please?”

Long Hao Chen was dazed by her sudden change of behaviour, as he instantly replied: “Yeah.” As he spoke, he lifted up his own left hand, holding the young girl’s little white hand.

This young girl’s hand was quite soft; this softness was quite similar to that of tofu soaked in water and her five slender fingers seemed as if they were sculpted from jade. Grasping her palm, he felt a mild and warm sensation. Long Hao Chen had never felt such a cozy feeling in the past.

On the other side, when the young girl held Long Hao Chen’s hand, her soft and tender fingers lightly rubbed the ‘forget-me-not’ ring in his hand.

Long Hao Chen’s face was quite red; he had indeed already reached the age of the first awakening of love. As he was holding the young girl’s soft hand, his heartbeat unconsciously accelerated.

The young girl was wearing her veil, so he couldn’t see the current expression on her face, but at the instant she touched his ‘forget-me-not’ ring, she tightly clenched her other hand, bracing her delicate body all of a sudden.

Because of this peculiar change in Long Hao Chen’s heart, his perception had declined. Unexpectedly, he didn’t even notice the subtle changes in this young girl’s mood.

“Where do you live?” Long Hao Chen restrained with difficulty his heart’s emotions, as he asked the young girl.

The young girl replied: “250 meters forward, then 125 meters after turning on the right and finally 66 meters after turning on the left, and we’ll have arrived.”

Long Hao Chen’s heart skipped a beat. It wasn’t because he was

astonished by the fact this girl knew these distances so accurately, but because he felt really pitiful for her. To know these distances so precisely, how much effort did she have to put forth? Instantly, he felt as if the softest place in his heart had been stirred up.

Unconsciously, he tightened his grip on the girl's hand, slowly advancing forward.

The two of them quietly advanced; their speed was slow, but without knowing why, Long Hao Chen felt really comfortable, deep inside. This was the first time he walked hand in hand with a girl; despite the fact that it was to help her, he had a kind of desire to keep walking while holding this hand forever.

The young girl's attitude was quite cold, but she was calm, smoothly and steadily advancing, she simply blindly followed Long Hao Chen, as her purple-colored hair was being brushed by the wind, Long Hao Chen felt something akin to a gentle feeling from her.

"You, what's your name?" The young girl suddenly asked.

"Eh?" Long Hao Chen was surprised, and slowly shifted his sight on this young girl's face. Despite the fact that he knew that she was blind, he felt at this moment quite shy.

"My name is Long Hao Chen, and you?"

"I am Cai'er." The young girl answered quietly; no one else than Long Hao Chen could hear her quiet voice.

"What a beautiful name. Cai'er, do you live in Holy City?"

Cai'er lightly shook her head, replying: "I live in a town in the east side of the Alliance. It is not here. This time, I came to handle a few matters."

Long Hao Chen frowned slightly, remarking: "And the people from your family? How can they be at ease when you're out on your own?"

Cai'er calmly answered: "I can take care of myself."

Seeing her eyes that didn't contain the slightest emotion, Long Hao Chen felt that his heart was choking. He was completely speechless.

"What's up with you?" Cai'er didn't hear Long Hao Chen's voice for long, and turned to his direction, somewhat surprised.

Long Hao Chen calmly shook his head, "Nothing." He blurted out these words, practically without thinking. He wanted to be considerate when speaking to her, but in the end, he could not control himself. He had neither this kind of ability nor this kind of qualification, and in addition, it was too bold for him. And deep inside, the sympathetic feelings he had for this lady who had lost her sight, Cai'er, had evolved.

Cai'er halted her steps, and Long Hao Chen, who was trying to suppress his inner feelings, stopped as well.

"What's going on?" Long Hao Chen looked at her.

Cai'er said: "I arrived."

Long Hao Chen was startled; he discovered that as he was accompanying Cai'er, she had become the one who took the lead.

"I am so sorry, I..." Long Hao Chen embarrassedly said.

Cai'er calmly shook her head, her hand slowly separating from his, "Thank you."

Long Hao Chen raised his head to take a look, this was a hotel as well, and it was very close to the one he resided in.

"I'll take you inside." Long Hao Chen said.

Cai'er frantically shook her head, "No need, I can go by myself."

Long Hao Chen scratched his head, "Good bye. Be careful on the way." He was fully aware that Cai'er couldn't see, but he still waved his hand to her, before heading to the hotel, leaving her.

Cai'er didn't return directly to the hotel. She calmly stood there, at the place where Long Hao Chen left her, and her lips secretly drew out an arc from behind her veil.

"It is really him. This idiot! Right! After so many years, how could he recognize me? And at that time, I had lost my basic ability to speak, although now, it's my vision that is lost. Oh, Long Hao Chen, Long Hao Chen!" She had firmly kept this name in her mind before her hand was tightly grasped by Long Hao Chen. Making use of her blue-colored bamboo cane, she headed back to her hotel.

Long Hao Chen was back in his room, but the appearance of this young girl was deeply engraved in his mind. Even as he was seated crossed-legged, he didn't manage to enter the meditative state at all.

"It appears that my choice to turn into a Guardian Knight was really right: in this world, a lot of people need protection." Long Hao Chen sighed lightly before eating one of the pills Lin Xin gave him. Calming his mind, he slowly entered the meditative state.

Like that, the first day of the Demon Hunt Selection's preliminary contest started. And when Long Hao Chen headed back to his hotel, even more competitors competed vigorously in regards to these preliminaries.

After the first day of the competition, half of the people had already left, eliminated from the competition.

In the Mage Temple's stadium, Lin Xin was resting on a seat, looking at the ongoing competition. He wasn't the slightest bit nervous, and seated there, he observed the surrounding competitors.

The place he chose was in the first row. There were two people beside him, a male and a female.

"You two, would you have interest in some pills?" Lin Xin smiled and turned towards the two, asking this question.

These two young mages looked at him with doubtful looks, showing cautious expressions...

Chapter 82: Cai'er, the blind girl (IV)

Lin Xin showed a faint smile, “Hey you two, nice to meet you, my name is Lin Xin. I come from Aimei City. The three of us are all at the fifth step, so let’s be good friends. Anyway, considering our strength, entering the top ten shouldn’t be a problem to any of us. Besides my outwards appearance of mage, I also happen to be an alchemist. Look, these are the pills I made.”

As he spoke, Lin Xin took out a crystal bottle from his bosom, and his astute eyes stared at them. He was inwardly thinking this: Big Brother has drugs, he’s without equal in the whole world!

Priest Temple Stadium.

“Ping.” The heavy magical staff in Sima Xian’s hand was completely overwhelming, ruthlessly smashing his opponent, as his [Sacred Hammer] directly smashed his opponent head on.

“I concede.”

His opponent was a youth whose face had already become pale, looking with disbelief at Sima Xian, “You, are you really a priest, or are you a warrior? Referee, this is unfair.”

Regardless of whether it was the people in the priests’ resting area, or the seniors in the platform of the stadium, everyone’s faces were filled with disbelief.

“If I don’t concede, I will be smashed to death.” The [Sacred Hammer] was slightly sunken down.

“I, I concede...”

Sima Xian retrieved the staff in his hand, and layer upon layer of the ground let out a muffled explosion, as the referee’s face changed completely. Sima Xian touched his own bald head, without heading back to the rest area yet.

Warrior Temple Stadium.

Chen Chen stood there with an agonized face, he simply couldn't believe what had just happened. Although he didn't feel extremely confident in his own abilities and didn't have much hope, after suffering such a crushing defeat in the first round, how could he feel at ease? More importantly, he lost against a Shield Warrior!

It wasn't that he couldn't break through the opponent's defense, or couldn't attack him, but he had already conceded after merely three moves.

The Shield Warrior Chen Chen was facing was a young girl. She was roughly 1.7 meters tall, her black hair was combed neatly in a ponytail, and she looked tall and thin. The space between her eyebrows made her look quite threatening.

If it was only in terms of outwards appearance, who would have thought that this slender girl would be a warrior? But beside her, her shield was 1.8 meters high, 1.2 meters wide, and looked just like a large tower shield. And it was her only weapon, a heavy shield that didn't seem any lighter than 250 kg. Just a moment ago, as she faced Chen Chen, her arms moved freely and effortlessly, flying up and down without problem.

On the platform of the Warrior Temple Stadium, an elder that seemed full of power and grandeur remarked, completely dumbstruck, "Is this girl a Shield Warrior or a Berserker? Eh, no, she looks rather like an Axe Warrior, did you see, just now, her tower shield was employed just like a heavy axe. Who was actually able to raise such a little freak?"

The Demon Hunt Selection's first day of preliminaries lasted until late night and had concluded. The last ones to finish weren't actually the Warrior Temple that was the most populated, but instead the Mage Temple.

After the first round of knockout-competition ended, each judge from the Great Temples were seated and discussing their observations, more precisely, the most freakish competitors were

especially numerous this year. It was only the first day, but a great part of them were out of the ordinary.

Reportedly, on the side of the Spiritual Temple, to everyone's surprise, there was a fourth step summoner that used an unknown method to summon an enormous Three Headed Hell Dog of the eighth step, causing their opponent to faint.

Only, the elite youths of the Six Great Temples didn't have the mood to examine the information. Instead, each and every one of them simply headed back to their dwelling place to rest. The preliminaries were simply a knockout competition. More importantly, it was a continuous competition. No matter when your first match concluded on the first day, you would have to keep competing on the second day. It also tested the ability of the competitors to recover their energy.

Faint streams of golden air were rotating around, emitted by the three milky-white foot of the Spiritual Stove and were becoming gradually more and more bright.

Just like a tiny thread, the faint golden internal spiritual energy was unceasingly circulating and rotating around his bones, spreading around his whole body. It seemed as if a golden gloss had passed through his whole body.

Long Hao Chen had been cultivating for a full day since returning yesterday morning. In this cultivating state, he absorbed the essence of heaven and earth, replenishing his body, and decreasing his need for food. He had only eaten a bit in the evening of the previous day. Apart from this short time, he had spent all his time cultivating from morning to night.

Stirred up by the medicines, the growth speed of Long Hao Chen's internal spiritual energy seemed completely stunning. After a single day, his internal spiritual energy had been increased by at least 20 levels. Going at such a speed, he'd break through the fifth step in at most ten days. Of course, a bottleneck should appear

right before the fifth step, and it would be hard to say how long it would take to break through it.

From his first cultivation to this moment, by relying on his physique of a Scion of Light, Long Hao Chen had never encountered a real bottleneck.

“Hao Chen, we should depart.” With knocking sounds on the door, Li Xin’s voice could be heard from outside.

The golden light vanished, together with the white light from his chest. Long Hao Chen was awake from his cultivation state, “I am coming.”

Opening the door, Long Hao Chen looked at Li Xin, who was excitedly smiling.

“Sis, you won yesterday, right?” Long Hao Chen immediately guessed the reason of her excitement.

Li Xin nodded her head, “I won, and effortlessly. Only, I didn’t win as quickly as you. Lin Jia Lu also passed through this first round. Pity, though, Chen Si and Chen Chen were...”

Long Hao Chen was alarmed, “Eldest Brother Chen and Second Brother Chen both lost?”

Li Xin softly sighed, answering: “The competition within the Warrior Temple is more fierce and intense than ours. Almost all those who are capable of competing are fourth ranked powerhouses, so breaking through this obstacle is easier said than done. Let’s go, we should grab something to eat. Let’s try our best together during the second round of the competition that will take place today. Only thirty people will be left after this. Each round of competition will be even more challenging than the previous one. Lil’ bro, you can’t be careless. You must rush into the top ten. ”

After eating simple food, and joining up with Ye Hua, the group of three went once again to the Alliance’s Great Stadium.

Ye Hua gave Long Hao Chen a deep look, secretly nodding. This

kid had been cultivating nonstop since he returned on the previous day, otherwise, he wouldn't be able to release such an imposing vital energy. He hoped that his luck today would be as good as that of the previous day so that he could have an early fight.

After passing through the competition of the first day, the number of knights competing was going to be once again reduced by a half. Although the number of people had decreased, the atmosphere had clearly become more tense. After the competition of the previous day, the young talents that were competing saw the cruelty of this competition, and all of them cautiously watched the other competitors, their potential future opponents. After all, no one could predict what the results of the lottery would be.

On the previous day, Long Hao Chen was the first one to appear on stage, and as a result, the participating knights were especially cautious against him. Long Hao Chen observed as well, but he only noticed a single person.

In the lounge, Long Hao Chen noticed this knight. It was a youth that seemed to be about 20 years old. This youth was quite tall: he was at least 1.9 meters tall, he had wide shoulders and a wide back, and short golden hair that stuck up like a long needle of steel. He had a handsome appearance and was extremely manly. His facial lines looked as sharp as a chisel.

He didn't wear any armor, but instead, wore only a black outfit. Entering the lounge, he directly sat down on the central seat of the first row.

What a calm demeanor! Long Hao Chen was secretly in awe. This youth looked like he was only 20 years old, but he gave the impression that he was as steady as a mountain. In particular, his stoic look kept his state of mind hidden. Sitting perfectly straight, he didn't move in the slightest. He stood there, completely immobile.

"Teacher, who is that person?" Long Hao Chen asked Ye Hua at

his side in a low voice.

Chapter 83: An Alarming Sword (I)

Looking at that youth, Ye Hua also showed an impressed demeanor, “I don’t recognize him, but I am sure he’s at the fifth step. In accordance to the rules of the selection, only competitors at the fifth step can sit on the first row. This time, there are a total of four people at the fifth step from our Knight Temple. He should be among them, as he came to look at the fights, unlike the other three, even though fifth step fighters are exempt from the participating in the first two rounds. This person is frightening, you’d better pray not to meet him during the competition.”

Hearing his teacher’s words, Long Hao Chen’s look gradually changed, becoming as sharp as a knife. His look was previously gentle, and normally, this change would only occur when he held a weapon. But at this moment, his stubborn self had been aroused. Steadily and sharply, Long Hao Chen instantly became an unsheathed sharp sword.

“Teacher, I want to challenge him.” Long Hao Chen said in a low voice.

Ye Hua was startled. As he was thinking about what to say, this seated black clad youth seemingly noticed Long Hao Chen’s gaze, and slowly turned around. And at the moment he saw Long Hao Chen, his eyes immediately filled with astonishment. However, it wasn’t known whether he was astonished by Long Hao Chen’s age or his handsome appearance. Slowly raising up his head, a deep glance suddenly burst forth; his look was full of fighting spirit.

Long Hao Chen stood there without moving, but his eyes weren’t weakening the slightest bit. The two people’s gazes intersected, as if arousing sparks.

The corners of the black-clad youth’s mouth gradually drew an arc, and while facing Long Hao Chen, he moved his lips. He immediately turned back after this.

“What is he saying?” Li Xin asked, perplexed.

Long Hao Chen answered in a low voice, “He is saying that he is waiting for my challenge.”

Taking a deep breath, Long Hao Chen slowly sat down. In this instant, he only felt that his innermost being had been igniting, becoming as flaming as a fireball. Basically, after coming to Holy City, it was the first time his fighting spirit had been aroused so much. His mental capacity was innately different from ordinary people’s, making his perception exceptionally good. He could clearly feel that this black-clad youth was powerful, extremely powerful; he seemed even more formidable than Ye Hua. And as this pressure filled his heart, Long Hao Chen’s fighting spirit was becoming stronger and stronger.

At this time, the same vigorous voice as the previous day could be heard from the platform.

“After the first day of competition, only half of the competitors remain. In yesterday’s competition, some competitors didn’t lose in terms of fighting capabilities, but they lost to themselves. Be careful, if one is careless in the battlefield, he will not only lose, but will also be unable to move forward. Therefore, I hope that you will be able to learn from your defeats. No loser is pathetic, and only one person can be the winner. The competition of this second day will still be a knockout competition, as before. Start.”

An enormous golden ball appeared little by little atop the dome, instantly drawing everyone’s attention. Number changed very quickly as all the competitors became tense.

Quickly, two numbers appeared in the air. Immediately, two knights appeared on the battlefield, and the contest began anew.

Today, Long Hao Chen wasn’t as lucky as yesterday; after three draws in a row, neither his number nor Li Xin’s appeared.

Long Hao Chen stood there, motionless. An indiscernible light

was twinkling in his body.

Seated not far away was Gui Wu who was disdainfully curling his lips, “What use is there to rub your spear before the battle begins? To meditate here in spite of everything, he really doesn’t fear accidentally launching magic, wasting his internal spiritual energy.”

Gui Ying coldly shot a glance at his son, “I am starting to pray that you don’t meet him, it would really be for the best.”

Gui Wu protested, “Papa, how can you be impressed by another, drowning your own son’s ambition. His strength is not bad, but he doesn’t have a mount after all, I am not as foolish as his opponent from yesterday.”

Gui Ying’s face became an ugly sight to behold, “Your talent is not bad, but you are too impatient. It is my fault, I pampered you too much when you were young. No one can be successful because of sheer luck. In such circumstances, even if I let you meditate, would you manage to do so? ”

Gui Wu became silent , and rightly so! This stadium’s atmosphere was quite enthusiastic, and full of pressure as well. How could he possibly calm his heart enough? However, this youth managed to do so.

Gui Ying was staring at Long Hao Chen’s arm. During the fight of the previous day, he clearly saw Long Hao Chen use [Power Storing] and [Divine Obstruction], two great secret skills. A Heritage Ring, this youngster definitely had some background. And considering Ye Hua’s cultivation level, he fundamentally couldn’t possess a Heritage Ring. A skill like [Divine Obstruction] was something Ye Hua himself couldn’t use.

In fact, from a young age, Long Hao Chen was capable of entering cultivation state like that, relying not only on his innate talent, but also on his great efforts and his willpower that were stronger than normal people’s. A single person’s innate talent wasn’t so frightful,

but also a person who had innate talent and perseverance at the same time was.

Simply said, Long Hao Chen had followed his father's instruction in regards to his cultivation for five years. He had never slept for real and all his time was devoted to cultivation instead. It could be said that during these five years, he basically never really rested. Regardless of whether it was his father's requirements or the later requirements of Ye Hua, this Asura teacher, he fulfilled all of them. This hellish training trained his willpower to an astonishing level. His innate talent was being gradually coaxed out and made use of during this process.

"#98, #46, enter." Accompanying this call, these words displayed in a gold-color, and the new match was about to be carried out.

Li Xin was shaken; standing straight, she took a deep breath, and started taking large strides, heading forward. Today, she appeared on stage earlier than Long Hao Chen

Upon hearing this number, Long Hao Chen who was standing at the same place, silently cultivating, slowly opened his eyes, ending his short meditation.

Li Xin's opponent was a knight with a sturdy build. As soon as the competition, or more precisely the second day of the preliminary contest restarted, there was no one who judged the opponents by their external appearance. Despite the fact that he was facing a female knight, this sturdy competitor #46 was extremely cautious.

The referee immediately made a sound to start the match, and the two parties simultaneously summoned their mounts.

Rose Unicorn, no matter where she was summoned, would become the focal point. Not only because she's a powerful magical beast, but also because she's a bright and beautiful creature.

Under the red-colored Rose Unicorn, Li Xin's beautiful face stood

out even more. Leaping on her horse, her swords were inclined toward the ground on either side. A rich golden radiance of light was emitted from her holy internal spiritual energy, as the Rose Unicorn emitted a red radiance, rapidly fusing together with it.

“Mh?” Seeing Li Xin seated on her Rose Unicorn mount, Long Hao Chen let out a gasp of surprise.

Ye Hua gave Long Hao Chen a suspicious look, “What’s going on?” He saw the change in his disciple. His perception was particularly astonishing, he could notice little changes that ordinary people would never find out.

Long Hao Chen said in a low voice: “It looks like Big Sis’ Rose evolved.”

Ye Hua was startled, “You mean, sixth step?”

Long Hao Chen calmly nodded. He revealed an excited expression: the fact that Rose evolved to an early sixth step beast implied that Li Xin had better odds to break through the top ten.

Ye Hua looked pleasantly surprised as well. The day before, after Long Hao Chen left, he watched all the others matches, and although a lot of potentially very powerful mounts appeared, they were all young ones, there wasn’t a single magical beast that had broken through the sixth step. A sixth step magical beast was equivalent to a fifth step human powerhouse!

Chapter 84: An Alarming Sword (II)

Li Xin's opponent was competitor #46. His face changed completely upon seeing the Rose Unicorn's face that seemed to be emitting red sparks. His magical beast companion was an extremely imposing Austere Frost Bear. After maturing, the Austere Frost Bear would turn into a magical beast of the sixth step, and it wouldn't be long before it became a full grown adult. It was roughly 1.5 meters tall and looked small and cute. Judging by its appearance, it was a beast that was approximately at the middle-rank of the fourth step. Cha, Li Xin let out a warcry, her hands holding her two swords, while the Rose Unicorn below her immediately charged like a red lightning bolt towards competitor #46.

#46, still shocked, took a large stride forward. The shield in his left hand was covered in the white glow of [Holy Filter Shield]. Sternly and calmly, #46 stood beside his Austere Frost Bear. With a smug look on its face, it released a blue light and immediately erected a little [Ice Wall] before him.

Li Xin was madly charging, her pair of swords lifted high in the sky, spreading gold-colored light all around. Looking at her current appearance, she was like a hero that had made many great accomplishments in his life.

#46's complexion immediately became grim. The golden ray was rushing at him uninterrupted as he relied on various Guardian Knight abilities to enhance himself. He clearly knew that when facing the Rose Unicorn, he had basically no way to win in terms of speed. If he couldn't block Li Xin's first attack, he would have no chance to win this fight.

Three thick ice spikes appeared from underground, trying to obstruct the assault of the Rose Unicorn. It was at this very moment that the vast difference in terms of abilities between the two magical beasts appeared.

Rose's legs turned into a red blur, and facing the flurry of ice thorns appearing from the ground, she jumped above without the slightest hesitation. These ice thorns that jutted up from the ground were, without exception, melted by the red-hot flame attribute released by her body, and had absolutely no effect at all.

Right after #46 concentrated all of his power to try to block Li Xin's next attack, Rose suddenly leaned in and swept to his flank.

"This..." Competitor #46 was completely flabbergasted, he didn't understand what Li Xin was trying to do. However, this Austere Frost Bear of his was quite smart, and as its figure shone, it immediately avoided her, dodging to the other side while not letting Li Xin have the opportunity to attack.

Rose rushed from her originally distant location, and the red light on her body kept amplifying, gradually turning the spiritual energy released by Li Xin into a gold-red color.

From the lounge, Long Hao Chen revealed a faint smiling expression, before shutting his eyes once again, thinking to himself, Big Sis, you've become quite crafty! There's no point in watching more of this match, I should resume meditating.

Joint spell.

Turning around and dashing out, Li Xin completed her joint spell with Rose. Before, she had relied on the same 'mode' to defeat the Dark-Green Dual-Bladed Demon. Without a doubt, this 'mode' of hers was her most powerful asset. Especially now that Rose had evolved, the power of the joint spell had increased by a wide margin.

Ye Hua's face revealed a rare smile, When did this girl, Xin'er, become so crafty? Not only did she give herself the time to prepare this joint spell, she also wasted the spiritual energy the opponent had spent on his all-out defense. At this point, there wasn't any mystery for the outcome of this match.

As fast as lightning, the Rose Unicorn turned back and kept running. Competitor #46 was on the verge of crying: he had already used all his defensive skills, and their effects had already dissipated. His spiritual energy was pitifully consumed in vain.

Launching out ten ice spikes, the Austere Frost Bear gave Li Xin's companion a furious look, waving his bear paw.

It was too bad, these ice spikes didn't have any effect. They vaporized and disappeared upon entering the range of the red-gold light emitted by Li Xin and her Rose Unicorn.

[Thorny Charge], [Instant Blast Cross Cut], [Lightning Thrust], [Light Thorn]...

Retribution Knights' most tyrannical offensive abilities instantly broke out, continuously aimed at #46 one after another. Under the joint spell mode, Li Xin already possessed a cultivation level of the fifth step, so in addition to her dual attribute of light and fire, her offense was extremely overwhelming. Although in terms of raw power, this competitor #46 was stronger than Li Xin, he had no way to fight back at all.

A Retribution Knight had the advantage in this competition. Under her joint mode, Li Xin was even more dominant. She continuously broke the opponent's defense, and when the pair of swords in her hands started to clash against the Austere Frost Bear and #46, Rose's charge suddenly stopped.

Staring full of envy at the Rose Unicorn facing him, #46 helplessly said: "I lost, but the one that outdid me was your mount, not you."

Li Xin nodded at him, and taking back her two swords, she performed a knight salute before turning back.

This was the classic case in which the mount carried the fight. Regardless of whether it was in terms of speed, offensive power or defensive power, a Rose Unicorn surpassed an Austere Frost Bear

by far. Li Xin perfectly exploited Rose's superiority to crush her opponent.

"#97, #99, next fight." As Li Xin just left the stadium, upon hearing these two numbers, her heart skipped a beat, and she gave an astonished look to Long Hao Chen at the lounge.

Ye Hua displayed an ugly smile, coldly looking at the nearby Gui Ying. Gui Wu was close to Long Hao Chen and Li Xin when checking in, so without the slightest hesitation, the competitor #99 ought to be him!

Gui Ying looked at Ye Hua, as his eyes displayed a strong look, "No matter how, there's no way for you to win in normal circumstances. Remember to use this 'thing' I gave you."

"I will definitely win." Gui Wu was somewhat sinisterly looking at Ye Hua and Long Hao Chen, who were not far from his position, but Long Hao Chen didn't even glance at his direction.

Long Hao Chen and Ye Hua were looking at each other, with Long Hao lowering his head. He didn't promise anything to his teacher, but let Ye Hua see the fighting spirit in his two eyes.

Summoning the Radiant Shield and the Light Blade from his 'forget-me-not' ring, Long Hao Chen headed out to the stadium with big strides, full of determination.

But Gui Wu was a bit faster than him, going into the stadium first. Tightly pursing his lips, he glared at Long Hao Chen.

"The match may now begin." With the command of the referee, Long Hao Chen did the same as before as a sort of fog of light was circling around his body, [Storing Power].

Gui Wu coldly smiled while quickly summoning his Scarlet Shelled Earthworm. His left hand held a circular bright shield with red patterns on it, and his right hand grasped the lance he used that day against Sima Xian.

To break the skill [Storing Power], the best method was to

immediately launch an attack, preventing the [Storing Power] from being completed. But Gui Wu came up with another choice. His mount, the Scarlet Shelled Earthworm ran to the place at the furthest distance possible from Long Hao Chen.

[Storing Power] was in reality a process that consisted of compressing spiritual energy. After compression, spiritual energy could bring out a formidable offensive power. Naturally, the consumption when compressing spiritual energy was as great as the amplification. The reason why this skill didn't have much interest was because the spiritual energy after compression wasn't very stable, so even if [Storing Power] was completed, a skill had to be used within three seconds, and if not, the previously compressed spiritual energy would be scattered quickly. Not only would his compressed spiritual energy be unusable, all the spiritual energy consumed by [Storing Power] would also go to waste.

The whole stadium was 200 meters long, and Gui Wu was retreating to the stadium's edge, increasing the distance between Long Hao Chen and him to roughly 130 meters. Within three seconds, could he cover a distance of 130 meters? I will let you waste your [Storing Power], using up your spiritual energy for nothing, thought Gui Wu.

A cold sneer was faintly drawn on Gui Wu's lips, who was standing behind, holding a circular shield in his left hand and the lance in his right hand. Slowly lifting them up, both the shield and the lance were taking and sending out a large quantity of golden light. The armor on his body also issued an intense bright luster. He just stood at that place, calmly waiting for his opponent.

In this kind of circumstance, Long Hao Chen's apparent goal would be to immediately launch an attack using the compressed energy. However, what he actually did was against all expectations.

Chapter 85: An Alarming Sword (III)

Standing there, as deeply concentrated as in the last fight, Long Hao Chen calmly used [Storing Power], locking it onto the opponent.

Since the preliminaries had started, this was the most peaceful fight of the whole competition: both sides didn't attack, but motionlessly confronted each other. The mood wasn't softened either, because even if there was no confrontation, the referee didn't intervene at all; [Storing Power] couldn't persist forever after all. Once his spiritual energy was used up, this compressed energy would have to be used, and Long Hao Chen would be forced to launch an attack.

But as time passed, Gui Wu's face became more and more anxious.

Long Hao Chen was storing power as before, and two entire minutes had passed. As everyone knew, the longer [Storing Power] was used, the more mighty it was, but the spiritual energy consumption would increase as well.

To counter this skill used by Long Hao Chen, Gui Ying gave his son a piece of advice, giving him a detailed breakdown of how [Storing Power] worked. Under the fifth step, each minute of [Storing Power] would consume 500 units of spiritual energy. Two minutes had already passed, so basically, Long Hao Chen had already compressed at least 1000 units of spiritual energy.

Is he insane? Don't tell me he's preparing an attack. But at such a distance, how is that possible?

Gui Wu's heart was full of incomprehension, and he was extremely anxious. But, at this very moment, he couldn't stop halfway. He had already lost his chance to interrupt Long Hao Chen's [Storing Power]. 1000 units of spiritual energy stored! He could already launch an incredibly powerful attack, and all Gui Wu

could do was to wait, as he didn't dare approach Hao Chen.

Time slowly passed, as in a nightmare. Three minutes, already three minutes. It was not only Gui Wu, but each and every one of the competitors in the lounge had almost stopped breathing.

1500th spiritual energy level? That was already the level of a seventh ranked Grand knight, a power that no youth younger than 18 years-old could possibly have. More importantly, Long Hao Chen's [Storing Power] was still ongoing!

When four minutes had passed, the whole lounge was already in an uproar. Gui Wu couldn't help but glare at the referee, loudly saying, "It's impossible, he cannot have possibly reached the fifth step..."

2000th spiritual energy level implied that he was an Earth Knight, but also implied a liquified spiritual energy. But the spiritual energy he had released up to now hadn't shown any signs of liquefaction. Still, his [Storing Power] had already persisted for 4 whole minutes! It had far exceeded Gui Wu's expectations. How could he know that the same skill, when relying on a physique of Scion of Light, was consuming a lot less of Long Hao Chen's spiritual energy?

Gui Wu stood there, looking at the referee, shouting loudly that IT'S IMPOSSIBLE, as Long Hao Chen suddenly started to move.

His right feet loudly stepped on the ground as he rushed with all his strength, just like a golden arrow that was being launched at Gui Wu. The three seconds of [Storing Power] had started at this very moment.

Because he was in the middle of questioning his predicament, Gui Wu's reaction was slightly delayed. Regardless of the difficulty, he had to resist this attack. Resisting it was akin to winning, as Long Hao Chen's spiritual energy was already wasted up to its limit.

A scarlet light shone from his shield, and a red light directly

entered his Scarlet Shelled Earthworm's body. In a split second, the Scarlet Shelled Earthworm roared as it looked up at the sky. His eyes were colored in a crimson red, and his whole body's aura instantly became tyrannical and chaotic.

The shield Gui Wu held was equivalent to a piece of equipment at the Spiritual Tier, with a supplementary ability, [Blood Thirst]. Under the effects of [Blood Thirst], the Scarlet Shelled Earthworm's attack, defense and speed were all instantly increased by ten percent for a whole minute.

Meanwhile, the lance in Gui Wu's hand emitted a dazzling light. It was a Spiritual Weapon as well, with [Body Penetration] as its supplementary ability.

Immediately acting, Gui Wu instructed his Earthworm to go at the fastest speed possible. Charging at mad speed to the lateral side, he was doing his utmost to pull open the distance separating him from Long Hao Chen, to waste time. His sole goal was to make his skill [Storing Power] go to waste, to make this match's victory inevitably belong to him.

In barely a second, Long Hao Chen had rushed 30 meters forward, and was currently only 100 meters far from Gui Wu. His right feet once again stepped energetically on the ground, and with the help of his compressed spiritual energy from the previous [Storing Power], he slightly changed direction, dashing towards Gui Wu even more rapidly.

35 meters, in the next second, he had actually covered 35 meters. The distance between Gui Wu and him had been reduced to 60 meters.

There were 60 meters left, and Gui Wu's face was already exposing a victorious smile. To knights below the fifth step, the limit distance of attack was only 15 meters. In the last second, no matter what happened, Long Hao Chen could never cover 45 meters of distance and enter the attack range. In addition to that

fact, Long Hao Chen wasn't charging straight at him!

Peng, as Long Hao Chen's left foot fell on the ground, a shallow hole appeared forcibly on the ground. Further accelerating, he covered a distance of 40 meters almost instantly.

In 3 steps, within 3 seconds, Long Haco Chen covered more than 100 meters. To a knight of the fourth step, this was a sprint exceeding all records.

But at this very moment, he still had 30 more meters to cover, as he was madly dashing towards Gui Wu.

3 seconds passed, and the spiritual energy that he stored should be scattering.

The word 'stupid' appeared in the thoughts of almost all spectators. Even a part of the honorable seniors seated at a location far away from the platform thought the same.

From their point of view, Long Hao Chen was going to be defeated without the slightest doubt. To choose such an offensive style, could it be that he was simply dumb?

From the first row of the lounge, the black clad youth that was looking face to face with Long Hao Chen earlier had a puzzled look, and on his resolute face, his brows were wrinkling, as he murmured, "What is he doing?"

Ping-

At this very moment, Long Hao Chen used his actions to answer those who were questioning him. Taking a fourth step, he didn't even slow down one bit.

But, will this be of use? Every spectator wondered the same thing. [Storing Power]'s spiritual energy was already scattering, so what if he charged? It would only make him the sandbag for his opponent.

This time, Gui Wu didn't run, the Scarlet Shelled Earthworm

stopped moving and suddenly lifted its head. Its tyrannical body was welcoming Long Hao Chen's strike. Two golden halos blossomed one after another on Gui Wu's body, and both were amplification skills of Guardian Knights. The lance in his hand thrust towards Long Hao Chen like a lightning bolt, and his round shield was placed before his chest. The current him had his face blossoming with a victorious smile, as he looked disdainfully at Long Hao Chen.

And at the same time, Long Hao Chen who was rising in the air finally made his move. His sparkling Radiant Shield and his glittering Light Sword were heroically thrust forward.

An incomparably dazzling bright light shone upon the edge of the stadium, and a substantial golden blade edge made of light was launched. Gui Wu couldn't believe what he saw, as his lance struck it.

[Light Thorn], the first long range skill learned by knights. But Long Hao Chen fully used the potential of [Light Thorn], to the extent that this attack obviously outstripped completely the realm of [Light Thorns].

The substantial bright blade edge even had the texture of real metal, and as it closed the distance, it seemed as imposing as if it could split the whole Earth open.

Hong—

The spear snapped in half, the shield was broken into pieces, the armor was destroyed and Gui Wu was sent flying...

It seemed as if Gui Wu's body was hit head-on by a kind of enormous mad dragon, and together with his Scarlet Shelled Earthworm, he was sent flying. They smashed ruthlessly against the protective mantle of light located above the stadium, before bouncing onto the ground.

Gui Wu and the Scarlet Shelled Earthworm's mouths

simultaneously spit out blood.

Including the referee, among the spectators, few were those who could clearly see what happened at the instant when the [Light Thorn] collided against Gui Wu's lance. At that moment, a little change occurred: the blade edge of light simply struck Gui Wu directly, on his side. But the lance didn't stop it the slightest bit.

Pu Long Hao Chen steadily landed on the ground, as the substantial bright light scattered slowly around him, accordingly. Looking at his face, it seemed that he didn't have the slightest change compared to his state at the beginning of the fight.

Chapter 86: An Alarming Sword (IV)

In the lounge, Li Xin, who was standing, and had watched him this entire time, resolutely clenched her fists and waved them, “He won, Hao Chen won! What a formidable strike!”

Ye Hua calmly told her, “Sit down.”

Li Xin stuck out her tongue, and hurriedly sat down, quietly asking Ye Hua, “Teacher, with such a high level of cultivation, it looks like Hao Chen won’t be in danger this time. Can it be that he might even have a chance against that guy?”

Ye Hua gave her a glance, seeing that Li Xin’s look was brimming with excitement, he replied, “If I am not guessing wrong, that guy should be concealing his strength right now. It is a tactic as well.” As he finished speaking, he slowly stood up, and looked at Gui Ying’s direction.

On the stadium, Gui Wu was still spitting out blood. Looking at his armor which had been completely broken, he lifelessly declared, “Impossible, this is absolutely impossible. How could [Storing Power] not have been scattered earlier? He’s at the fifth step, he’s definitely at the fifth step, he violated the rules of the competition!”

The referee looked at Gui Wu and then turned towards Long Hao Chen, Fifth step? Is he really at the fifth step? Such a young child?

At this very moment, a vigorous voice echoed on the platform, “This match has settled with the victory of competitor #97. Test his spiritual energy; if it is really at the fifth step, we will have him forfeit.”

“Yes.” The referee respectfully saluted him before making some gestures to instruct Long Hao Chen to come. Long Hao Chen nodded and followed the referee who moved place. Gui Wu and his Scarlet Shelled Earthworm were naturally carried by staff

members out of there.

In the lounge.

Gui Ying was sitting at the same place, his face was blue one minute and red the next minute as he looked straight at Ye Hua. At this very moment, he was filled with agonizing pain. Each step Ye Hua took was akin to his feet violently trampling on his heart.

This place was filled with so many new talents, especially among young knights. From afar, he could clearly see that scene. But the one who lost was his own son. The bet, the bet...

Ye Hua unhurriedly approached Gui Ying, directing his ice-cold look at him, "The bet, you lost it."

Gui Ying ferociously clenched his teeth, standing upright and unafraid, "Come." As a knight, he could lose a bet, but he could absolutely not show dishonest behaviour.

Seeing the peaked ugly face he currently showed, Ye Hua loudly sighed, and spat out these words, "A master for a day is a father for a life, once back, let's see him, I still have things to ask him. Leave first."

"You..." Gui Ying looked at Ye Hua, completely with a blank face. He didn't slap him at the face, accordingly to the bet.

Ye Hua indifferently told him: "You should thank Hao Chen, I was actually influenced by his good nature. Your son's injuries are not light."

Gui Ying clenched his teeth and gave Ye Hua a perturbed look, with his five senses in complete disarray. With his foot heavily stamping on the ground, Ye Hua turned around.

Turning around as well, Gui Ying headed to the location of the wounded Gui Wu, with a thought filling his mind: "Teacher, in those days, you were in the wrong..."

A short time after this match ended, a firm voice could be heard,

coming from the platform, “In the match between competitors #97 and #99, competitor #97 has emerged the victor!”

An instruction was given without explanation. The order was to keep Long Hao Chen’s cultivation records secret, and to let all competitors know that Long Hao Chen spiritual energy was under the 2000th level and that he had yet to reach the fifth step.

On the platform, an elderly man was seated upright. He smiled with a pondering face and said: “He comes from Hao Yue City, has an Inheritance Ring, his spiritual energy is at the 1803rd level. A ninth ranked Grand Knight who’s only 14 years-old. It looks like another astonishing genius showed up in our Knight Temple. Pass this order, any information regarding #97 is to be sealed off. No information of him should ever be leaked out. In particular, his age. Eh, no, alter directly the information we have on him. Declare his age to be 18 years-old, and notify Hao Yue Hall to bring representatives on my orders. ”

“Yes.” People in the rear naturally carried out his orders.

“As long as this child can smoothly mature, our Knight Temple’s place among the Six Great Temples will definitely remain stable for the next century. What I am curious about is how high the innate internal spiritual energy of this kid is. And from whom he got his Inheritance Ring.”

Another elder seated beside him showed a smile and said: “What a rare thing to see, this Saint Knight acting out of fondness. Can it be that you want to personally raise this child?”

The elder that was called the ‘Saint Knight’ shook his head, still smiling, and replied, “Demon Hunts are a better training than any kind of teachings. I wish for him to be capable to enter the top ten this time, to set earlier on his journey in the world of the Demon Hunts.”

Long Hao Chen went back to his lounge, silently looking at Ye Hua who was sitting at his side. He once again became the focal

point of the lounge. But he didn't pay attention to anyone's look. He just sat, contemplating with his head lowered.

His fight with Gui Wu seemed quite thrilling, but what only Long Hao Chen knew was that nothing was left to luck; he had calculated everything beforehand.

Gui Wu lost mainly because he relied too much on his father's information about the skill [Storing Power]. Long Hao Chen possessed the physique of a Scion of Light, so any ability would show some slight changes when used by him. These changes include changes in power, a lower spiritual energy consumption, and a longer duration.

After he used [Storing Power], the duration of the amplification was not three seconds, but four seconds. This difference of one second is what fated Gui Wu to this tragedy. This [Light Thorn] was the formidable result of more than 1500 units of spiritual energy belonging to Long Hao Chen compressed in it. And these 1500 units of spiritual compressed were equivalent to more than 2000 units of the spiritual energy belonging to an ordinary knight, contained in a single attack.

There was no need to mention the fact that Gui Wu relied on two pieces of Spiritual Tier Equipment: even a regular Earth Knight would not necessarily be able to resist this attack.

[Storing Power] was a skill that 'has little interest', but if enough time was given to accumulate the energy, the effects of this skill would become extremely frightening. A formidable skill using the equivalent of 2000 units of compressed spiritual energy! It could be said that the previous strike of Long Hao Chen could match the power of the attacks of a Radiant Knight. The only difference was his spiritual energy was in a gaseous state instead of a liquid state.

If not for Long Hao Chen holding back upon releasing his attack at the last moment, there would probably not be much left of Gui Wu.

This was the first time Long Hao Chen had used [Storing Power] to such an extent. Consequently, he was contemplating deeply, pondering over the positive and negative effects of using the strategy of [Storing Power]. During the time his spiritual energy was being compressed, he could clearly feel that his spiritual energy was undergoing qualitative changes. In particular, in the area surrounding his Saint Spiritual Stove, the rotation speed suddenly plummeted, and he could see that the golden gloss that was emitted all around weakened by a huge margin.

Spiritual energy liquefaction. Long Hao Chen clearly felt that this process was taking place in him. For a powerhouse, regardless of his rank, during the time of breaking through, a moment of insight was extremely important. At present, Long Hao Chen grabbed this opportunity and was seated, completely motionless, reflecting on his past experience.

Ye Hua sat by Long Hao Chen's side, and didn't ask him anything from beginning to end, and went as far as to prevent Li Xin from speaking to him. To this disciple of his, Ye Hua was full of envy. He had definitely gained some benefits from the previous fight.

"Teacher, I am going back to proceed with my cultivation.", Long Hao Chen whispered at Ye Hua's ear.

Ye Hua nodded while looking at him, proudly patting his shoulder.

Long Hao Chen still had the wonderful feeling that came with the insight he had a moment ago; he went as far as to forget to greet Li Xin, as he hurriedly moved away from the stadium.

"Hu—" Taking a deep breath, Long Hao Chen moved both of his hands rhythmically, imitating the changes in the internal spiritual energy flowing in his body.

Grasp this chance, he definitely had to grasp this chance! Long Hao Chen was in ecstasy: he knew that the comprehension of this concept was even more important than cultivating his internal

spiritual energy to reach the 2000th level.

Chapter 87: Possibility of Evolution for the Spiritual Stove (I)

“Mh?” He was about to head back to his hotel as quickly as possible, in order to cultivate and to meditate on his previous insight. But with a glance, not far ahead, he saw a blue bamboo cane lightly hitting the ground, making harmonious du, du, du sounds.

It was her! Long Hao Chen’s heart skipped a bit and instantly, his joy from the insight almost disappeared, and instead, a tingling and confused feeling filled his heart.

Quickly advancing, Long Hao Chen called out in a low voice, “Cai’er.”

Cai’er who was walking forward immediately stopped her steps, “Long Hao Chen, is it you?”

Long Hao Chen had already arrived by her side, “It’s me.”

Cai’er faintly smiled. Although she was wearing a veil, as before, and her face couldn’t be seen, Long Hao Chen was absolutely sure that she was currently smiling.

“Take me home, okay?” She took once again the initiative to lift up her hand.

“Yeah.” Long Hao Chen discovered to his surprise that his own hands, which were burning hot in the previous instant, had become cold because of the nervousness.

He gently and cautiously held Cai’er’s hand. It was as if he was afraid of being disrespectful towards her.

Her hand was as soft as before, but this time, it also felt warm, and the cold atmosphere that was previously emitted by her body had disappeared.

Long Hao Chen led her, still taking her hand, and they advanced

little by little. They walked slowly, even more so than on the day before. At this very moment, his brain was completely empty, and he didn't have a single thought related to his cultivation. He only felt calm, full of eagerness, and completely filled with a happy feeling. This tactile sensation gave him an indescribable sense of pleasure.

Regardless of how slow they were, the road had an end. What's more, Cai'er's dwelling was very close to the place where they met up.

Long Hao Chen went as far as to think, deep inside, Why doesn't she live further away?

"We have arrived." Long Hao Chen stopped on his tracks. In his eyes, it could be seen that he was somewhat reluctant to part with her.

Cai'er lightly retrieved her hand, "Thank you."

Long Hao Chen hastily shook his head, but right after that, he suddenly realized that Cai'er could not see it.

Right at this time, Cai'er quietly said, "Tomorrow, I will have some matters to handle, so I will probably be a bit late. Will you still be willing to accompany me back? "

"Yeah." Long Hao Chen answered almost instantly. The next day, he will enter the third round of the competition. In the Knight Temple, the number of people that were still competing was already reduced to thirty-something, and the competition would definitely be finished quickly.

Cai'er waved her hand in his direction, and with her bamboo cane touching the ground, she turned towards her hotel.

This time, Long Hao Chen was continuously following her figure with his eyes until she disappeared from his field of vision. He really liked the feeling he had when he was together with this girl.

Long Hao Chen, who had only been cultivating for five years

straight, was quite ignorant in regards to emotions between males and females. He didn't even know what he was supposed to do. But just by thinking about the fact that he would be able to see her again on the next day, his heart was full of expectation.

Back in the residence, Long Hao Chen sat cross-legged on his bed. This time, he wasn't as unsteady as on the previous day. Instead, he directly entered the state of meditation.

His mind was calm. It could even be described as serene. In Long Hao Chen's mind, cultivation had already become a kind of pleasure.

He didn't know why it became like that either, all he thought was that he was influenced by Cai'er's special qualities.

An insipid gold-colored fog was surrounding Long Hao Chen's body, [Storing Power]. Surprisingly, he used the skill [Storing Power] in his own room.

This time, because he didn't have to observe the opponent or fight, his spirit was completely focused on observing the skill [Storing Power].

Long Hao Chen could clearly see that the internal spiritual energy within his body was passing through numerous different paths. With the rotations in spiral patterns in his chest, it seemed as if everything was frozen. It was no longer slowly rotating; it only calmly stopped there, like a gold-colored sharp cone.

Like a silk thread, the spiritual energy was uninterruptedly circulating. A large amount of internal spiritual energy softly moved accordingly to a particular tempo.

No matter how formidable the amount of surrounding spiritual energy in the external world was, the volume of cone-shaped energy that was rotating didn't change from beginning to end. Only its color would become even purer.

That's right, it's the color.

A mild gold color, this was the color of his own internal spiritual energy. And it became a bright gold color after compression. On the surface of his body, changes of color appeared as well, because of this compression that occurred within his body.

In a split second, a new insight appeared in his mind. The gaseous and liquid states of the spiritual energy were actually due to a difference of compression of the spiritual energy.

Exactly! Liquid spiritual energy was in reality spiritual energy which had been compressed to a certain extent. The main problem was how to keep this liquid state steady.

As [Storing Power] proceeded, the gold-colored rotations also became more and more intense, and a gold-colored fog appeared once more, surrounding the Saint Spiritual Stove. Only, this time, Long Hao Chen didn't compress 1500 units of spiritual energy before stopping, but went all-out, compressing all the spiritual energy in his body. He used [Storing Power] at its maximum might.

It was a compression with a duration of four minutes, but without a doubt, his spiritual energy had been consumed until the last drip. In fact his spiritual energy was only a bit higher than 1800, so with his external spiritual energy that was a little higher than 200, after completing the compression of 1500 units, there was already not much left.

Long Hao Chen could clearly see that, closely around his Saint Spiritual Stove, a thin fog was undulating. As his internal spiritual energy kept compressing, this fog gradually became thicker and thicker. One drop of gold-colored liquid after another appeared, starting to surround his Saint Spiritual Stove.

And at this moment, from his originally milky-white-colored Saint Spiritual Stove, a faint white light was suddenly emitted.

Ever since he obtained this spiritual stove, this was the first time Long Hao Chen discovered this phenomenon: as these drops of gold-colored liquid formed, a white glow appeared together with

it, and simultaneously, the rotation around the Saint Spiritual Stove slowed down.

This, this is...

At this very moment, Long Hao Chen's body suddenly shook, all the spiritual energy in his body had already been compressed, and the rotations violently accelerated. The compression reached his psyche. It was precisely because of Long Hao Chen's mental capacity that Long Xing Yu dared include [Storing Power] among the skills unlocked at the fourth step, when he gave him the Heritage Ring.

Taking a deep breath, Long Hao Chen stopped [Storing Power], letting the enormous quantity of compressed spiritual energy to scatter accordingly.

But he didn't end his observations at that, he watched the changes of his Saint Spiritual Stove, as calmly as before.

This feeling was marvellous, Long Hao Chen felt completely empty from inside, but in this state, his thinking was even quicker.

The rotations in Long Hao Chen's body showed gradual changes, before the immense quantity of compressed spiritual energy began to scatter at a very quick pace. Immediately following, the fine drops of liquid around the Saint Spiritual Stove gradually dissipated.

But Long Hao Chen clearly noticed that the droplets of gold-colored liquid surrounding the Saint Spiritual Stove were a lot slower to dissipate than his spiritual energy.

Was this the benefit of the liquid state of the spiritual energy? Long Hao Chen was startled. Clearly, compared to the spiritual energy in its gaseous state, the liquid spiritual energy was a lot more pure.

Chapter 88: Possibility of Evolution for the Spiritual Stove (II)

Gradually, these droplets of liquid disappeared, and Long Hao Chen was completely emptied of his spiritual energy. There wasn't even the slightest bit of spiritual energy left inside him.

In the moment when his internal spiritual energy finished scattering, Long Hao Chen felt a little shiver reverberate throughout his entire body. The air was filled with the holy element, and to his astonishment, the rotations in his body had accelerated by a wide margin. It was as if silk threads were rapidly gathering around the Saint Spiritual Stove in his chest.

Almost instantly, it took the shape of a small vortex, simultaneously recovering at least 10 units of internal spiritual energy.

The rotations slowly resumed in that small vortex and his internal spiritual energy started to recover automatically. Long Hao Chen didn't do anything, but he was rapidly restoring his energy.

Was it actually possible that after his internal spiritual energy had been completely depleted, there would be this kind of change? His internal spiritual energy was recovering at least twice as fast as normal!

However, Long Hao Chen discovered that soon after, the recovery speed of his internal spiritual energy was gradually getting slower. After about half of his internal spiritual energy was restored, his recovery speed had returned back to normal. No, in reality, it seemed a little faster than his original recovery speed.

Long Hao Chen slowly opened his eyes. It seemed that he had discovered a brand new type of practice method!

Generally speaking, nobody, regardless of their vocation, would

let their own internal spiritual energy be completely exhausted. It was just too dangerous. As a result, the people who had experienced what Long Hao Chen had experienced earlier were few in number. Furthermore, his light element affinity was almost perfect, so his perception was far superior to ordinary people.

What Long Hao Chen didn't know was that the skill [Storing Power] was originally an almighty tool of cultivation, a skill that was used as a training method to help spiritual energy to be transformed. And on this day, he discovered that pushing [Storing Power] to the limits was a training method as well. This training method had never before been recorded by the Temple Alliance.

Perhaps it wasn't the best training method, but without a doubt, it was the best choice possible to make his spiritual energy break through from the gaseous state to the liquid state.

What Long Hao Chen did next was to wait for his internal spiritual energy to recover to its peak, before completely using it up again through the means of [Storing Power]. Around the Saint Spiritual Stove, his internal spiritual energy constantly transformed from the gaseous state to the liquid state.

Long Hao Chen also discovered that right after every attempt, right after his spiritual energy turned into a liquid state, his spiritual stove reacted.

Could it be that this was the evolution that father told me about? My Saint Spiritual Stove actually wants to evolve?

Long Hao Chen could still clearly remember what his father told him in the past – that the Saint Spiritual Stove could evolve at most five times. But he still couldn't clearly remember what his father had said regarding how it would evolve.

In reality, Long Xing Yu had not told him that. Up till now, there had never been someone who managed to make his Saint Spiritual Stove evolve five times.

Li Xin and Long Hao Chen had smoothly passed through the second round, but Lin Jia Lu had been defeated. On her second match, she had been completely dominated, losing to a seventh ranked Grand Mage.

Lin Jia Lu didn't plan to remain in Holy City. On that evening, she bid farewell to Li Xin and left, together with Chen Si and Chen Chen.

Because Long Hao Chen was still cultivating, Li Xin didn't disturb him with this matter.

In the early morning, possibly due to the preliminaries entering their crucial stage, when Long Hao Chen and Li Xin followed Ye Hua and left the hotel, he could feel that the atmosphere of the whole Holy City had become somewhat tense.

It was the third day of the preliminaries. It was already the middle stage, and there were a total of 138 participants left. The four powerhouses at the fifth step would finally appear for the first time in the competition. In reality, there were, up to now, only 134 people.

After two days of fierce competition, only a few fortunate competitors remained. In total, there were only 34 people left, so including the four powerhouses at the fifth step of the vocation, it made a total of 38 people.

Today, among the 38 people, only 19 of them were going to remain. The next day of the competition would be the last day of knockout competition.

During these two days of preliminaries, from beginning to end, Ye Hua watched all the matches and gave some advice to Long Hao Chen. The matches that would take place today were going to be even more intense.

The fact that today, only the best 19 people could remain implied that among the top ten, there would be a vacancy. As for this

vacancy, it would be filled after this day of the competition. The one who would display the most strength today would obtain this place. After being approved by the committee, they would gain the right to enter the top ten, and grab this tenth place.

More importantly, on the previous day, the evaluation committee announced that because the powerhouses at the fifth step didn't participate to the two previous rounds, this vacancy would not be obtained by them.

Without the slightest hesitation, this decision was going to make today's competition even more intense. Who would not want to seize this place? Seizing it implied to be directly included in the top ten of the Temple Alliance, and also signified that one would obtain the qualification to enter a Demon Hunt Squad. This was an honor, and also a gateway to the most extreme door.

In the history of the Demon Hunt Squads, there had never been a Demon Hunt Squad member that didn't surpass the sixth step. And in terms of fighting strength, Demon Hunt Squad members were a lot more powerful than other powerhouses of the same step. They were also the core force of the Temple Alliance.

As one could imagine, members of the Demon Hunt Squads were an important resource to the Temple alliance. As such, they had a higher probability of becoming one of the strongest of their generation.

Up until recently, the overwhelming majority of the higher ups of the Six Great Temples, including those legendary powerhouses of the ninth step, came from Demon Hunt Squads.

As members of the Demon Hunt Squads, after completing missions for ten years, they could choose to withdraw from their Demon Hunt Squad to hold a post in the Temple. They would then be heroes in the mouths of ordinary people.

After entering the stadium, Long Hao Chen unconsciously looked forward. They had come early today, but a lot of the competitors

that won their second matches had already arrived.

Long Hao Chen gave the fourth man in the first row a glance.

The day before, this black-clad youth was seated on this seat as well, and had exactly the same attire. It was as if he didn't judge it necessary to wear his armor in advance.

As for the three others, Long Hao Chen could only see their figure from behind. All of them were males.

Actually, within vocations like knights or warriors, the quantity of females appearing was low. At the present time, in the Temple Alliance Stadium, among the 38 people who remained, Li Xin was actually the only female knight.

Today, Long Hao Chen didn't conduct meditation because the count of competitors was quite low, so he was likely to be among the first ones.

Everyone here, including Li Xin, was quite nervous. The overwhelming majority was silently praying, praying not to run into one of these four fellow seated in the first row. They were at the fifth step! Running into them was almost akin to lose the chance to enter the top ten.

Only, Long Hao Chen was an exception. While sitting, the first thought that came to his mind was that after his match, he would get to meet Cai'er, and to send her back home.

In that moment, Long Hao Chen's mild-gold-colored eyes showed an excited look.

As Li Xin saw Long Hao Chen's unperturbed appearance, she secretly thought: He's only 14 years old! He still had a stable mind in such circumstances. I am 20-something years old, don't tell me that I cannot compare with Long Hao Chen's attitude? As she shut her eyes, calming herself down, her nervousness started to disappear.

Chapter 89: Possibility of Evolution for the Spiritual Stove (III)

Mage Temple Stadium.

Two competitors' numbers were being displayed on the board, and everyone in the lounge of the Mage Temple was completely silent.

Among these two numbers, the first one that was displayed was #61, and the second one was #1.

#1, the number 1 mage was about to appear on stage.

In the preliminaries of the Six Great Temples' selection, the first ten numbers were set aside for competitors at the fifth step. If there weren't enough of competitors at the fifth step, the other spots containing these numbers would remain vacant. The fact that #1 appeared implied that the first fight of the third day of the competition would involve a Magic Leader of the fifth step.

A young, stupefied girl stood up from the resting lounge, advancing in the field. She was precisely that unlucky competitor #61.

In the first row, Lin Xin, wearing a red gown, slowly stood up. That's right, the competitor holding #1 was him.

Lin Xin was tall and handsome. In particular, he had deep, green-colored hair that was especially bright.

He wore a fire-red-colored gown releasing incomparably rich fire elemental ripples. The present mages could clearly feel that this gown contained an important fire elemental power that leapt around excitedly.

.

Gold-colored inscriptions covered this mage gown, and when Lin Xin moved, they seemed to be almost alive.

Lin Xin turned around, his hands combing his long hair, while facing the other competitors with a graceful smile. To everyone's surprise, he was full of self-confidence, unhurried. The heartbeat of the nearby female mages clearly accelerated.

Lin Xin slowly walked away, and while heading to the field, a rich flame element started to envelop his body, not because he was using some magic, but because of the effects the gown seemingly produced.

Lifting his left hand, he made a quick motion forward, searching for the fire element in the air, and gathering it in his hand. One drop after another of fiery red liquid appeared, gradually forming a fantastic pure gold-colored magical staff.

This magical staff wasn't big, but it appeared in a flash. It seemed as if it completely filled the Mage Temple's atmosphere with its aura of the fire attribute.

Impressive, so that was the power of a Magic Leader? The competitors couldn't help but open their mouths in astonishment. Looking at Lin Xin who proudly entered into the stadium, the other competitors were full of envy and jealousy, but the main feeling that filled them was fear.

Looking at competitor #1, it was obvious that he was a mage of the fire attribute that had an incredible mastery in the laws of fire.

The young girl bearing #61 had a deathly pale complexion. She was really too unlucky! Not only did she draw a powerhouse at the fifth step as her opponent, but in addition, this competitor at the fifth step before her eyes could possibly be the most powerful of those selected to participate to the Mage Temple qualifiers! She could clearly feel the fire attribute aura, so much that it frightened her to the extent of making her mentally unstable.

The referee was an elder. According to the rules of the Demon Hunt Selection, when a competitor at the fifth step appeared in a match, the referee had to be someone of at least the seventh step.

He gave Lin Xin a glance, “Stop showing off, before I announce the match’s start, you are not to use any skills, and that includes your equipment’s amplification abilities. ”

“As you wish.” Lin Xin showed a faint smile, and the gold red glow in his hand vanished. After a little sigh, he thought aloud, I originally didn’t plan on using my magical staff, but since things are this way, I shall use it.

Hearing him, the complexion of the young girl facing him became even uglier. She went as far as to curse this referee for meddling in other people’s business. He was already so powerful, but if in addition, if he used his magical staff, how much would his power grow?

With a red glow, a magical staff quietly appeared in Lin Xin’s hand. Frankly speaking, it couldn’t really be called a magical staff, but it was closer to a grotesque red-colored crystal.

This crystal was 1.65 meters long, with its thickest location having a diameter like that of a fist. Its main body looked somewhat distorted, its appearance wasn’t the slightest bit close to a standard magical staff, and there was nothing inlaid on it.

However, the referee who was previously reprimanding Lin Xin actually started to stare at him with widely opened eyes, and involuntarily let out these words, “Such a big fire cloud crystal, you want to use it to make a magical staff?”

Lin Xin faintly smiled, acting as if it was a very ordinary thing, “I bought this a few days ago, but I didn’t find the time to look for a jewelry master. This fire cloud crystal isn’t top notch material, so its fire-condensing property is only at a passable grade.”

The referee’s complexion instantly changed as he criticised him in his head, This little kid is really quite wasteful.

A fire cloud crystal wasn’t a magical crystal, but a kind of natural mineral. It contained an extremely pure and captivating fire

element. It could only appear after being soaked in magma for more than 1000 years.

Even an egg-sized fire cloud crystal, after being inlaid in any kind of magical staff, could turn it into a Spiritual Tier piece of equipment with a fire attribute. Lin Xin had such a large crystal in his hand so that even if it wasn't worked yet or used in a combination with a magical array, his magical staff would at least double his spiritual energy's might. This was something a piece of equipment under the Radiant Tier would have no way to accomplish. If a powerful mage used a magical array in combination, this fire cloud crystal could even have a chance to turn into a piece of Legendary Tier equipment.

A magical staff created using only fire cloud crystal, what kind of concept was that? Even with a lot of money, this kind of thing couldn't be bought, it would cost at least 50,000 gold coins at the market!

Lin Xin was facing the young girl bearing the number 61, already showing a dull, lifeless look. She was a dual element mage who could use magic of the wind and fire elements. In her hands, she was holding a magical staff that had one fire cloud crystal as well as one wind spirit crystal, although both were of the size of a fingernail.

Taking a look at his hand, before giving another glance to her own hand, the young girl bearing the number #61 really wanted to hide her own magical staff.

"Start the match." The referee resisted his inner thirst for this fire cloud crystal, and loudly shouted to announce the start of the match.

Lin Xin smiled at the young girl facing him and said, "Beautiful girl, how do you feel about working together? Magic spells have no eyes, and with a spell at the fifth or the sixth step, my control is not so great. It wouldn't be good if I were to hurt you. All of us are

people from the Mage Temple, and as a man, I want to behave like a gentleman. Let's do it like this: It looks like you can also use magic of the fire attribute, so let's have a simple contest of fire control, if you can at least be at my level, then let's consider this as your win. Let's save ourselves from a dangerous and bloody match, and settle this amiably, how about it?"

Hearing his words, the young girl facing him let out a breath of relief. It was clear to everyone that the gap between her and Lin Xin was too wide to overcome.

Hastily nodding, she felt extremely grateful, "Please give me your guidance, senior."

Lin Xin was calm and relaxed; faint, tiny magic rings were surrounding his body, gently undulating. It made him give off a very influential image.

Looking at the girl, Lin Xin revealed a faint smile. Lifting up the fire cloud crystal in his hand, he slowly gave shape to a fiery red halo.

This halo was fiery red-colored, but it didn't emit the slightest bit of fire. It was closer to a mark that appeared in the air, and its fiery red illumination was quite imposing.

Liquid spiritual energy. Only spiritual energy in the liquid state could result in such an impressive sight. And looking at that sight, the control of this liquid spiritual energy had at least attained the level of perfection; it didn't belong to a newcomer who had just reached the fifth step.

As Lin Xin returned the fire cloud crystal back to its starting point, this fire-red-colored halo became completely shaped, quietly floating on Lin Xin's side, and suddenly, all the fire essence vanished, without the slightest amount left over. The fire-red-colored halo didn't show the slightest change in its color.

The girl's complexion was already completely pale, looking at

this scene that she could by no way reproduce. The elemental essence surrounding him had so easily vanished? Let alone the control of his own spiritual energy that he showed earlier, in fact, Lin Xin's halo currently didn't have the slightest flaw.

Chapter 90: Possibility of Evolution for the Spiritual Stove (IV)

“Take a clear look, I am going to start now.” Lin Xin showed her a gentle smile.

What? You haven’t begun yet? The young girl was already on the verge of collapsing.

Raising the fire cloud crystal once again, he lightly used it to hit the center of the halo. With a sort of Ding metallic sound, the fiery red ring instantly dispersed, turning into countless fiery red dots, lighting the air and floating in midair,

At this point, all competitors were focused on Lin Xin’s body, but no one could guess what he was about to do.

“Transform.” Lin Xin said in a low voice, and everyone could clearly see that the fire cloud crystal in his hand started to shiver. He seemed to be muttering a kind of incantation, but his chanting speed was just too fast, neither his opponent or the referee could clearly hear it.

The fire motes in the air started to transform and grow. The strangest thing was that, during this process, they looked like flower buds that were slowly blooming.

One fiery-red-colored rose after another appeared in midair without any foundation, revolving around Lin Xin’s body, slowly rotating.

This scene was simply excessively shocking! The originally handsome Lin Xin was surrounded by a bunch of roses, filled with solidified fire essence; he looked just like a fairy.

Looking at this scene, almost all of the competitors had their breath taken away. They simply couldn’t believe their eyes.

There were at least a hundred of these fiery red roses. How good

was his control, for him to be able to manipulate so much fire essence as meticulously as he did?!

Lin Xin's opponent, a girl that didn't pass easily the two first days of qualifiers, was no longer pale. Instead, she started to blush intensely: as she was extremely close to him, she could see this scene extremely clearly. All girls seek beauty. Even without mentioning his exquisite magic control of the fire element, her eyes were already empty of all bitterness, and were filled with admiration instead.

But Lin Xin wasn't done yet. Pointing at the fire cloud crystal before him, he ordered, "Split."

Instantly, all the fiery red-colored roses seemed to react, and gathered together, forming a fiery red shape. This dazzling fiery red color belonged to a perfect rose that appeared at this moment.

Lin Xin pointed toward the left side of his chest, and instantly, a sound could be heard, "Thump, Thump; Thump, Thump". It was the sound of a heartbeat, and it accompanied this heart-shaped rose's appearance, together with these pulsations that seemed just as if they belonged to a real heart.

The fire cloud crystal ignited once again, astonishing everyone. This huge "heart" flew straight in the direction of the female mage facing Lin Xin.

How could the shocked and shaken girl have the time to react? Looking at such a huge blaze flying at her, her face instantly changed, but she didn't even have the time to think about dodging it. Looking at this blazing rose shaped like a heart, her brain completely blanked out.

And at this very moment, all the roses quietly faded away while the "heart" grew, turning into an enormous heart-shaped ring with the girl inside. It didn't have any offensive effect at all, only quietly surrounding this woman's body. It produced a fiery red brilliance encircling this female mage, and reflecting her deep red-

colored blushing face.

The girl stood there, staring blankly at him. She didn't have the slightest idea about what she should do, but among the observing competitors, almost all the female mages were full of envy.

So cool, so romantic. So mages could actually give birth to such a beautiful scenery.

"My demonstration is finished, please." Lin Xin courteously said, looking at his opponent.

"Ah!" #61 cried out in alarm, almost falling down. She had completely lost control and her cheeks were blushing deep red.

"I, I can't... I concede." As she finished her sentence, she could feel her heartbeat speeding up. As she didn't dare look at Lin Xin, she escaped, at near the peak of her running speed.

Without needing to mention this girl that was completely stunned by the sight of this scene, even the referee of this match, a Grand Magic Tutor of the seventh step, was completely dumbstruck. He was utterly confused, He could himself achieve such a delicate control, but was absolutely unable to be as fast as Lin Xin, while remaining so calm. Such a great magic control could already not be described as 'genius' anymore, it was simply a peerless talent!

On the platform, an old mage seated at the first row loudly groaned, "Vulgar nonsense to please the crowds; a handsome exterior but hollow inside."

To his astonishment, the mages to either side of him were in awe, and the old mage seated at his left spoke back, "Old Lin, you cannot describe him as like that. Such an exceptionally beautiful scene held an incredible ingenuity and control. This child's sentiments in regards to magic are simply astonishing. In the future, he will definitely become a leading figure of our Mage Temple.

Old Lin groaned in fury, “Old geezer Ge, your eyes have a problem. A leading figure? Bullshit, he’s closer to a vulgar buffoon only suited for pleasing the crowds.”

Old Ge’s face was black with rage, “Old Lin, you cannot speak in this manner. We are already at this age, don’t tell me that you are jealous? Although you are a Magic Regiment Leader, if you want to harass a young talent of this kind, I won’t give you my approval.”

Old Lin suddenly stood up, “Okay, then I won’t keep watching this; I am so furious. You think I will beat down this little bastard? Do you think he has anything that I cannot match?”

Old Ge was indignant, “Why are you cursing at people? Do you not have a little bit of the demeanor of a magic sage?”

Old Lin snorted, “What if I am cursing at my own grandson, is it your problem?” As he was done speaking, he angrily left. As before, his eyes were fiercely wide opened, glaring at Lin Xin who was wearing a smile while beckoning all the other competitors.

Lin Xin felt a shiver, and didn’t dare keep showing off. He hurriedly returned to the lounge.

After Old Lin left, Old Ge revealed a peculiar expression, “Turns out that this youngster was Old Lin’s second grandson, that legendary freak. It’s no wonder that this old fellow wanted to tick him off. ”

Assassin Temple Stadium.

In the Holy Union’s Great Stadium, the Assassin Temple’s stadium was really the strangest one: compared to the five other stadiums, it bore no resemblance to their well-lit environ at all. Instead, it was somewhat dark, and could even be described as sinister.

Today, the competition in the Assassin Temple’s stadium started a little later than in the others, because of the decorations they set up.

Enormous stelae were towering in the middle of the stadium. These stelae had a layout that seemed somewhat random. Each stele was thick enough that two people would be needed to reach around it. It seemed that they had just finished to put them in order.

A cold voice came from a sort of remoted platform, “This year, there are a total of 48 competitors. After the two first days, there are 12 people left. Today, to determine the top ten, you will enter the stadium together, and have a contest. You may use any means, all those who are not in state to fight will be eliminated. The first four eliminated competitors will be drawing lots as a final step to eliminate two of them. All competitors enter; after my countdown of 10 seconds, the match will begin.”

“Ten.”

“Whoosh, whoosh, whoosh, whoosh, whoosh.....” A stream of noises sounded, and the participants in the resting area all shot out like arrows.

The assassins of the Assassin Temple were a lot more mysterious than other temples. Every person’s face was covered with a veil of some sort, and some even had their foreheads covered, only revealing their eyes. Their actions were swift and nimble, and that gloomy voice had not even counted to three when the participants who shot out seemed as if they had all disappeared into thin air.

“Du, du, du, du, du.....” The quieter it was, the easier it would be for some sudden noise to catch the attention of other people, just like it was at this moment.

Not all of the participants had moved at the very first moment; there was one exception.

Long, purple hair draped smoothly over her back, her blank pupils gave people a sort of solitary feeling. The blue bamboo stick lightly tapped on the floor, its master moving slowly, step by step, towards the center of the arena.

Chapter 91: Retribution Knight Long Hao Chen (I)

Who is this person? This question appeared simultaneously in the minds of almost all the assassins hidden in the shadows. Is she a competitor? But how can an Assassin possibly be blind?

At this moment, a thought dawned upon all the assassins. In the previous contests, the total number of contestants amounted to forty-seven people, not forty-eight people as that gloomy voice had just announced.

This place that was vacant on the two previous matches, could it be..... 5th step?

But, what would it matter if she was at the 5th step? What percentage of an assassin's power could a blind, female assassin display?

“Du, du, du.....” Cai'er silently walked towards the arena. Her movements weren't fast, to the point that they were slower than the average person's walking pace. It looked as if she was the walking dead, no signs of life arose from the coldness that radiated from her.

The gloomy voice that sounded from the platform totally ignored Cai'er's actions and continued to count down, “5, 4, 3, 2, 1, Begin.”

Cai'er reached the center of the arena just as that voice called out 'Begin'. The place where she was standing was approximately in the center of the stadium, and this area, void of any stelae, was quite wide. She was completely visible to the hidden assassins.

Silence. The whole arena was temporarily silent, and no assassin rushed to act first. Twelve people, and the first four to get knocked will compete in an additional match. In other words, the eight people that kept from getting knocked out in this match would automatically enter the top ten. Under these circumstances, no one

would rashly make the first move.

However, just because others didn't move, didn't mean that Cai'er didn't move. She quietly stood there for just three seconds, then her blue bamboo stick again began making 'du, du' sounds towards one direction. Coincidentally, that direction led straight to a stele, and furthermore, there was a assassin hidden right behind it.

Cai'er's appearance didn't even display a hint of defense. Her whole body was littered with openings, not to mention that her pace was extremely slow, completely relying on that green bamboo stick to advance.

Pu—— Finally, the green bamboo stick in her hand bumped into that stele. Cai'er's feet abruptly halted, and it was just at this moment that the hidden assassin made a move.

The assassin leapt out from the middle section of the stela, taking advantage of his agility and his light clothing, and without letting out the slightest sound, glancing at Cai'er's head, he aimed his pitch black dagger at Cai'er's shoulder.

If not for the fact no one was to be killed during the competition, he would have aimed at Cai'er's neck.

The other assassins, hidden in the shadows, didn't move the slightest bit. They calmly observed their surroundings; everyone clearly wished to see someone else initiating an attack to deal with Cai'er.

A piercing blow!

All the assassins could clearly see that this black clad assassin's dagger was aiming for Cai'er's shoulder. But in the next instant, all the observers' pupils suddenly shrank.

Because they could see two Cai'er.

The Cai'er that was hit by the assassin's stab was standing in place, completely motionless, but the pitch black dagger didn't

manage to spill out any blood. And the second Cai'er that appeared was two meters tall.

Cai'er's soft hand, the same one that was held by Long Hao Chen the day before, was placed at the quarter length of her bamboo cane. Her palm that didn't seem more than a sixth of meter long was slowly reaching forward.

The assassin discovered that, unexpectedly, what he stabbed was the air. Unfortunately, he couldn't bypass nature's rules, and thus, his body could only fall down.

With a numb feeling behind his neck, he lost consciousness.

The others assassins only saw a flower before their eyes, as she stood before the stele, at the same place where she was supposed to be hit by her opponent's piercing blow.

The bamboo cane swept across the ground as she softly aimed at the black-clad assassin's waist. Immediately, this black-clad assassin's body crumpled, just like a rag, directly falling on the ground.

"#18, eliminated." A cold voice sounded from the platform.

[Shadow Doppelganger]!

All the assassins had their heartbeat quicken, grasping their daggers as they were soaked in cold sweat.

[Shadow Doppelganger] was a secret skill of the fifth step, and the one that required the most achievements to be learned at this step. It seemed that there was no way to differentiate this girl's clone from the original. Her [Shadow Doppelganger] seemed practically perfect: it went as far as giving a sensation of illusion, and when she used this splitting skill, no one could know which one was real.

Fifth step, she was at the fifth step for real, in addition to being such a powerful assassin of the fifth step.

Du, du, du. The blue bamboo cane's sounds rang once again.

Cai'er changed direction, and slowly advanced. Seeing the bamboo cane in her hand, each competitor went to the defensive, as if continually pressured. It felt as if the sound of this bamboo cane could control their heartbeat. No one dared belittle this slim figure, even if it belonged to a petite blind girl.

Du, du, du.

A leaping sound could be heard, coming directly from this figure, as the assassins fled at flying speed. None of them wanted to become Cai'er's next target.

Only, the stadium was not so huge and there were only so many stelae that as soon as she moved, they would naturally run into each other.

Daggers collided with ding, ding sounds. The former silence was completely destroyed by Cai'er and her havoc.

Hearing the daggers' colliding sounds, Cai'er halted her steps. She silently stood there, motionless and in the eyesight of all the assassins. Only, there wasn't a single assassin that dared approached her. Everyone could clearly see that even though she was blind, her other senses were without doubt developed at a terrifying level.

"If I finish earlier, I will be able to go wait for him. I wonder if today's match went well for him." The ice-cold atmosphere around Cai'er's body quietly faded away.

Knight Temple Stadium.

"#97, #4, enter the stadium."

It was the seventh match of the Knight Temple. Long Hao Chen's number was finally called, but at this very moment, Li Xin and Ye Hua both revealed extremely ugly expressions.

Among the four knights of the fifth step, a single one had already

crossed the stage; to describe this match, it wouldn't be exaggerated to use the four words, 'strong bullying the weak'. When facing a knight of the fifth step as his opponent, the fourth step knight didn't have the slightest chance. With a mere charge, the unlucky knight had already been compelled to surrender.

#4 was the second knight of the fifth step that had been called out today. And his opponent was precisely #97, aka Long Hao Chen.

A total of 38 contestants had to enter this third match, and among them were four knights of the fifth step. In other words, only 4 of the 19 matches would involve a powerhouse at the fifth step. And Long Hao Chen was now one of these four unfortunate youths that had to face them.

Standing up, Long Hao Chen revealed a sun-drenched smile, as told Ye Hua, who was standing at his side, "Teacher, as you instructed me, no matter what kind of powerhouse I'll be facing, I won't lose my self-confidence."

Ye Hua was startled, before nodding energetically at Long Hao Chen, "Go. You are the disciple I am proud of."

Long Hao Chen walked at a good pace, advancing towards the stadium. All the knights in the lounge had calmed down, attentively looking at the match that was about to start. It was the same for this black-clad youth that had been provoked by Long Hao Chen on the previous day. He was tranquil and gave a cold glance to Long Hao Chen, as if trying to say: Only if you pass this hurdle, will you have the qualifications to be my opponent.

Long Hao Chen's opponent was a knight with a tall figure, around 190 centimeters, with a broad back, and short, thick brown hair that slightly curled. His right hand gripped a sword that was wider than most, and his left hand a shield that was squared at the top, and tapered down to a point at the bottom, certainly not like the rounded shields of most knights.

Chapter 92: Retribution Knight Long Hao Chen (II)

The most astonishing thing was that this number 4 knight didn't wear any armor. Clearly wearing a proud face, he carefully looked at Long Hao Chen, who was facing him.

"I've heard that during the two previous days, you have only been using [Storing Power] to prevail over your opponents. Don't use this trashy skill against me, otherwise, you will only hideously lose." said the knight bearing the number 4, full of disdain.

Long Hao Chen indifferently answered, "There's no trashy skill, only trashy people."

The knight bearing the number 4 narrowed his eyes, speaking loudly: "Very well."

Because a knight of the fifth step participated in this match, the referee was replaced with a Saint Knight of the seventh step. This referee had the appearance of a middle aged man. His impressive figure stood proudly, similarly to a huge mountain, as he coldly snorted, "We don't care about your bullshit, this place is not one to show off with your clever talk, match start."

There was no difference compared to the two previous matches; as soon as the referee declared the start of the match, Long Hao Chen's body was immediately surrounded by a gold-colored fog. It was, as before, [Storing Power].

#4's eyes became completely cold, clearly filled with wrath. Unlike the other knights, he didn't immediately summon his mount. He loudly knocked the broadsword in one of his hands against the shield in the other one, producing an enormous bang sound. He seemed almost stuck to the ground before, after a small period of time, charging at Long Hao Chen.

[Assault], a skill used by knights of the fifth step that relied on a

formidable spiritual energy, enabling the user to charge with a faster speed while steadier than [Charge].

While he was launching [Assault], an intense bright light was being emitted by his body, but this light was entirely different than the one Long Hao Chen was emitting. They were beyond comparison, it looked as if a thin armor covered his whole body. This was precisely the result produced by liquefying the spiritual energy. This change had simultaneously appeared on the weapon he was wielding.

The distance of thirty meters was almost instantly cut in. The broadsword, emitting an intense glittering light, aimed straight at Long Hao Chen's head. He used his actions to tell Long Hao Chen that [Storing Power] was useless. He went as far as not to summon his own mount.

Bang—

The Radiant Shield accurately blocked the broadsword's path, and with a loud sound, Long Hao Chen was pushed a step back. His body started to emit the radiance belonging to [Bright Vengeance], as his Light Sword chopped towards his opponent.

Although he didn't charge [Storing Power] for long, including [Bright Vengeance]'s might, this blow's power was amplified by 100%; only, Long Hao Chen was currently not using any other abilities.

As he sneered, full of disdain, competitor #4's broadsword was indeed blocked by [Divine Obstruction]. Only, at the moment Long Hao Chen brandished his sword, chopping at his opponent, he had already launched a skill, [Shield Charge].

Pushing the heavy shield forward, he outrageously aimed at Long Hao Chen's heavy sword.

Bang—

A tyrannical explosive force immediately blasted into him. Long

Hao Chen looked almost as if he had been knocked out by an elephant, as he was directly sent flying backward.

This was the gap between the fourth and the fifth step. Long Hao Chen was already a ninth ranked Grand Knight, but against a knight at the fifth step, who possessed a liquid spiritual energy, if the contest simply compared their spiritual energy, he would have basically no chance of winning.

[Assault]. This competitor #4 was arrogant, but really had the qualifications to be so conceited. His skill had attained a perfect cadence; as he sent Long Hao Chen flying, he immediately launched another [Assault]. As a brilliant glow appeared on his sword, a [Light Thorn] directly aimed at Long Hao Chen.

This [Light Thorn] was filled with liquefied spiritual energy; the blade launched was simply extended. It couldn't even be recognized as spiritual energy: it looked extremely real. It directly aimed at Long Hao Chen, who used the Radiant Shield to stop it.

His body was still unsteady, but he hadn't fallen on the ground yet. Long Hao Chen could basically not re-use [Divine Obstruction] yet, but he was able to use a [Holy Filter Shield] to enforce his defense in time.

Hong-, [Holy Filter Shield] was broken and Long Hao Chen spat out some blood, and was ruthlessly smashed on the ground. His Radiant Shield was sent flying as well.

Competitor #4 wasn't hurried to pursue the attack; he simply coldly swept his eyes over the lounge, as if wanting to say, look here, this is the strength of the fifth step.

Suddenly turning over, Long Hao Chen stood up, his chest uninterruptedly moving up and down, while his mouth still had some bloodstains on its corner. The wounds he had received were clearly not light. But he didn't dare pick up his Radiant Shield, as he stared fixedly at competitor #4 while staying on guard.

#4's displayed an expression full of disdain, "I told you earlier that you mustn't use this trashy skill [Power Storing] in front of me. Before absolute strength, everything is futile. Admit your defeat, and get lost!"

Because of his wounds, Long Hao Chen's face was somewhat pale, but he resolutely shook his head, without the slightest hesitation. His body was still slightly dazed, but he hurried to use the Light Sword, sticking it in the ground to stabilize his own body and releasing at the same time a white [Healing Light] on himself.

#4 was glaring at him, "Refusing to be convinced until meeting the hard reality head-on? I will help you to accept it then." This time, he didn't even use [Assault], and simply advanced, step after step, towards Long Hao Chen. A rich holy light shone once again, as the broadsword aimed directly for Long Hao Chen's shoulder. Each of his steps

left visible footprints on the ground.

Long Hao Chen's hands grasped the Holy Sword's hilt, bracing his whole body, and he looked focusedly at this competitor #4. His eyes contained a firm and stubborn look that didn't weaken the slightest bit, even after sustaining so much damage.

The majestic referee was still tightly observing the two competitors. In case #4 was about to threat Long Hao Chen's life, he would immediately interfere.

In the lounge, Li Xin, extremely nervous, grabbed Ye Hua's arm, "Teacher, stop him, this bastard is about to kill Hao Chen. Hao Chen is already so wounded."

Ye Hua firmly clenched his fists, "Trust him, he will win."

At this moment, the knight bearing the number 4 was already only 3 meters away from Long Hao Chen. Grasping the broadsword, he slowly raised his head. He deliberately moved slowly, because he loved seeing his opponent showing a helpless

expression in the sight of his absolute strength.

Unfortunately, Long Hao Chen didn't show this kind of expression. From beginning to end, Long Hao Chen's eyes were unflinching.

"Let's end this." Competitor #4 was pissed off by Long Hao Chen's persistence. Lowering his broadsword he went straight at Long Hao Chen, aiming to smash him. Because of the great competition's rules, he didn't dare kill him in the end, but he was sure that Long Hao Chen would inevitably lose his fighting capabilities because of this blow.

But at this very moment, in Long Hao Chen's limpid clear gold-colored eyes, a severe look appeared abruptly, seemingly piercing his opponent like a spear.

This severe look had already appeared on the day before, when he faced the black clad youth. But it was the first time it appeared in a match in the selection.

Bzz—, a glittering bright light suddenly surrounded Long Hao Chen's body, rushing out from the ground. It was the Retribution Knight skill, [Heavenly Battle Array].

The descending broadsword was abruptly stopped by [Heavenly Battle Array]. In its fall, it instantly slowed down drastically, and immediately following, a mantle of light burst forth from Long Hao Chen's body, [Holy Mantle].

He had been preparing these two abilities for quite some time, starting from when he stood up from the ground. Facing a knight of the fifth step that possessed a mount as well, Long Hao Chen knew that he wouldn't have a lot of opportunities. Thus, he could only endure silently, waiting for the opportunity. Clearly, chance was on his side though, seeing that this competitor #4 didn't even try to summon his mount.

When Long Hao Chen was in Hao Yue City, every day was combat

practice against Ye Hua, an Airborne Knight. How could he be unable to block the attacks of a knight of the fifth step for a mere round? He was indeed wounded, but this was because he was far from having gone all out. He was only enduring silently, showing his opponent a weak self, while waiting for the opportunity, the very opportunity that had appeared before his eyes right now.

Chapter 93: Retribution Knight Long Hao Chen (III)

Based on Long Hao Chen's current strength, to prevail over a fifth step knight with a mount was extremely hard, almost impossible. Even if his innate talents were high, his opponent was after all one that had trained until the fifth step and beyond. As such, he could only rely on tactics to give himself a chance at winning.

Strength would forever be a crucial part of winning, but it wouldn't be the only one. With clever tactics, even a child could kill an adult, let alone Long Hao Chen whose disparity with #4 wasn't even that large.

Even though [Holy Mantle] was already a fourth step guardian knight's skill, it still couldn't block the liquid spiritual energy of the fifth step. But without a doubt, [Heavenly Battle Array] combined with [Holy Mantle] had already won him more than enough time.

He pulled out the Light Sword that was pierced into the ground with a dense, golden radiance, and simultaneously swept out horizontally, with the sword in his left hand in a blazing, red arc. This fiery red radiance combined with the golden radiance to form an intersecting [Instant Blast Cross Cut].

At this point in time, Long Hao Chen was already within Knight #4's reach. But he had never imagined that this Long Hao Chen, who seemed to completely lack any means of resistance, would suddenly break into offense. Furthermore, it was so explosively fierce.

At this moment, he had already missed the opportunity to utilize any skills, and could only raise up his shield with difficulty to defend himself.

Boom——

Light and fire crossed, forming an [Instant Blast Cross Cut] and fiercely hit #4's shield. The number 4 knight was indeed excellent, deserving of the title of powerhouse at the fifth step. In such a disadvantageous situation, he was only forced to take two steps back by Long Hao Chen's attack. It was, once again, because of the superiority of the liquid spiritual energy.

However, this was only the beginning. The intersected [Instant Blast Cross Cut] struck against competitor #4, who lost all opportunity to strike back. Long Hao Chen's swords didn't stop, even for half a second, immediately delivering another blow. But this time, his pair of swords shone with a bursting radiance.

A dazzling gold-colored light, together with a dazzling gold-red shine. The pair of swords actually immediately launched a [Shining Solar Strike], the most powerful skill of Retribution Knights of the fourth step.

Having just recently parried an attack, competitor #4 was in a shocked and angry state. Long Hao Chen's two swords immediately chained with another blow, shining with an intimidating brilliance.

Bang—

This time, knight #4 resisted, but wasn't as relaxed. Under the powerful force of [Shining Solar Strike], his shield was pushed back and he almost lost his balance, stumbling forwards and backwards in succession, but still managing to stay on his feet.

The advantage Long Hao Chen gained was not small. The Flame Sword in his left hand was thrust forward, carrying a red glow, and a [Lightning Thrust] was directly aimed at #4's chest. The Light Sword in his right hand wasn't attacking together, but was lifted above his head. Above it, an incandescent luster shone, instantly amplifying. But there was a fundamental difference with [Shining Solar Strike]. It was that the Light Sword's radiance

wasn't scattering, but completely concentrated in the sword. It seemed that the Light Sword was becoming immaterial, and could break through anything, as a holy aura was emanating from the Light Sword.

Long Hao Chen recited some incantations in a low voice, and this Light Sword revealed a change. At first glance, it looked like a [Pure White Edge], but compared to [Pure White Edge], the current Light Sword was superior by far, regardless of whether it was in terms of quality and purity of the spiritual energy, in terms of density of the holy aura emitted, or in terms of burden to the user.

In the platform, the Saint Knight that was sitting was completely astonished and declared, "Good boy, so he had this kind of secret. Turns out that he was not a Guardian Knight at all. No wonder he had been continuously using [Storing Power] and [Divine Obstruction]. He was from the beginning a Retribution Knight! What a good fellow, this is the ambidextrous high level retribution skill that can be learned at the fifth step of the vocation."

#4 was completely dispirited: Long Hao Chen's counterattack was something beyond his expectations. Furthermore, Long Hao Chen's series of bursting attacks didn't give him the slightest opportunity to counterattack.

[Heavenly Battle Array], [Holy Mantle], two [Shining Solar Strike] and a [Lightning Thrust]. He didn't even have the time to transfer his internal spiritual energy to obstruct these attacks, let alone to launch skills or summon his mount. He was completely caught in these attacks, and could do nothing else other than passively take them on. To stop Long Hao Chen's chained attacks, he had to wait for a tiny gap, an opportunity to strike back.

Using his broadsword, he tried to contain these attacks as much as he could. Jingling sounds rang repeatedly on the surface of the stadium. Long Hao Chen's [Lightning Thrust] was extremely fast, giving him the opportunity to use [Shining Solar Strike].

Competitor #4 couldn't possibly completely stop these attacks. A gold-red light swept past his left arm, instantly leaving a black scorched mark.

A real powerhouse wouldn't let pride blind him in the midst of the battlefield. Competitor 4, who didn't even bother to wear any armor, had clearly violated this golden rule. He was hit by the Flame Sword that left a painful wound on his left arm, which became completely numb.

In fact, until that moment, competitor #4 had never thought that he could lose; even if Long Hao Chen was a Retribution Knight and could use so many abilities, wouldn't his timing normally have a small gap after using them? As long as he had the chance to strike back, he was confident in his absolute superiority in terms of cultivation level to prevail over Long Hao Chen.

At this very moment, as Long Hao Chen completed [Lightning Thrust], a dazzling gold-red-colored radiance suddenly erupted. It was another [Shining Solar Strike], only, this time, it wasn't used as a strike, but a stab.

It didn't have [Lightning Thrust]'s speed, but it had [Shining Solar Strike]'s might. Competitor #4 had no choice but to block with his shield once again. An explosive sound could be heard, as he fell five steps back. His shield and his broadsword had both turned dull by then.

As he took a deep breath, while falling back, #4's eyes were full of rage. With his entirely liquid spiritual energy, although he was currently unsteady, this fall back could also be described as an opportunity. Using a little bit of internal spiritual energy, he released a gold-colored [Holy Mantle]. It healed the injury in his left hand while taking shape and forming a powerful defense.

[Assault], Long Hao Chen dived with his sword, and in a split second, nothing else other than a white electric light could be seen as his outline became shapeless.

A single sword shape appeared–, but was it the Light Sword, or the Flame Sword?

A crystal clear pure-white bright sword created ripples in the air, instantly coming close.

Puu

The [Holy Mantle] created by the power of the knight of the fifth step unexpectedly couldn't withstand this thrust of the Light Sword. With an ear-piercing sound, the Light Sword forcibly penetrated this [Holy Mantle].

[Holy Sword], the ultimate Retribution Knight skill of the fifth step. While possessing a tyrannical offensive power, this skill had a supplementary effect on creatures with a dark attribute, doubling the damage.

Competitor #4 was completely astonished, hastingly lifting up his Victorious Shield, but Long Hao Chen's linking speed was just too high; he only had the time to use a [Holy Filter Shield] to enhance his shield's defense.

And at this very moment, on the Light Sword, a white glow appeared, and ruthlessly struck #4's shield, followed with a thrust from the Light Sword.

Hong–

Under the gaze of the shocked spectators, #4's shield was split open, finally broken by the Light Sword's blows. However, the huge force of impact wasn't limited to that, as he tumbled onto the ground.

The fiery-red-colored brilliance quietly approached, fearlessly falling on his shoulder. A scorching hot temperature approached #4's neck, completely terrifying him.

Using the support of the Light Sword to prevent himself from falling down, he stuck the Flame Sword to #4's neck. As he took big gasps to breath, Long Hao Chen's mouth was covered in blood,

blood that kept flowing out. But his eyes were still full of resolution, that didn't change at all.

To use so many abilities to such an extent while wounded, the burden on Long Hao Chen's body was obvious. But it was precisely this series of dangerous attacks that made him victorious.

Chapter 94: Retribution Knight Long Hao Chen (IV)

Compared to the peak of the fourth step, the fifth step was fundamentally different! If not for the fact that he had used so many formidable abilities, and relied on his innate talents enabling him to naturally exceed ordinary knights' speed, intuition, and his tyrannical Retribution Knight abilities, there was no way he could have won this. Surprisingly though, as he was defeating his opponent, he had made sure not to injure him.

"I lost. I actually lost?" Knight #4 dazedly sat on the ground, his face ashen. Even as an Earth Knight, he hadn't been able to enter into the top ten of this Demon Hunt Selection. Consequently, he couldn't become a genuine member of a Demon Hunt Squad. He had already reached the maximum age eligible for this Demon Hunt Selection, and could no longer participate in another. In an instant, this defeat had completely removed him from becoming one of the Knight Temple's core members.

When Long Hao Chen heard the words "I lost", he had already put away his two swords and silently walked over to pick up the Radiant Light Shield at the edge of the arena. Although he had won this battle, he had not won easily. The pressure which was brought upon him by Knight #4 was enormous.

"No——, I can't accept this and I won't accept this!" Knight #4 suddenly leapt up from the ground, his eyes red as he looked towards Long Hao Chen. "I haven't even summoned my mount, nor am I fully armored. I have a set of Spiritual Tier armor. How then could you even be my opponent? How? Referee, I don't accept this. I want to have a rematch."

The referee coldly looked at him and stood between him and Long Hao Chen, saying indifferently: "You've lost."

Knight #4 desperately said: "I haven't lost. How could I have lost

to a brat of the fourth step?”

An aged voice rang out from the platform, full of anger, “I ask you, what are the Ten Standards of a Knight?”

Knight #4 looked blanky. These rules were something every knight had to learn since a young age, and he almost subconsciously answered: “Modesty, honesty, compassion, courage, fairness, sacrifice, honor, perseverance, humility, justice.”

That aged voice said in a low voice: “Then where is your humility and honesty? Rather than saying you lost to #97, instead you should say that you’ve lost to yourself. Not even armoring yourself or summoning your mount was your own decision. You can’t even comply with the two most basic standards of a knight. Your nature isn’t even fit for a knight. Come, throw him out and expel him from the Knight Temple.”

Knight #4 shook violently and his face turned deathly white in an instant. What did expulsion from the Knight Temple mean? It meant that a person was no longer a member of the Knight Temple. At the same time, Knight #4 also knew who this aged voice belonged to. Even the three highest ranked elders of the Knight Temple had to express the utmost courtesy when facing this person.

A thudding noise rang out as Knight #4 knelt onto the ground. Facing the platform, he said in a trembling voice: “Senior Saint Knight, I’ve done wrong. I know the wrongs I have committed. Please give me another chance. I dare not make the same mistake .”

The Chief Saint Knight’s voice slowly sounded: “That you can become an Earth Knight before 25 years of age, it is evident that your innate talent is extremely good. However, you should also know that what our Knight’s Temple emphasizes is not level but character. As a chief member of the six Great Temples, if any core

knight of a Demon Hunt Squad cannot comply with the Ten Standards of a Knight, he can only bring shame to the honor of the Knight's Temple. Tell me, what is honor?"

All the knights of the stadium stood in one body and shouted in unison: "Honor is life."

The Saint Knight Head calmly said: "#4, you have now heard. Honor is life. Do you still possess the honor of a knight?"

Knight #4 trembled violently. But even as he knelt there, he couldn't utter a single word. He could tell that the Senior Saint Knight's temper had already been ignited.

"Senior Saint Knight." Right at this moment, a clear voice sounded out. Everyone's line of sight couldn't help but turn.

The one who spoke was precisely Long Hao Chen. He fisted his right hand and placed it over his left breast, respectfully giving a Knight's salute in the direction of the platform.

"Speak." The Saint Knight Head's voice was clearly gentler and didn't at all conceal the fondness he had towards Long Hao Chen.

Long Hao Chen glanced at Knight #4 who was still kneeling on the ground beside him, then respectfully said: "Saint Knight Head, when I was very young, my mother told me: no one is perfect. Knight #4's mind is only a bit unstable right now because of this defeat. His arrogance was indeed a mistake. However, that his life must completely change just because of this matter, I think it is a bit unfair. Development of character and maturation are interlinked, and he cannot totally be blamed. Please give him another chance. After learning from this matter, I believe that he will correct himself."

Hearing Long Hao Chen's words, Knight #4 raised his head and looked towards him, stunned. His eyes even possessed a peculiar light.

The platform suddenly went silent, and all the spectators also

paid attention to the platform. After all, a genius like Knight #4 who had broken through to the fifth step before 25 years old was also extremely rare within the Knight's Temple.

Only after a while did the Senior Saint Knight let out a sigh from the platform. "Alright. Because you've requested it, I will give him a chance. Listen closely, #4. If you wish to continue staying in the Knight's Temple, then from this point on, you are #97's retainer knight. If you can carry this duty until the start of the next Demon Hunt Selection, then I will permit you to return to the Knight's Temple.

#4 first stared blankly, then rejoiced at this good news, "Many thanks to the Senior Saint Knight for giving me another chance." After saying so, he stood up and turned towards Long Hao Chen. After a momentary struggle flashed through his eyes, a thud was heard as he knelt on one knee before Long Hao Chen, "Master, I, Han Yu will obey your commands. I still do not know your name."

Long Hao Chen didn't know whether to laugh or cry and said, "Th-this....."

"His name is Long Hao Chen." A cold voice sounded from the resting area. Long Hao Chen turned to look, and the voice that spoke belonged precisely to Teacher Ye Hua.

Han Yu respectfully said: "God of Light above, I, Han Yu, will henceforth serve Long Hao Chen as my master for five years. My master's honor is my honor. If I break this oath, then may the gods punish me."

Long Hao Chen was ever level-headed in battle, but he was, after all, only fourteen years old. Under these circumstances he immediately became flustered and hastily said: "Quickly get up." Saying so, he held out an arm to pull Han Yu up.

Han Yu respectfully said: "Master, I still have some affairs to take care of at home. I will return now to manage them, then return tomorrow to look for Master. From this day forward, I vow to

follow you.”

After the previous setback, there was no longer any evidence of pride on his face. Although his eyes still gave hint of unreconciliation, after thinking about almost getting expelled out of the Knight's Temple, he finally overcame his reluctance and turned to leave after saluting Long Hao Chen. Although he was conceited, he was highly ambitious. Once he was expelled from the Knight's Temple, how could he ever achieve his aspirations?

Although Long Hao Chen couldn't clearly make sense of the situation, there had to be a reason why Ye Hua would let him accept. After covering himself with [Holy Mantle] he returned to the resting area.

“Lil' Bro, you're so awesome.” Li Xin immediately rushed over and gave him a big hug. As for the other knight participants, when they looked at Long Hao Chen, their expressions all revealed a bit of fear.

Within these one-on-one matches, retribution knights were clearly superior to guardian knights. Although Han Yu had ultimately lost because of his pride, do not forget, Long Hao Chen's last stream of offensive skills hadn't even given him a chance to react. Was this something an ordinary retribution knight could achieve? That instant, exploding force, especially that final combination of skills paired with [Holy Sword], was the real reason for Long Hao Chen's victory. Even a fifth step knight couldn't block his attack!

Chapter 95: Actually, I am very ugly (I)

Ye Hua glanced at Long Hao Chen, and said with a snort, “Stinky kid, so this was your background.”

Long Hao Chen lowered his head, “Teacher, I...”

Ye Hua waved his hands and said, “No need to tell me. In fact, when that fatty Nalan let me teach you, I already knew that you had a peculiar background, otherwise, how could you have attained this level of cultivation at such a young age? Is this background your father?”

Long Hao Chen nodded.

Ye Hua patted his shoulder, “No need to overthink this, I don’t blame you. Besides, your luck is indeed quite bad, to meet an opponent of the fifth step in this match. Although you won, your secret has been exposed.”

Long Hao Chen gave Ye Hua a concerned look. His mind in disorder, he approached Ye Hua’s ear and told him something in a very low voice.

Ye Hua’s eyes were instantly wide open, and he looked at Long Hao Chen, astonished.

Long Hao Chen nodded at his direction.

Ye Hua’s ice-cold face revealed a smile even uglier than a crying expression, before giving him a thumbs up.

“Teacher, what is a retainer knight?” Long Hao Chen asked, full of curiosity.

Ye Hua answered, “What you gained this time was quite convenient. A retainer knight is like the retainer warriors of a mage. The sole difference, is that one’s retainer knight can be considered as his servant, rather than a regular partner of his. The fact he made an oath implies that if you are to meet a dangerous

situation, he will have no other choice than to risk his life by your side. It's like a human shield. According to the rules and regulations of the Demon Hunt Squads, this kind of existences called retenues are normally not allowed, but knight retenues are the exception. If a knight is a Retribution Knight, then he is permitted to have a training Guardian Knight as his retinue. It is because in regard to Demon Hunt Squads, Guardian Knights are extremely useful."

"Only, there is almost no knight that is willing to become someone's retinue. Consequently, you can be said to have picked up a treasure. And this retinue is in addition a knight of the fifth step! When you will enter a Demon Hunt Squad in the future, in terms of sustainability, he will be extremely useful. Furthermore, for having reached the fifth step before his 25 years-old, his background cannot be so simple."

Long Hao Chen scratched his head, and said, "But, his cultivation level is higher than mine, he may not necessarily accept this."

Ye Hua showed a mysterious smile, "You are looking down on the oath of a retainer knight. No matter how proud he is, under this oath, you will be his everything, his master. Even if deep inside, he doesn't accept it, all his thoughts will have to be directed to your sake."

"Teacher, I'll be returning first, I have already fully recovered and I also have to rest for tomorrow's match." Long Hao Chen hadn't forgotten the promise he made to Cai'er, and now that his match had ended, he felt an urge to fulfill it as soon as possible.

Ye Hua nodded, and gave his agreement, "Go. However, don't be over-hasty, there will be no need for you to participate in tomorrow's match."

"Huh?" Long Hao Chen stared at him, completely astonished.

The nearby Li Xin was smiling, "Foolish brother, did you forget about the vacant place? If no one else other than you can beat a

knight of the fifth step today, how could it run out of your palm?”

Long Hao Chen suddenly realized that now that he had defeated Han Yu, he should be able to seize this vacant place!

If the competition was the only issue, he wouldn't be particularly rejoiced, because he hoped to increase his combat experience against powerful opponents, while arousing his potential.

But this last day was different. He was indeed on the verge of having his spiritual energy liquefied, after figuring out how [Storing Power] could be used as a training method. In such circumstances, what he needed the most was some time of quiet practice.

Exiting the Knight Stadium, Long Hao Chen impatiently headed at running pace to Cai'er's location. In a distant place, he saw Cai'er who calmly stood there. She had stood at the same place of the street as before, for a long time, just like a sculpture, and was dressed up the same way as the last times.

The sunlight was sprinkled across her body, and under its warm rays, her purple hair seemed to have acquired a crystal-clear gloss.

“Cai'er.” Long Hao Chen called out, running at full speed toward her.

As soon as she heard his voice, Cai'er was shaken, but when she felt him approaching, she felt an intense chill scattering all over her body.

“Cai'er, what's up?” Long Hao Chen was startled, suddenly stopping.

Cai'er's voice didn't have the slightest coldness, “You are injured? Who was it that injured you?” As she was speaking, she lifted up her hand, naturally grabbing Long Hao Chen's.

Long Hao Chen had a curious look, “How do you know that I am injured?”

Cai'er said, "I could hear it. Although I cannot see, my hearing is a lot better than ordinary people's. Your breathing is unnatural, so it is clear that you have been wounded." At this moment, the chill she felt in her body had appeased, and she let go of Long Hao Chen's hand.

Long Hao Chen chuckled, "It's nothing. I am participating in the Demon Hunt Selection of the Alliance and today, I encountered a powerful opponent, so I have received minor injuries, but nothing serious. However, I won. Right, I haven't told you yet, but I am a knight. Today, I had a good match, and since there will be a vacant place tomorrow, I should already be in the top ten."

"Mh." Cai'er lightly nodded, and her body wasn't sending out chills anymore.

"Let's go, I'm sending you back." This time, it was Long Hao Chen who took the initiative to grab her little hand, slowly pulling her in the direction of her hotel.

The two youths slowly walked. The atmosphere was very quiet, and Long Hao Chen advanced slowly, just like a kid first learning how to walk. As the sunlight sprinkled across their bodies, a pleasant, warm feeling filled them as their heartbeats sped up.

However, no matter how slow they were, the path would finally meet its end.

In the instant they stopped in their tracks, a change appeared in Long Hao Chen; he was inwardly reluctant to part with her. After feeling the warmth of when he was holding her hand, he was unwilling to let it go.

"Rest quickly when you return. I will be waiting for you tomorrow." Cai'er quietly said.

"Okay. I will definitely come early, tomorrow I'll be taking the vacant place, so I'll be able to come first and wait for you."

His heart couldn't bear to separate from her, "Go in first, I'll wait

for you to enter before leaving.”

But Cai'er shook her head and said, “I want to hear your footsteps as you leave, is it okay?”

He didn't know why, but every time Long Hao Chen saw her expressionless eyes, he was unable to decline her, “Okay, then be careful when you go back, okay.”

“Don't try to take risks like you did today, in your future matches.” Cai'er suddenly said.

Long Hao Chen chuckled, “I am not taking risks, I am being diligent. If I don't try my utmost to become more powerful, who will be here to protect you?” At this point, he clearly felt that his heart was beating a lot faster. He didn't dare stay here any longer, and left Cai'er, quickly running.

Listening to the sound of his steps as he was leaving, Cai'er's face became ice-cold once again, “He was wounded. Fortunately, it's nothing serious.” Her body suddenly flashed with an intense killing intent.

Chapter 96: Actually, I am very ugly (II)

The third day of the Demon Hunt Selection was still ongoing, and because the number of people that were left had decreased, the results of the Six Great Temples' Selection were already out by the afternoon.

Li Xin's luck was clearly not as poor as Long Hao Chen's: she faced a strong opponent, but his mount was incomparable to hers. Once again making use of Rose's superiority and her advantage as a Retribution Knight, she passed through this third match. This was something Ye Hua didn't expect at all.

Just like everyone expected, the three others knights of the fifth step won, and Long Hao Chen became the main candidate for the vacant place.

In the office of the Knight Temple...

An elder was seated in front of a business table, calmly looking at the data in his hand. This elder had silver hair, and even though he was seated there, it could clearly be seen that he was quite tall. His shoulders were especially wide and his age didn't affect his dignified appearance.

This elder was the highest graded policymaker in the Temple Alliance and its general quarters within Holy City. Within the whole Knight Alliance, he was second only to the three great Divine Knights who were the holy chiefs of the knights. This person was the one who was previously seated in the middle seat of the platform of the Knight Stadium, surrounded by other elders.

Toc, toc, toc. Someone knocked on the door.

"Enter." The Saint Knight slowly lifted his head, and indifferently said.

Opening the door, and entering from outside was someone with a strong figure with a well-built physique and brown hair, Han Yu.

Only, his face didn't have the slightest bit of its previous arrogance, it was only filled with nervousness, pain, and other gloomy feelings of this kind.

Looking at him, the Saint Knight's complexion suddenly changed, as he conveniently threw the data on the 19 competitors of today that he was reading on the table.

Bang-, Han Yu's clenched fist was pressed against his own chest, as he respectfully performed a knight salute before this elder.

The Saint Knight Head coldly glared at him, without saying a single word.

Han Yu's forehead was full of sweat, as he silently lowered his head.

"Kneel down." The Saint Knight Head ferociously kicked a desk, his hair and his beard were tossed around, and an intense oppressive pressure instantly filled the whole room, completely twisting the air inside.

Gulping, Han Yu kneeled, and his face was in this moment, extremely pale.

Under the oppressive power released by this Saint Knight Head that stood before him, as fierce as a mountain, he seemed like he could be broken into straw at any moment.

The Saint Knight Head slowly stood up and walked from behind the table. He pointed his finger at Han Yu, "Great! You are truly great. Aren't you a bit too conceited? Didn't you say that you were the best youth of your generation? Are you satisfied now? You didn't pass the preliminaries, and furthermore, you were beaten by an opponent at the fourth step! What a hero!"

Han Yu lowered his head, miserably scowling, "Grandpa, I was in the wrong. It was completely my fault, please punish me suitably."

"Don't call me grandpa, I don't have such a disappointing grandson." The Saint Knight Head lifted up his leg and kicked Han

Yu, “Even now, you still don’t know why you were in the wrong. You believe that I am angry because the fact you lost today’s match made me lose face, right? You are wrong. Let me tell you, I, Han Qian, am angry because my grandson didn’t even bother summoning his mount and yet lost, completely disgraced. This disgrace is something you brought upon yourself!”

The senior Saint Knight Head was seething in anger while shouting, “Do you think that back then, in the stadium, I wanted expel you from the Knight Temple just because I was angry? No! I wanted to expel you because you weren’t even close to being qualified as a knight! The first of the ten rules of a knight is modesty, but tell me, is there any part of your worthless self that is modest? Your heart is only filled with arrogance. Do you think that, as a 22 year-old kid who broke through to the fifth step, you’re special? That you’re a genius? Well, guess what? The child you fought today is only 14 years old. 14 years old! Compared to him, you’re just a little piece of sh*t that got stuck on the bottom of his shoe.”

Hearing the three words ‘14 years-old’, Han Yu’s expression was completely blank, “No, that’s impossible.”

Han Qian coldly looked at his grandson, “Impossible? Do you think the bone age test can be wrong? I have personally sealed off the information on his age. Wasn’t it your dream to become a Divine Knight? With your current moral integrity, even if one day, you obtain this title, you will still be no more than a corrupted knight. Full of arrogance and self-satisfaction, considering everyone else beneath him, still acting shamelessly even after having lost the match. You didn’t make me lose face, you made the entire Knight Alliance lose face. If it wasn’t for the other elders who held me back at that time, I would have beaten you to death.”

Han Yu’s body started slightly shaking. Since his childhood, even though he was extremely diligent in his training, he was naturally a very arrogant kid. Since he was a kid, this was the first time he

received a setback. Today, with this defeat, he had discovered that he was too lacking. Long Hao Chen's combo crushed all his arrogance, and he suddenly discovered that he was actually not as formidable as he imagined at all.

Han Qian still spoke with a cold voice, "You have only two possible choices, now. First, to let me seal your spiritual energy, and expel you from the Knight Alliance. You are still my grandson, so I will give you some money, to let you pursue a prosperous life as an ordinary man. If you choose this path, I will personally, on your behalf, appear before Long Hao Chen to cancel your oath. As for the second path, you already know it."

Han Yu's body suddenly shook, as he slowly raised his head, "Grandfather, he... he's really only 14 years old?"

Han Qian's previously angry mood had calmed down a bit, and strongly nodding, he answered, "From these three days of competition, I can tell that this child, Long Hao Chen, has a persevering, kind-hearted, honest, courageous, and brave disposition. In him, I can see the honor of a knight. If you stay alongside him, you'll be able to learn about the attitude a knight should have. Don't think that becoming a retainer knight is a loss of face. As long as he doesn't die, he will definitely astonish the whole Alliance in the future, and even the most powerful figures of the Demon Race. Accompanying him, as his supporter, will only have advantages for your progress. If you don't take this choice, five years later, his back will be absolutely out of your reach."

Han Yu knelt down once again, facing Han Qian, knocking his head three times against the floor, "Grandpa, in five years, I will definitely make you acknowledge me."

At this point, he stood straight, performing another knight salute toward Han Qian, and with large strides took his leave.

Looking at his departing figure, the anger in Han Qian's face suddenly disappeared. Instead, it changed into a faintly discernible

smile.

“Long Hao Chen, I should really thank you today. Actually, I had noticed little Han Yu’s problem before. Only, I had never found a good occasion to give him a big lesson. Yu’er is a very arrogant kid, but he’s very determined. Obstructing him will only make him more brave. And being together with Long Hao Chen will only be advantageous for him. Furthermore, they may really both become divine knights together. Only, I wonder from whom Long Hao Chen inherited. He uses Retribution Knight abilities, learned [Holy Sword], the most powerful skill of the fifth step. And his family name is Long! Don’t tell me that...”

At this point, Han Qian’s face suddenly became astonished.

The real reason why he had Han Yu follow Long Hao Chen was that when he lost in the competition, he had lost the qualifications to enter in a Demon Hunt Squad. In regard to his future accomplishments, it could be described as a fatal blow. And although by name, becoming Long Hao Chen’s retainer knight could be called a fatal blow, it still enabled him to become a part of a Demon Hunt Squad. And Han Qian had a very favorable opinion of Long Hao Chen. Having Han Yu protect him would definitely make Long Hao Chen more likely to survive these experiences. Also, he would naturally easily grow closer to Long Hao Chen within five years. If Long Hao Chen really reached the Divine level, it would be extremely advantageous for his grandson to be close to him. This old geezer was full of ulterior motives Ye Hua could never possibly guess! Naturally, if not for this arrogant personality of Han Yu’s that was so detrimental to him, how could Han Qian let his grandson, blessed by the Heavens, become someone else’s retainer?

Chapter 97: Actually, I am very ugly (III)

The Demon Hunt Squads' preliminaries were at their third day, and most Temples were already at their final stage. The Assassin Temple, the Spiritual Temple and the Priest Temple already had their top ten designated. The rest of the competition was only there to determine ranking orders.

Because of the vacant place in the competition, Long Hao Chen didn't go to the Stadium. Since morning, he silently waited for Cai'er at the usual place where they met up every day.

Assassin's Stadium.

There were only ten people left in the lounge, but nine of them had their gaze focused on the last one.

Cai'er was seated calmly; her oppressive eyes had a great influence on the nine other competitors. On her hand was a blue cane that seemed harmless at the first glance.

Assassin of the fifth step; secret skill [Doppelganger Shadow]. The favorite, and sole Assassin of the fifth step of this competition.

As all glances were focused on her, Cai'er was seated on the first row, facing the platform. Standing straight up, with an especially cold voice, she said, "I concede for the rest of the competition."

When she said these words, the nine other competitors completely blanked out. She used her blue bamboo cane, making Du, du, du sounds as she left the Assassin Hall.

Standing on the street, waiting for Cai'er, was Long Hao Chen. For the first time since he arrived in the biggest city of the Alliance, his heart was completely at ease.

At the two sides of the street, there were countless buildings. The overwhelming majority of these were heavily decorated, resulting in a very medieval atmosphere filling the city.

His wounds from the previous day had already completely healed. From the start, Long Hao Chen had not been heavily wounded, and in addition, he relied on his healing skills of Guardian Knight to recover. Thus, he was already in perfect shape. During the fight against this knight of the fifth step, his potential was further stimulated. After a day and a night of cultivation, his spiritual energy increased by a tremendous amount. It was especially because of the use of the skill [Storing Power] that had a great influence on his cultivation, making his liquid spiritual energy even deeper. Long Hao Chen was confident on the fact that if he continued to cultivate like that, he would definitely break through the threshold of the fifth step within ten days.

“Du, du, du.” A familiar sound pulled Long Hao Chen back from his thoughts.

“Cai’er.” Seeing nearby Cai’er who was slowly approaching, he immediately became extremely joyous. Long Hao Chen ran at her, and hastily to grab her hand.

Cai’er smiled and asked, “Have you been waiting for long?”

Long Hao Chen shook his head, “No, I just arrived a little moment ago. Are you arriving so early every day to wait for me?”

Cai’er shook her head as well, “No, there’s no fixed time on when I head back home every day. But in the next days, I should be here earlier.”

Holding her soft little hand, Long Hao Chen felt warm. This warm sensation was completely different from the sensation he had when he was together with his parents. He didn’t know at all what Cai’er had renounced, just to avoid making him wait for too long.

Hand in hand, with this hazy feeling, this extremely pure feeling, their silhouettes gradually disappeared under the sunshine.

“Cai’er, for how long will you remain in Holy City?” Long Hao

Chen separated his hands from Cai'er's, and courageously asked this decisive question.

Cai'er was silent for a moment, "What are you asking me this for?"

Long Hao Chen was shaken, and extremely embarrassed, he answered, "I... all I want to know is for how long I can walk you back. "

Cai'er fell silent, and the two youths were standing face to face. Long Hao Chen's hands were sweating, as he was completely disappointed.

Feeling his hands' sweat, Cai'er said in a low voice, "I am just a blind girl, is it really so important for you to walk me back?"

Long Hao Chen was startled, and sincerely answered, "I... I don't know."

Cai'er was startled as well. Even though young girls are said to start to understand love earlier than boys, she had even less experience than Long Hao Chen in life.

"Have you grown tired of me?" Cai'er dropped her head and asked.

Long Hao Chen was instantly filled with dread, and pulling her hand before him, he declared, "How can I possibly grow tired of you?" He didn't know why, but the current Long Hao Chen was extremely nervous. He felt that if he gave the wrong answer, this girl may completely disappear from his sight.

"Cai'er, actually... actually, I am very ugly. How can someone who's as ugly as me be qualified to reject you." Long Hao Chen was full of panic, as he made this declaration.

Cai'er blanked, "Very ugly?"

"Yup, very ugly." Long Hao Chen hastily confirmed.

Cai'er smiled. Even though her face was covered by a veil and he

couldn't see it, Long Hao Chen unconsciously felt that her smile was beautiful, extremely beautiful.

"Then if... if I wanted you to look after me forever, would you be willing to accept?" Cai'er's voice was soft, and she mumbled, speaking haltingly. As she finished to say these words, her slender white face was already bashful, and completely red.

"I am willing." Long Hao Chen was in an odd mental state as he gave this answer; it felt as if he didn't have the slightest bit of hesitation.

This time, it was Cai'er's turn to be flustered. Taking her hand back from Long Hao Chen's, she said, "I... I am heading back first."

Long Hao Chen anxiously said, "Th... Then tomorrow, I will send you back as well."

"Okay." She lightly nodded, but the blue bamboo cane was hitting the ground at least twice as fast as usual. Cai'er headed to her hotel to rest. These words resounded without interruption in her heart, He went as far as to say that he's very ugly? This same boy who looked as pretty as a girl? Never in the past had she felt this kind of warmth in her heart. How could she not understand that he said this to comfort her?

"Hehe." Long Hao Chen couldn't help but laugh. He was still young, and didn't understand anything in regard to relations between boys and girls, but his senses were a lot sharper than ordinary people's. He could clearly feel that a change appeared in Cai'er's attitude towards him, a good change.

With this cheerful mood, Long Hao Chen went back to his hotel. Without waiting for his heart to calm down, he started to cultivate. But then, someone eagerly knocked at his door.

"Hao Chen, Hao Chen." Li Xin was completely excited as she called him out.

Long Hao Chen was surprised, but hurried to open the door.

Li Xin was in a really pitiful state, her appearance was completely messy; the armor on her body was pierced at least at three places, her hair was in disorder, and a bloodstain covered her mouth. But she was clearly in an excited state. As soon as she saw Long Hao Chen, she immediately hugged him and said, full of excitement, “I won, I won. Hao Chen, I am in the top ten. We, brother and sister, will be able to participate to Demon Hunt Squads together!”

“Eh?” Long Hao Chen instantly reacted, he was also extremely overjoyed at these unexpected news; “Sis, you won? You’re really awesome. Congratulations!”

Li Xin, immensely proud of herself, said, “That’s right! I was so lucky. Today, I did not encounter an opponent at the fifth step. Haha, your sister is so awesome. It was a close victory, but in the end, I still won. Father will be immensely proud of me.”

In terms of personal cultivation, Li Xin didn’t stand out at all compared to her peers in this knights’ competition. She could even be counted amongst those at the bottom. But she trained as a Retribution Knight. Above all, she had her Rose Unicorn and good luck. She managed, with a lot of effort, to pass through these preliminaries, together with Long Hao Chen.

Li Xin smiled, “What a pity that we are both knights. Your sister will not have the possibility to enter the same Squad as yours, otherwise it would be even more perfect.”

Long Hao Chen chuckled, “What’s the problem, you will be my big sister forever.”

Chapter 98: Actually, I am very ugly (IV)

“We’ll have to celebrate this. This evening, I’ll be treating you to a good meal.” Ye Hua said with a gentle voice, entering from outside. He was in a good mood; Long Hao Chen was in the top ten and his objective was reached. Actually, he hadn’t expected that Li Xin would enter the top ten as well. To Hao Yue City’s Knight Temple, this was an enormous achievement!

A lot other people were full of excitement as well; aside from the Warrior Temple, every temple had already designated their top ten.

Lin Xin, drinking red wine in his luxurious hotel, was extremely happy. Feeling the strong but bitter fragrance, he started to feel an intense desire.

On the previous day, with his mystical magic show, he had intimidated all the other mage competitors. In this fourth round of competition, there were, altogether, 16 participants. Consequently, they were competing to enter the top ten, and playoffs would take place afterwards, to determine the top ten.

The first matches of the day would determine the top six. Without the slightest hesitation, Lin Xin’s opponent conceded. After all, he still had the playoffs to have the occasion to enter the top ten. Who would be willing to fight a guy with such absurd magic control? As a result, Lin Xin entered the top six without fighting and received the qualification to become the member of a future Demon Hunt Squad.

The bald male was excited as well. Because of his appearance, the Priest Temple was in chaos during these preliminaries, and wanted to establish new rules. But after all, the tournament had begun and rules couldn’t be changed. Therefore, relying on the show of his tyrannical violence, this bald man didn’t only end up on the top ten, but because the Priest Temple’s competitors weren’t

numerous, he had already entered the top three. Furthermore, in these circumstances, no one could possibly fight with him for the first place.

On the fifth day of the preliminaries, the atmosphere in the Alliance's Great Stadium had already eased up. Except for the Warrior Temple, all temples already had their top ten designated. The rest of the competition was to determine the order of ranking. The further rankings in the great temples' preliminary contests didn't only grant an even greater glory, some competitors would be rewarded depending on their ranking, in addition to receiving more or less money. The reward for the top three was a piece of equipment of the Spiritual Tier. This was something the Temple Alliance did to incite Demon Hunt Squads to complete missions. If they received a good reward, how could they slack off in the future when the time of missions came?

In the Knight Stadium lounge, the competitors appeared cold and cheerless. There were only ten people left; including the squadron teachers, it didn't even amount to twenty people.

The best harvests of this Demon Hunt Selection didn't belong to the main cities, but the unknown Hao Yue City. The little Hao Yue Hall unexpectedly gave birth to two outstanding youths who entered the top ten. This was something that never happened before, in the long and glorious history of Hao Yue Knight Hall. As a result, even the ice-cold tempered Ye Hua was a lot more spirited than on his former days.

"You don't have to take the rest of the competition excessively seriously. The final stage of the competition will, after all, have an even greater importance. It is more important to keep yourself in good shape."

Seeing Ye Hua repeatedly nod, Li Xin, who was previously full of fighting spirit, could not help but giggle. For her, entering the top ten and having the possibility to become the member of a Demon Hunt Squad was already the greatest harvest she could expect. It

implied that she would, in the future, have the possibility to become a higher up of the Knight Temple. And it also signified that she would be able to reach the higher stages of the world of knights. She basically did not even think about raising her ranking in addition to that.

Long Hao Chen was silent, looking at his teacher, he pondered deeply before saying, “Teacher, if I run up against that man, I hope to fight against him with my utmost.”

Ye Hua looked unconvinced, “Is that really necessary?”

Long Hao Chen nodded without hesitation, and replied, “Teacher, fighting against an extremely powerful opponent will arouse my potential even more effectively. The fight against Han Yu had great benefits to me.”

Ye Hua muttered to himself hesitantly, before saying “Okay, okay, since this is your own decision, teacher won’t stop you, but you’ll have to weigh your abilities and act accordingly. You will have the occasion to try to fight against other powerhouses during the final stage of the competition after all.”

“Mh” Long Hao Chen let out a groan of agreement. What he didn’t tell Ye Hua was that he was gradually growing closer and closer to the fifth step, and in this moment, what he needed the most was the occasion to arouse his potential through battles. Going through uninterrupted fights would stimulate his senses, and give him the occasion to break through the final bottleneck.

Long Xing Yu was currently the strongest Retribution Knight of the Alliance, and although he only taught Long Hao Chen for two little years, he passed on to Long Hao Chen the equivalent of a whole lifetime worth of experience as a knight. Among the most important things he told him, there was the fact that every time he would meet a bottleneck, challenges against opponents stronger than him were the best opportunities to break through.

Long Hao Chen’s father’s words were deeply engraved in his

mind; fights were a sort of test. Every time he faced a powerful enemy, his spiritual energy's growth was tremendously increased, improving his use of his abilities and his grasp on them. In addition, unceasingly challenging powerhouses could further strengthen his determination.

At that moment, the drawing of lots had already started. Long Hao Chen's gaze was focused on the three knights seated in the first row. Slowly taking deep breaths, with a firm look, as firm as a boulder, he sat. The other people were praying not to face these opponent of the fifth step, but he only wished he could face these kinds of powerhouses.

"#1, #97." In the air, two huge numbers gradually became distinct. In the split second these numbers appeared, Long Hao Chen's eyes went wide. With a shua sound, he stood up. In a split second, there was nothing left of his formerly gentle look that became, instead, extremely strict.

Without the slightest doubt, these two numbers had appeared in front of them. Another powerhouse of the fifth step.

The other knights who managed to remain weren't lacking will or persistence, but now, these knights of the fourth step gave Long Hao Chen bewildering looks.

To face two opponents of the fifth step in a row, his luck was really too...

In the first row, a youth slowly got up. Slowly turning around, he looked at Long Hao Chen. This knight bearing #1 was precisely the black clad youth who formerly gave Long Hao Chen a provoking look. He was the very first competitor who realized Long Hao Chen's threat.

The two exchanged glances, as they simultaneously concentrated on each other.

#1 made a gesture towards Long Hao Chen, before taking the

lead, taking big strides and heading towards the stadium. Intimidating fluctuations of spiritual energy were emitted each time he took a step, bursting out.

At this moment, Ye Hua didn't bother Long Hao Chen further with his warnings. He didn't want to let his mood influence Long Hao Chen. On Long Hao Chen's face, he had immediately seen his unwavering determination. Even during his previous fight against Han Yu, such an intense fighting spirit didn't appear.

At the corner of the stadium, Han Yu calmly stood there. He came in the early morning; no matter how unwilling he was, deep inside, there was nothing he could do to change his destiny in the upcoming five years. Instead, he wished in this very moment for Long Hao Chen to prevail over his opponent, and wanted to take a good look. After everything Grandfather said regarding this fourteen years old genius knight, let's see at what level his talent really is.

Walking into the stadium without hurry, although Long Hao Chen wasn't very sturdy, his steps were quite firm. With every step he took, he appeared more and more imposing. His look was extremely sharp, and staring at this youth who was already standing in the middle of the ground, his gaze became fiery.

"Do you have a mount?" The black clad youth calmly asked.

Long Hao Chen shook his head, and without trying to conceal himself, he told him the truth, "For the time being, I don't have it."

The black clad youth nodded, and answered, "Okay, then we'll fight without summoning mounts. Let's have a fair battle."

When these same words were spoken out by this black clad youth, Long Hao Chen could feel that it wasn't arrogance, but self-confidence.

Chapter 99: Clash of Retribution Knights (I)

When he saw this black-clad youth for the first time, Long Hao Chen had immediately felt that he would be an extremely powerful opponent. Even when the three other knights, including Han Yu, appeared, they hadn't left him with such a big impression. It was an intuition of danger.

When the black-clad youth told Long Hao Chen that he wouldn't summon his mount, he let out an extreme aura of self confidence. One's pride had to be coherent with his abilities. His eyes firmly stared at Long Hao Chen, but from them, Long Hao Chen was unable to tell what this youth's state of mind was.

As they faced each other, Long Hao Chen's eyes were filled with a burning fighting spirit. Even though he was only 14 and his build could clearly not match this black-clad youth who was in his twenties, in terms of vigor, he wasn't losing in the slightest.

These two characters' temperaments were as different as the sky and the earth. Long Hao Chen was like a sharp blade who showed his abilities by unceasingly raising his fighting spirit, as if he was a volcano that could erupt at any moment.

The black-clad youth was extremely calm, appearing like a bottomless abyss that swallowed Long Hao Chen's fighting spirit.

A big coincidence was that their referee was the same one who was in charge of ruling Long Hao Chen's match with Han Yu. He calmly walk ahead and said, "The match may begin."

"My name is Yang Wenzhao. I believe that you are perhaps going to be a good rival of mine in the near future." The black-clad youth had a smile on his face, and it seemed as if a change appeared in his temperament; he was previously extremely calm, but Long Hao Chen had no way to determine his current feelings.

"My name is Long Hao Chen, and it is now that I am your

opponent.” Long Hao Chen calmly said, “Before the match starts, its outcome cannot be decided. It is also completely fine if you summon your mount; it is your own power.”

Yang Wenzhao nodded, “Let’s start.” As he spoke, his hands suddenly moved to the sides of his body, and a golden radiance appeared simultaneously from his two hands. They turned into two identical claymores. Without the slightest doubt, he possessed a magic storage item as well.

A Retribution Knight! Long Hao Chen’s pupils suddenly shrank and started to sparkle intensely. He took out his two swords as well, a Light Sword and a Fire Sword that instantly appeared in his hands.

Right, this was a confrontation between two Retribution Knights. A strong spiritual energy broke out, and Long Hao Chen and Yang Wenzhao moved at the same time.

Long Hao Chen charged like an arrow towards Yang Wenzhao; it was the first time during the Demon Hunt Selection that he took the initiative to launch the offense.

[Faith Halo], [Guardian’s Favor], [Imposing Ring], three amplification Guardian Knight skills appeared simultaneously. While fighting as a Retribution Knight, Long Hao Chen drew support from his Guardian Knight skills.

The reason why there were no knights who chose to train in both the Guardian and Retribution paths was that there would be far too many abilities to learn. To fully use one’s abilities required the knight to rely on his spiritual energy. The higher the cultivation level was, the stronger the ability was, but the spiritual energy consumption would increase as well. The path of training as both a Guardian and a Retributor Knight at the same time would lead one to uninterruptedly use a large quantity of skills and consume his spiritual energy far too quickly. Furthermore, to embrace the two specializations at the same time could lead one to be unable to use

the skills of both specializations to the best of their potential.

But Long Hao Chen was an exception; his innate internal spiritual energy was at the 97th level, something unprecedented in history! This terrifying innate internal spiritual energy led him to use far less spiritual energy than the other knights. Not only that, he could also comprehend every skill related to the light attribute much more easily.

Over the past five years, Long Hao Chen studied under Long Xing Yu and, immediately afterward, Ye Hua. His enormous amount of hard work was also backing his outstanding innate talent. In all of Hao Yue Hall, it was absolutely impossible to find another knight as diligent as Long Hao Chen.

Success demanded 99% diligence and 1% talent. This 1% of talent was the most important part, but similarly, no one could be successful with lacking efforts. But Long Hao Chen had both.

His Light Sword and his Flame Sword simultaneously turned white, [Pure White Edge].

In accordance with the rules of the competition, before both sides started attacking, there had to be a distance of 30 meters separating them. In other words, while Long Hao Chen was charging to cover these 30 meters, he used four skills one after another. These four skills didn't have a high consumption of spiritual energy, but adding them up, the total cost exceeded 150 units. Naturally, this was for ordinary knights. The crucial point was that he fully used these abilities together; his Retribution Knight skills and his Guardian Knight skills were interacting together appropriately, without the slightest flaw.

It wasn't only the eight remaining competitors who were looking attentively at this match, but on the platform, those seniors of the Knight Alliance were similarly watching with their whole attention, without blinking an eye.

As there was still a distance of three meters separating him from

Long Hao Chen, Yang Wenzhao started to move. His left foot took a large step forward and his whole body immediately followed. The claymore in his left hand was still at his side, but he inclined the one in his right hand, lifting it up diagonally.

With a single move, Yang Wenzhao displayed his formidable power. He didn't use any skills, but the edge of his blade was covered with a 66-centimeter golden glow, making his claymore appear longer than it was originally. In his next action, the claymore swept past the ground and slashed forward.

Stop! Long Hao Chen suddenly stopped in the middle of his charge and his body seemed as if it had struck against a wall. His left foot stamped on the ground as if he had lost his balance and was about to fall to the side, but the Flame Sword in his left hand ruthlessly hit the ground, successfully throwing his body in the air. He avoided this attack of Yang Wenzhao just in time. He seized the opportunity to launch a stab using his Light Sword, and using the skill [Thorny Charge], he aimed straight at Yang Wenzhao's chest.

That's right, his opponent's spiritual energy outstripped his own by far, so Long Hao Chen didn't choose to fight recklessly, but he instead chose to use his skills!

"Good!" Yang Wenzhao shouted out loudly; he hadn't expected Long Hao Chen to use such a troublesome technique in the middle of his attack. Lifting up the sword in his left hand and simultaneously kicking his right foot with his left foot, he went against all expectations and interrupted his previous motion, even more suddenly and effectively than Long Hao Chen.

Ding. Long Hao Chen's Light Sword and the claymore in Yang Wenzhao's hand collided. This latter knight discovered to his astonishment that Long Hao Chen's sword didn't contain much power. Pulled up by the claymore in his left hand, Long Hao Chen seized the opportunity to make his body spin even faster. Simultaneously swinging his two swords, he chopped towards

Yang Wenzhao.

Yang Wenzhao didn't move, nor did he attempt to avoid this attack. He used his two claymores, simultaneously creating little ripples in the air.

With clanking sounds, a series of explosions sounded in the air. In the time of a breath, Long Hao Chen and Yang Wenzhao's weapons collided numerous times. Long Hao Chen's swords were like meat grinders, but more importantly, he attacked

continuously, using Yang Wenzhao's defensive power to increase his own spinning speed. It further raised the frequency of his attacks.

Gradually, a gold-colored halo scattered on Long Hao Chen's body, and his figure became blurred.

Yang Wenzhao started to show a surprised expression; his attacks' frequency could only barely keep up with Long Hao Chen's uninterrupted assault. But Long Hao Chen's attacks were only becoming fiercer; they seemed as if they were endless. In this short lapse of time, he had already lost track of the number of attacks he had to withstand.

Chapter 100: Clash Of Retribution Knights

(II)

I've been fooled. This was Yang Wenzhao's first reaction. He immediately understood that these attacks from Long Hao Chen were all out efforts, without any restriction. His main purpose was clearly to overwhelm him.

In the lounge, the Saint Knight Head muttered to himself, "This is Condemning Revolving Sword. As expected, he inherited this skill as well; as expected... What a shame that this Condemning Revolving Sword is far from perfect. Without enough spiritual energy, he cannot display the murderous power of this purely offensive retribution skill."

Pu- Yang Wenzhao suddenly braced his sword against the ground, and an intense gold-colored glow was emitted by the ground, ruthlessly attacking Long Hao Chen who was in the middle of his Condemning Revolving Sword. It was Heavenly Battle Array.

Heavenly Battle Array couldn't really shake Long Hao Chen; as he fully used Condemning Revolving Sword, Long Hao Chen's fighting spirit was already at its peak and bursting out. Under these rotations, his spiritual energy was taking the shape of a frightening whirlpool around him. Even if Yang Wenzhao had a liquid spiritual energy, a mere Heavenly Battle Array had no way to stop Long Hao Chen.

But liquid spiritual energy was after all liquid spiritual energy, Long Hao Chen couldn't help but feel sluggish as his body kept rotating so quickly. Immediately, Yang Wenzhao stuck the claymore in his left hand into the ground, as the liquid spiritual energy surrounding his body vibrated with an astonishing frequency broke out with a whistling sound resembling a dragon's hiss.

Immediately afterwards, in the eyes of the spectators, Yang Wenzhao instantly took the shape of a gold-colored dragon who was soaring in the sky, ferociously striking Long Hao Chen who was still executing his Condemning Revolving Sword.

Ascending Dragon's Strike, the Retribution Knight skill of the fifth step with the most important offensive potential. In front of the pressure of Condemning Revolving Sword, Yang Wenzhao had no choice but use his most powerful skill to turn the situation around.

Bang-

The enormous gold-colored dragon disappeared and emitted dusts of bright light. From there, Yang Wenzhao appeared. His both feet fell on the ground, as he drew three steps back, and stood firm.

On the other side, Long Hao Chen who was previously spinning at a fast pace suddenly stopped. After having whirled for such a long time the air, as he reached the ground, he stumbled 7 or 8 steps back and could only stand on his feet with difficulty.

By comparing the changes in their breaths, it could clearly be seen that Long Hao Chen used up more spiritual energy than his opponent. His Condemning Revolving Sword was powerful, but it was also extremely exhausting to him. Furthermore, Yang Wenzhao's liquid spiritual energy truly had an overwhelming effect.

However, Yang Wenzhao was instantly astonished by the fact that even though he could barely stand on his two feet, Long Hao Chen held his two swords on both sides and a gold-colored fog was emitted around him in a flash, Storing Power.

What an unyielding fighting spirit! Yang Wenzhao felt the blood in his body raising; he naturally understood that Long Hao Chen was in no way better than him, but under such circumstances, he still chose to immediately put to use the same skill as before.

Since a few days ago, Long Hao Chen had been using continuously Storing Power to quicken his own cultivation, while comprehending the profound mystery of the liquid spiritual energy. Unceasingly deepening his understanding of this skill made him master it even more than in the past; Storing Power's speed had clearly increased.

Assault. Yang Wenzhao made the same choice Han Yu did on the previous day. Seeing him storing power, he immediately launched Assault without the slightest hesitation. His movements were even swifter than Han Yu's; with his two swords on his two sides, he threw himself at Long Hao Chen, covered by a strong gold-colored light. His body was rushing forward, as this gold-colored light become deeper and deeper, and the rich liquid spiritual energy surrounding his body also became denser.

Without the slightest change of expression, Long Hao Chen calmly stood at the same place, motionless, looking at Yang Wenzhao who was ruthlessly charging.

Thorny Charge. Using a simple skill, Yang Wenzhao simply tried to interrupt Long Hao Chen's Storing Power. Seeing from his previous Condemning Revolving Sword, Long Hao Chen for sure possessed a lot of secret skills. Condemning Revolving Sword was a kind of skill that made Yang Wenzhao absolutely envious, it wasn't even something recorded in records of the Temple Alliance, but had to be a skill personally created by a formidable knight.

Dang—

Raising his Flame Sword, and using Divine Obstruction, Long Hao Chen moved as soon as his opponent was extremely close to him. As he parried his opponent's attack with his left hand's sword, the Light Sword in his right hand was already chopping at him.

All spectators could clearly see that when the light sword in Long Hao Chen's hand approached, the little golden light that wrapped

it grew brighter, until ultimately becoming a dazzling glow, it was Shining Solar Strike.

Storing Power was absolutely not ineffective; even if the time of Storing Power was short, it still increased the efficacy of a part of his spiritual energy. This Shining Solar Strike of Long Hao Chen gave a sensation of justice and fairness; this gaudy sunlight seemed quite mild, and the golden core of this Shining Solar Strike seemed frozen.

Bang

The two attacks met up, Yang Wenzhao lifted up the sword in his left hand, blocking Long Hao Chen's Shining Solar Strike with a simple Pure White Edge. But he was completely astounded. It was because from this Shining Solar Strike, he could clearly see that Long Hao Chen's spiritual energy had reached the threshold of the transformation into liquid.

Actually, from the beginning of the battle, Yang Wenzhao hadn't gone all out. He wanted to see the worth of this youth who seemed a lot younger than himself, to evaluate his level; he had, after all, prevailed over Han Yu. The fact that Long Hao Chen was at the same time a Guardian Knight and a Retribution knight aroused his interest even more. He was absolutely sure that Long Hao Chen was no match for him, so he had held back his attacks up to now, only attaching importance to testing his opponent. But as his test went on, he was more and more shocked, and his previous attack was actually using all his strength. If it wasn't the case, even with his cultivation level, how could a Pure White Edge be a match for a Shining Solar Strike?

Puh, Long Hao Chen took a step back while Yang Wenzhao didn't move the slightest bit. However, the intense sunlight shone a second time in the row, it was, as before, a Shining Solar Strike.

Despite his fragile appearance, Long Hao Chen's current expression was extremely heroic. Tightly gripping his Light

Sword, he initiated a Divine Obstruction, together with the Shining Solar Strike with his Flame Sword.

What a fast linking speed! One should know that Shining Solar Strike is actually the most powerful skill at the fourth step.

Bam—

This time, Yang Wenzhao didn't dare be careless. Swinging his two claymores, he parried once again Long Hao Chen's attack. Only, this time, Long Hao Chen didn't fall back.

His feet seemed to be moving in slow motion, but had a special cadence. While staying on the move, Long Hao Chen brandished his two swords. Under the astonished look of the surrounding observers, he continuously attacked, launching 18 blows of Shining Solar Strike.

Each attack was vigorously executed, but more importantly, each of his blows was even more imposing than the previous one. Full of confidence, he made use of his momentum to oppress Yang Wenzhao who didn't even have the chance to use all his strength.

However, this Yang Wenzhao was indeed formidable; standing at the same place as before, he didn't even take a single step back after blocking 18 blows of Shining Solar Strike.

"So satisfying." Long Hao Chen cried out loudly. With this loud shout, he took a step back. Because as Yang Wenzhao blocked his last attack, he used Divine Obstruction, the gold-colored light forming Bright Vengeance rapidly gathered in his two claymores, launching an Instant Blast Cross Cut.

Long Hao Chen suddenly stopped his retreat and crossed the swords symmetrically in his two hands, Divine Obstruction.

Rumble, rumble. Long Hao Chen stood on his two feet after having retreated a meter back, he completely blocked his opponent's offense. The Light Sword in his right hand was suddenly lifted up, and a rich holy aura appeared with a white

glow; it was Holy Sword.

Table of Contents

[Shen Yin Wang Zuo](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Acknowledgement](#)

[Chapter 1: Knight Examination \(I\)](#)

[Chapter 2: Knight Examination \(II\)](#)

[Chapter 3: Knight Examination \(III\)](#)

[Chapter 4: Knight Squire Examination \(IV\)](#)

[Chapter 5: Mysterious New Instructor \(I\)](#)

[Chapter 6: Mysterious New Instructor \(II\)](#)

[Chapter 7: Mysterious New Instructor \(III\)](#)

[Chapter 8: Mysterious New Instructor \(III\)](#)

[Chapter 9: A Teacher who comes from Hell? \(I\)](#)

[Chapter 10: A Teacher who comes from Hell? \(II\)](#)

[Chapter 11: A Teacher who comes from Hell? \(III\)](#)

[Chapter 12: A Teacher who comes from Hell? \(IV\)](#)

[Chapter 13: Standard Knight Examination \(I\)](#)

[Chapter 14: Standard Knight Examination \(II\)](#)

[Chapter 15: Standard Knight Examination \(III\)](#)

[Chapter 16: Standard Knight Examination \(IV\)](#)

[Chapter 17: The Sacred Mountain of Knights \(I\)](#)

[Chapter 18: The Sacred Mountain of Knights \(II\)](#)

[Chapter 19: Knights' Sacred Mountain \(III\)](#)

[Chapter 20: Knights' Sacred Mountain \(IV\)](#)

[Chapter 21: Sacred Awakening, Scion of Light \(I\)](#)

[Chapter 22: Sacred Awakening, Scion of Light \(II\)](#)

[Chapter 23: Sacred Awakening, Scion of Light \(III\)](#)

[Chapter 24: Sacred Awakening, Scion of Light \(IV\)](#)

[Chapter 25: The Divine Throne of Doom and Slaughter \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 26: The Divine Throne of Doom and Slaughter \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 27: Saint Spiritual Stove \(I\)](#)

[Chapter 28: Saint Spiritual Stove \(II\)](#)

[Chapter 29: Saint Spiritual Stove \(III\)](#)

[Chapter 30: Saint Spiritual Stove \(IV\)](#)

[Chapter 31: Radiant Shield \(I\)](#)

[Chapter 32: Radiant Shield \(II\)](#)

[Chapter 33: Radiant Shield \(III\)](#)
[Chapter 34: Radiant Light Shield \(IV\)](#)
[Chapter 35: Asura Ye \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 36: Asura Ye \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 37: Asura Ye \(III\)](#)
[Chapter 38: Asura Ye \(IV\)](#)
[Chapter 39: Knights' Sacred Mountain \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 40: Knights' Sacred Mountain \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 41: Knights' Sacred Mountain \(III\)](#)
[Chapter 42: Knights' Sacred Mountain \(IV\)](#)
[Chapter 43: Starlight Unicorn \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 44: Starlight Unicorn \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 45: Starlight Unicorn \(III\)](#)
[Chapter 46: Starlight Unicorn \(IV\)](#)
[Chapter 47: Long Hao Chen's Companion Mount \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 48: Long Hao Chen's Companion Mount \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 49: Long Hao Chen's Companion Mount \(III\)](#)
[Chapter 50: Long Hao Chen's companion mount \(IV\)](#)
[Chapter 51: Evolution \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 52: Evolution \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 53: Entrance Examination and Equipment \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 54: Entrance Examination and Equipment \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 55: Entrance Examination and Equipment \(III\)](#)
[Chapter 56: Entrance Examination and Equipment \(IV\)](#)
[Chapter 57: The Dragon Rises And Sets Sail \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 58: The Dragon Rises and Sets Sail \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 59: The Dragon Rises and Sets Sail \(III\)](#)
[Chapter 60: The Dragon Rises and Sets Sail \(IV\)](#)
[Chapter 61: Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 62: Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 63: Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon \(III\)](#)
[Chapter 64: Dark Green Dual Bladed Demon \(IV\)](#)
[Chapter 65: Demon Hunt's Secrets \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 66: Demon Hunt's Secrets \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 67: Demon Hunt's Secrets \(III\)](#)
[Chapter 68: Demon Hunt's Secrets \(IV\)](#)
[Chapter 69: The Mysterious Stone Orb \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 70: The Mysterious Stone Orb \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 71: The Mysterious Stone Orb \(III\)](#)

[Chapter 72: The Mysterious Stone Orb \(IV\)](#)
[Chapter 73: Violent Priest \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 74: Violent Priest \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 75: Violent Priest \(III\)](#)
[Chapter 76: Violent Priest \(IV\)](#)
[Chapter 77: Battle start \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 78: Battle start \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 79: Cai'er, the blind girl \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 80: Cai'er, the blind girl \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 81: Cai'er, the blind girl \(III\)](#)
[Chapter 82: Cai'er, the blind girl \(IV\)](#)
[Chapter 83: An Alarming Sword \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 84: An Alarming Sword \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 85: An Alarming Sword \(III\)](#)
[Chapter 86: An Alarming Sword \(IV\)](#)
[Chapter 87: Possibility of Evolution for the Spiritual Stove \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 88: Possibility of Evolution for the Spiritual Stove \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 89: Possibility of Evolution for the Spiritual Stove \(III\)](#)
[Chapter 90: Possibility of Evolution for the Spiritual Stove \(IV\)](#)
[Chapter 91: Retribution Knight Long Hao Chen \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 92: Retribution Knight Long Hao Chen \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 93: Retribution Knight Long Hao Chen \(III\)](#)
[Chapter 94: Retribution Knight Long Hao Chen \(IV\)](#)
[Chapter 95: Actually, I am very ugly \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 96: Actually, I am very ugly \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 97: Actually, I am very ugly \(III\)](#)
[Chapter 98: Actually, I am very ugly \(IV\)](#)
[Chapter 99: Clash of Retribution Knights \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 100: Clash Of Retribution Knights \(II\)](#)